



CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 12

Drunk Tiger

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Ancient Godly Monarch

(太古神王)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Within the Province of the Nine Skies, far above the heavens, there exists nine galaxies of astral rivers. Each of these astral rivers is made up of the combination of countless constellations interwoven together. These nine galaxies can also be collectively known as the Nine Layers of Heaven.

Legend has it that the strongest cultivators in the Province of the Nine Skies were beings that could open an astral gate every time they advanced into a new realm. Their talent in cultivation was such that they could even establish innate links with constellations that existed on a higher layer than the Nine Layers of Heaven, eventually transforming into the heaven-defying and earth-shattering powers known as the War Gods within the Nine Layers of Heaven.

Qin Wentian is the MC of this story. How can a guy, who has a broken set of meridians, successfully cultivate? There are countless Stellar Martial Cultivators, the same as there are countless constellations within the vast starry skies. Yet, what he wants to be, is the brightest constellation of all, the one which shines the most dazzlingly within the vast and starry skies.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by kurodreamer @ [Gravity Tales](#)

Translation Edit by Milkbiscuit @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1101: What a Large City!

"We are arriving at Xuanyuan Hill?"

Standing on the deck, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were looking at the ground below through the crystal grilles.

It was a boundless vast lake downside there, even in the distance.

Under the sunshine, the lake was shimmering while waterweeds were wavering inside. Reeds and wetland almost reached the sky in the far. On the location where reeds and wetland were close to the land, there was a large area of woods and undulating mountain ranges. Numerous aquatic birds were flying and gathering in flocks over the lake. The flock of white swans that had just flown over the airboat immediately dove towards the lake. At the same time, tens of thousands of wild ducks suddenly flew off, which looked pretty splendid...

The wings and most of the feathers on the back of wild ducks looked bright green, shiny and vigorous under the sunshine. When those wild ducks flew off the lake, it looked like a green cloud.

There were so many aquatic birds over there.

An exotic brilliance flashed across Zhang Tie's eyes when Zhang Tie watched these aquatic birds.

Bai Suxian didn't notice the bizarre brilliance in Zhang Tie's eyes. She just pulled Zhang Tie's arm out of excitement as she pointed at this lake and introduced it to Zhang Tie, "This is Heavenly Qin Lake in the northernmost part of Xuanyuan Hill. In the other directions of Xuanyuan Hill, there are another 2 crisscrossed lakes. Heavenly Qin Lake is medium in size. If the airboat could fly at a bit higher speed, we will be able to see Xuanyuan Hill in less than 1 hour after flying another 500-odd mile over Heavenly Qin Lake."

Because Zhang Tie had recovered his composure and become completely relaxed in the "slow" living state, even though he could

see Xuanyuan Hill from 500 miles away with his lotus-flower eyes on the airboat, Zhang Tie didn't use that ability. Zhang Tie didn't care whether he could see Xuanyuan Hill a few minutes earlier or later. In many cases, if he relied on his ability too much, he would lack too many fun and surprises. If he watched Xuanyuan Hill in advance, he would feel bored when he arrived there. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not anxious about that.

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie asked Bai Suxian, "You mean there're two lakes beside Xuanyuan Hill?"

"Hmm, the other two lakes are called Fair-sounding Lake and Fairy Lake respectively!"

"The Fairy is playing a fair-sounding music by heavenly qin. They're easily remembered. If so, Gold and Power Market should be in front of us!"

"Hmm, we will see it after passing Heavenly Qin Lake!"

"Hahaha, speed up; I cannot wait to take a look at it..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he waved his hand and shouted towards his disciples in a secret way, "Are you ready? We're arriving at Xuanyuan Hill!"

...

In the following couple of minutes, the movable metal protective plates above the two swimming pools slowly slid over and covered the space above the two swimming pools, only revealing a row of non-opaque portholes. Additionally, the water in the swimming pools had been sucked into the inside of the airboat. After that, the swimming pools were covered with solid metal decks once again. Everybody returned to their cabins to change clothes cheerily, including Liu Xing and the other 6 black-armored fighters.

Iron-Dragon Airboat also sped up and approached Xuanyuan Hill. On the way, they could see more and more airboats and airships as well as over 100 knights in the sky. Besides, Zhang Tie could see

large cruises and ships on Heavenly Qin Lake.

Zhang Tie sensed a bizarre qi blowing over.

1 hour later, when Zhang Tie saw Xuanyuan Hill, a prosperous dreamlike painting scroll entered his eyesight.

Zhang Tie had seen the world; however, when he caught sight of this city which was called the city of cities, the lighthouse of humans and the capital of countries, he was still deeply shocked.

Class A cities were pretty large and prosperous in Taixia Country; however, the prosperity of Xuanyuan Hill completely subverted Zhang Tie's imagination about the scale of a city.

Zhang Tie didn't know how large Xuanyuan Hill was. Standing on the airboat, he could not see its border. There were various styles of buildings here.

It was unimaginably prosperous in Xuanyuan Hill in this age.

Under the guidance of the ground lamp signals, Iron-Dragon Airboat slowly approached an airport, which contained thousands of airboats in different sizes. Additionally, airboats were flying off and landing there constantly.

Zhang Tie had seen an airport which contained thousands of airships; however, thousands of airboats were as shocking as a fleet.

It was just on the periphery of Xuanyuan Hill.

After being stunned for a short while, Zhang Tie suddenly realized that there wasn't any airboat or knight in the front air territory except for white clouds. He then turned around and asked Bai Suxian.

Bai Suxian threw a glance at him with a smile, "This is a no-fly zone like that of Lion Fortress. However, this no-fly zone is stricter than that of Lion Fortress. In the air territory of Xuanyuan Hill, neither airboats nor knights could fly. Only birds, sage-level

knights and airships that are driven by floating air sacs could still fly above Xuanyuan Hill. Although this kind of airship could fly over there, they have to land at the airport over 130 miles away from Xuanyuan Hill, from where passengers could enter Xuanyuan Hill by ground traffic tools. All the airships within 60 miles around Xuanyuan Hill will be shot down. By contrast, airboats could enter the periphery of Xuanyuan Hill. But If they entered the no-fly zone of Xuanyuan Hill, they would fall off!"

"Even heavenly knight could not fly here?"

"If you see anyone flying in the no-fly zone, he must be a sage-level knight. Only sage-level human knight could enjoy such a privilege to fly above Xuanyuan Hill. As for others, even the top three chancellors have to go to the imperial court by ground traffic tools!"

"How large is Xuanyuan Hill?"

Bai Suxian threw a glance at Zhang Tie with a smile before replying, "The radius of the no-fly zone above Xuanyuan Hill is 380 miles. It's Xuanyuan Hill below the no-fly zone."

"436670 square miles!" Zhang Tie immediately worked out the area of Xuanyuan Hill with the powerful calculating ability of mental arithmetic by abacus.

This was the core region of human civilization which covered over 600,000 square miles. It was almost as large as Zhang Tie's Fire Dragon Bounty Territory...

'F*ck!'

Chapter 1102: The Disease of Uncle Zhong

Iron-Dragon Airboat slowly parked in a huge berth. The moment the hatch door was opened, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian had seen a kind and shrewd old man in a fine long gown and grey beard welcoming them on one side of the gangway outside the airboat, followed by 8 steady bodyguards in uniforms.

Zhang Tie immediately identified that this old man was a black iron knight while the 8 bodyguards were all brave LV 13 battle generals who had rich battle experience.

Bai Suxian got off the airboat while naturally linking Zhang Tie's arm. The old man threw a glance at Bai Suxian's movements stealthily while a shrewd light flashed across his face. Closely after that, he revealed a genial smile as he hurriedly walked forward.

"Thank God, Miss, you've finally arrived..."

"Uncle Zhong, why are you here? You could have just dispatched someone here..." At the sight of this old man, Bai Suxian also revealed a genial smile as she hurriedly pulled Zhang Tie two steps forward.

"I've long been told that Miss is going to visit Xuanyuan Hill these days. When I saw you last time, it was the birthday of the grand madam of Lord Guangnan's Mansion. As I've not seen Miss for a few years, I'm afraid that if I don't come here this time, I will have fewer chances to meet Miss..." Uncle Zhong blushed suddenly as he took out a piece of the white handkerchief and covered his mouth with it before forcefully coughing a few times. Closely after that, he silently crushed it up and put it into his sleeve.

Even though Zhang Tie didn't use his lotus-flower eyes, he could still see the dark red color that diffused on the white handkerchief. Additionally, the coughs of Uncle Zhong sounded like breaking alveoli as if throwing a handful of iron sands into an air leaking bellows.

"Uncle Zhong, are you all right?" Bai Suxian hurriedly moved a few steps forward and supported Uncle Zhong with her hands. At the same time, she patted his back for a short while, "You've suffered this disease for so many years. Haven't you recovered yet?"

"Thanks for your concern, Miss, I'm afraid that my disease would not recover anymore..." Uncle Zhong replied in a relaxed tone with a faint smile like talking about someone else, "This disease was caused when I followed Lord Guangnan to a punitive expedition for the 18 mountain caves on Dragon Mountain in the south border of Taixia Country. These years, Lord Guangnan had me stay in Xuanyuan Hill to seek better medicament treatment so that I could survive a few more years. I've not imagined that the witchcraft of those barbarians in the south border is really something. After staying in Xuanyuan Hill for so many years, I've not met anyone who could cure my disease yet!" Uncle Zhong waved his hand as he continued, "Aww, I'm too old and flippant; I almost forgot about greeting this noble guest. This must be Fire Dragon Hermit, the very one Miss got acquainted in the Earth-elements Realm and made Miss leave the Lord Guangnan's Mansion for Youzhou Province..."

Uncle Zhong's eyes immediately fell onto Zhang Tie's body.

"Hoho, I'm Cui Li, only outsiders call me Fire Dragon Hermit. If Uncle Zhong likes, you could call me Cui Li!" Zhang Tie didn't put on his airs at all.

"You're too modest; you're too modest. I was told that Fire Dragon Hermit had made remarkable military exploits in the Earth-elements Realm. You've killed more than one earth-level demon knight. This old man is just a myrmidon of Lord Guangnan's Mansion, I dare not be that presumptuous in front of you!" Uncle Zhong hurriedly waved his hand.

"Uncle Zhong, take his advice, just call him Cui Li. If you continued to call him Fire Dragon Hermit, it would sound too

strange..." Bai Suxian suggested in a bit bashful way.

Uncle Zhong looked around Zhang Tie with an exaggerated expression on purpose as if he was looking at his son-in-law. Closely after that, he patted his head forcefully as he burst out into laughter, "I see, I see, Miss, Fire Dragon Hermit indeed sounds too strange, too strange. Look at me, I'm too muddle-headed. Miss, please forgive me..."

"Uncle Zhong!" Bai Suxian raised her voice unconsciously.

"Okay, okay, that's all, that's all; let's get on the vehicle. We can talk about it later in the manor. After knowing that Miss is coming today, I've already had the cooks prepare your favorite Yunluo Banquet for Miss and Childe Cui..."

Uncle Zhong then led Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie to the fleet on one side of the airboat.

In the fleet, three lengthened "Faerie-Dragon-Elder" limos with two small exclusive banners of Lord Guangnan's Mansion on the head of each vehicle were followed by two deluxe buses. The buses were used to carry Zhang Tie's disciples. There were also small banners of Lord Guangnan's Mansion on the heads of the buses.

Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and Uncle Zhong got on the same vehicle in the middle of the three limos. Previously, Uncle Zhong wanted to get on the front vehicle; however, he was called in the same vehicle by Bai Suxian. Whatever, it was spacious enough for even a few more people inside the limo.

Zhang Tie's disciples then got on the two deluxe buses at the end of the fleet.

This was the private berth of Lord Guangnan's Mansion. There were exclusive, integrated replenishment facilities beside this private berth, which could provide various supply services for the airboat. Besides, there was an exclusive underground driveway beneath this private berth, through which they could directly leave

the airport of Xuanyuan Hill.

Both walls of the underground driveway were mounted with senior longlasting fluorite lamps, which made the exclusive underground driveway as bright as day.

Zhang Tie was sure that this was the most advanced airport that he had ever seen. Undoubtedly, it was one symbol of a major clan in Taixia Country to have a private berth in this airport.

Of course, Lord Guangnan's Mansion was the top clan in Taixia Country. Besides private berth in the airport of Xuanyuan Hill, they also had a private mansion and manor over there.

When they left the airport, they entered the 16-driveway highway. Watching those vehicles on the highway, Zhang Tie suddenly felt entering a time tunnel.

As he had seen too many steam vehicles with black smoke, when Zhang Tie saw those vehicles burning alcohol on the highway of Xuanyuan Hill, he felt being on the driveway of a prosperous city before the Catastrophe.

The fleet of Lord Guangnan's Mansion moved very fast. There were not too many vehicles on the road. Only after a short while, they had entered the territory of Xuanyuan Hill.

When he entered Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie felt a bizarre strength and wave blowing over his chakras. He attempted it and found that his chakras could run as normally as before. However, the ability granted by his chakras which could enable him to float up and balance the force of gravity disappeared at once. Besides losing his flight ability, his battle strength as an earth knight was not weakened at all.

After confirming this effect, Zhang Tie became more strong-willed.

Only sage-level knights could fly in the air territory of Xuanyuan Hill. Of course, the 9 ministers in Taixia Country were not sages.

After losing his flight ability, a knight would lose half of his moving space, which indicated that he could probably kill that finance minister in Xuanyuan Hill if he made a proper plan.

When Bai Suxian and Uncle Zhong were talking in the limo, they could not imagine that Zhang Tie on their side was thinking about how to kill a dignified minister in Taixia Country, an influential figure who could shock many subcontinents only by stomping on the ground in Xuanyuan Hill.

From the talk between Bai Suxian and Uncle Zhong, Zhang Tie gradually knew the identity of Uncle Zhong and some affairs in Xuanyuan Hill.

Uncle Zhong was Lord Guangnan's trusted subordinate and the myrmidon of Lord Guangnan's Mansion. In the early days, he followed Lord Guangnan to guard the south border of Taixia Country and was injured. Bai Suxian's dad then let him live out his life in retirement in Xuanyuan Hill and seek for medical treatment by the way.

Uncle Zhong suffered from a bizarre witchcraft in the south border, which was called Gold Broken Witchcraft . Over these years, he had sought for medical treatment from many famous doctors; however, none of them could cure his disease. Even if his disease could be cured for the time being, it would soon have a relapse in a few days. The toxicity of Gold Broken Witchcraft was hardly cast off like worms attaching to his bones.

Only after a short while since the vehicle started, Uncle Zhong had started to cough once again.

Therefore, Bai Suxian was concerned about the disease of Uncle Zhong.

"My disease could not be cured. Miss, don't worry about me. It was said that the witchcraft in the 18 mountain caves of the Dragon Mountain in the south border of Taixia Country originated from the Great Wilderness Sect. Since the Great Wilderness Sect was

exterminated, the 18 mountain caves of the Dragon Mountain terrorized one region and gradually showed their ambition to overthrow the regime of Taixia Country. Finally, Lord Guangnan dispatched troops to encircle and annihilate them. In that battle, the heads of all the masters of the 18 mountain caves were chopped off by Lord Guangnan and buried on both sides of the road in the form of a pyramid. I discovered that I was poisoned with the Broken Gold Witchcraft in a few months after the battle. However, as the Great Wilderness Sect and the 18 mountain caves of Dragon Mountain had been exterminated one after another, there would be no solution to cure my disease anymore. In recent years, the toxicity of Broken Gold Witchcraft gradually entered my lungs, causing my health to deteriorate. Miss, I was not kidding with you just now. If Miss came here a few years later, you might not be able to see me any longer..."

Uncle Zhong talked about his life or death situation with a smile. Bai Suxian kept dropping off her tears as she comforted him, "No, even if there's no solution in Xuanyuan Hill, there must be a solution somewhere else!"

"I've been over 100 years old. Although it's a short lifespan among knights, it's much better than commoners. I've forgotten that how many people have I killed with Lord Guangnan; I've enjoyed almost all the privileges in the world. I've seen through everything. Before death, I'm already satisfied to know that Miss has a good husband!" Uncle Zhong said as he threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie.

Hearing Uncle Zhong's words, Bai Suxian became more upset. She suddenly thought about the unusual man on her side who grasped various secret skills. Therefore, she asked Zhang Tie with a hopeful look, "Can you help Uncle Zhong?"

...

Chapter 1103: The Secret of Great Wilderness Sect

Zhang Tie gained some message about the Great Wilderness Sect in the south border of Taixia Country for the first time from the conversation between Bai Suxian and Uncle Zhong.

Zhang Tie didn't know about the 18 mountains caves of Dragon Mountain in the south border of Taixia Country. However, Zhang Tie knew the Gold Broken Witchcraft Parasites . The witchcraft parasites were just small tricks in the "Gains Section" and the "Controlling Section" in the Great Wilderness Sutra. As the process was a bit weird and trivial, Zhang Tie didn't pay too much attention to it. Zhang Tie could easily modify species in Castle of Black Iron and had taken a great number of source fruits, which granted him a powerful source of spirit and soul; furthermore, he had no limit on using incarnations. As for Zhang Tie, the secret skills in the "Incarnation Section" was the essence of Great Wilderness Sutra, those tricks in the "Gains Section" and the "Controlling Section" were just auxiliary.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the superficial witchcraft about raising poisonous parasites in the "Gains Section" and the "Controlling Section" grasped by the 18 mountain caves in the south border of Taixia Country could dominate a region in the south border of Taixia Country and had to be encircled and annihilated by Lord Guangnan's troops. After being poisoned by such a trivial witchcraft, even a black iron knight could not bear it and could only deteriorate day by day until death...

Zhang Tie realized that he had underestimated the power of those "small tricks" in the Great Wilderness Sutra .

'It was reasonable for the Great Wilderness Sect to become the unrivaled force in the vast south border of Taixia Country with the classic Great Wilderness Sutra . As I gained Great Wilderness Sutra

easily by accident, plus so many trump cards, I didn't pay much attention to those small tricks in Great Wilderness Sutra . Perhaps, these "small tricks" which I disdain to cultivate have become the supreme secret skill and the capital for the others to be tyrannical in one region.'

'No wonder Cloud Crane mentioned that he wanted to return to the south border of Taixia Country in his letter. It seems that the south border of Taixia Country is really a big stage of Great Wilderness Sutra .

Bai Suxian's question was just a piece of cake for Zhang Tie. It was too simple for Zhang Tie to relieve the toxicity of the witchcraft parasites. According to the Great Wilderness Sutra , there were 12 kinds of witchcraft of insects above LV 6, which were respectively "attached witchcraft parasites", "drilled witchcraft parasites", "bloody witchcraft parasites", "force witchcraft parasites", "bow witchcraft parasites", "broken witchcraft parasites", "fighting witchcraft parasites", "incarnation witchcraft parasites", "changing witchcraft parasites", "dragon witchcraft parasites" and "immortal witchcraft parasites". As Broken Gold Witchcraft Parasites were headed by broken parasites, it was a sort of broken witchcraft parasites. Broken witchcraft parasites were LV 11. Only by injecting a LV 11 great wilderness seal into Uncle Zhong's body, Zhang Tie would be able to control those witchcraft parasites inside Uncle Zhong's body and relieve the toxicity of witchcraft parasites.

However, if he relieved the toxicity of witchcraft parasites inside Uncle Zhong's body in a few seconds, even idiots would find that he was cultivating the Great Wilderness Sutra . The great wilderness seals in the Great Wilderness Sutra were the most advanced and ultimate means. Zhang Tie estimated that those who could touch All Spirits Tower and the cultivation of great wilderness seals in the Great Wilderness Sutra should be elites and management among the Great Wilderness Sect . Commoners in the

Great Wilderness Sect could only gain a bit superficial knowledge about Great Wilderness Sutra .

'As I gained the complete Great Wilderness Sutra by accident, I could integrate with the various methods and the cultivation method of All-Spirits Pagoda in the Great Wilderness Sutra in the most direct method. Therefore, I simplified the process of the cultivation of the Great Wilderness Sutra and could cultivate it only through reciting endless great wilderness words. Actually, there were hundreds of secret methods on different levels in the "Summon Section", "Amulet Section", "Gains Section", "Controlling Section" and "Incarnation Section".

Take forming All-Spirits Pagoda as an instance, with the assistance of Bright Enlightenment Sutra, he could only impart the secret skill on forming one storey of All-Spirits Tower to his disciples each time. However, it was more sophisticated than forming the entire All-Spirits Pagoda once like how Zhang Tie did. By contrast, the former cultivation method was more twisted and would take the cultivators more time.

As Zhang Tie's disciples could not touch the complete Great Wilderness Sutra in the former cultivation method, they would think that their own cultivation method was the best and most correct one. Besides, they would appreciate Zhang Tie pretty much and spend greater efforts in cultivation...

After establishing Iron-Dragon Sect, Zhang Tie could consider humanities as a master of a sect. He could think through how the Great Wilderness Sect carried forward its secret skills and realized that it was too fortunate and unbelievable for him to gain the complete Great Wilderness Sutra .

As the Great Wilderness Sect carried forward its secret skills step by step, it was exterminated due to the Great Wilderness Sutra; after the Great Wilderness Sect was exterminated, some secret skills of Great Wilderness Sect were still carried forward in the numerous mountains in the south border of Taixia Country.

Therefore, Cloud Crane warned Zhang Tie in the letter that he could seek for an opportunity in the south border of the Eastern Continent if he was ambitious to be a dominator in one region...

Bai Suxian and the disease of Uncle Zhong reminded Zhang Tie of many things. He thought through many problems about the Great Wilderness Sect at once...

Noticing that Zhang Tie was silent, Bai Suxian thought that Zhang Tie was thinking about how to cure the Broken Gold Witchcraft Parasites of Uncle Zhong seriously. She could not imagine that the Broken Gold Witchcraft Parasites enabled Zhang Tie to have a higher insight about the current situation facing the south border of Taixia Country and the history of the Great Wilderness Sect...

Wise ones could observe the overall situation through details.

Perhaps, Zhang Tie had not discovered it that his experience and wisdom had entered higher realms after so many years of practice.

Zhang Tie was indeed thinking about relieving the broken gold witchcraft parasites. The relationship between Uncle Zhong and Bai Suxian was unusual. Additionally, Zhang Tie knew that Uncle Zhong was really concerned about and liked Bai Suxian. Therefore, he determined to give a favor to Uncle Zhong.

Being different than how Bai Suxian thought about, Zhang Tie was not considering how to relieve the toxicity of witchcraft parasites of Uncle Zhong rapidly; conversely, he was thinking about how to postpone the effect of the toxicity of witchcraft parasites...

Actually, Zhang Tie could relieve the toxicity of Broken Gold Witchcraft Parasites in less than 1 minute; however, he couldn't do that.

After recalling the contents in the Great Wilderness Sutra , Zhang Tie found a solution among the secret methods of the

"Amulet Section" which could relieve the toxicity of Broken Gold Witchcraft Parasites. Although he didn't need to use a great wilderness seal, this solution was still too effective.

According to the secret method in the "Amulet Section", he could relieve the toxicity of witchcraft parasites inside the body of Uncle Zhong within 3 days by a secret recipe. However, Uncle Zhong had stayed in Xuanyuan Hill so many years. So many famous human doctors could not relieve the witchcraft parasites inside his body, including those in the Lord Guangnan's Mansion in the south border of Taixia Country. If he cured it in 3 days like treating common influenza, it would be too eye-catching...

Actually, Zhang Tie had a plan in Xuanyuan Hill, he didn't want to be too eye-catching in this situation; otherwise, it might ruin his plan.

"There might be a solution about this Broken Gold Witchcraft Parasites!" Zhang Tie said with a solemn look purposefully while frowning.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian became spirited at once. Even Uncle Zhong became amazed. Previously, he thought that Miss just asked Cui Li about the possible solution out of concern and felt warm about that; however, he had not imagined that this man could relieve the toxicity of Broken Gold Witchcraft Parasites casually. If it could be cured so easily, he didn't need to stay in Xuanyuan Hill so many years at all. If a naughty boy said this, Uncle Zhong would just treat it as a f*art; however, it was told by an earth knight, who had great military exploits in the Earth-elements Realm and just established Iron-Dragon Sect. Such a person would not open his mouth easily. Therefore, Uncle Zhong became amazed.

"Ahh, really?" Bai Suxian immediately grasped Zhang Tie's arm.

Zhang Tie slowly nodded as he laid out his opinion, "I met some friends, one of them is a powerhouse of the Church of Patron in the

Western Continent who excels at controlling animals and various secret methods of the Church; the other one is a voodoo pharmacist. When I stayed with them, I've learned too much from them, plus that I'm interested in this aspect and have some insight about it, I might be able to cure the toxicity of witchcraft parasites inside Uncle Zhong!"

This time, Uncle Zhong widely opened his mouth out of amazement as he watched Zhang Tie with a bizarre eye light. Someone had told Uncle Zhong about what Zhang Tie had just told him. After treating Uncle Zhong for about half a year in vain, that person told Uncle Zhong that very few people could relieve the toxicity of witchcraft parasites unless bringing a new life to the one who executed the witchcraft parasites; otherwise, he should seek for help from a powerhouse who excelled at controlling animals and voodoo skills. Because witchcraft parasites was an interdisciplinary secret method of animals controlling and voodoo skills. Those who excelled at controlling animals and voodoo skills might have a solution to relieve the toxicity of Broken Gold Witchcraft Parasites .

The one who told Uncle Zhong about this was an imperial doctor of Taixia Country. After treating him for about half a year, the doctor reached the above conclusion. However, this man in front of him could tell him about the essence of the solution only after meeting him for less than half an hour. Therefore, Uncle Zhong had a bit confidence in Zhang Tie at once...

Chapter 1104: Saving People

After a consideration, Zhang Tie wrote a prescription for Uncle Zhong in the vehicle as he warned Uncle Zhong about the tips of the prescription. This was the first prescription. Later on, Zhang Tie would write some more prescriptions for Uncle Zhong. Zhang Tie planned to extend the treatment period by a few months in different prescriptions in case of others' suspicion.

"Attention, the age of soul-recovery grass should not be less than 10 years. Otherwise, it would be ineffective. Neither should it be too old; else, it would have a strong side-effect. It should be 12 or 13 years old. The soul-recovery grass mainly works on witchcraft parasites; instead of you..."

...

"Additionally, the purer the golden and bloody saliva sense was, the better it would be. You'd better find an expert for some left by mutated bloody dragon whale..."

...

"The blood of hell black spider should be fresh. It's used as guiding drug when you take the decoction of the medicinal ingredients. I wonder whether you could get hell black spiders in Xuanyuan Hill..."

Zhang Tie emphasized some tips to Uncle Zhong. Uncle Zhong listened to Zhang Tie's tips seriously as he nodded from time to time. Bai Suxian just watched Zhang Tie with sparkling eyes and a tender look. In her heart, this man was all-mighty and could always bring hope to others at any time.

Speaking of the hell black spider, Uncle Zhong revealed a smile, "Fresh hell black spider might be rare in other places, but in Xuanyuan Hill, we could get everything with money!"

"Can we get these things easily from Xuanyuan Hill?"

"There's a Colosseum in the Gold and Power Market. These hell black spiders are frequently seen in the Colosseum. Many major clans rooted in Xuanyuan Hill would also purchase some hell black spiders for training domestic young disciples or forming soul flames. The Pharmacists Union would also buy some eccentric medicinal ingredients. Many business groups in Taixia Country are selling medicinal ingredients to Xuanyuan Hill. Lord Guangnan's Mansion would occasionally carry some rarities from the south border to strike up an acquaintance with Xuanyuan Hill. As long as we have money, we could even get LV 16 mutated beasts here, not to mention LV 6 hell black spiders!" Uncle Zhong replied with a smile.

Zhang Tie understood that it was nothing difficult for the powerhouses here to find some underground living beings.

"These days, the Gold and Power Market is holding a Treasures Meeting. It's very boisterous. I was told that Golden Roc Bank brought here a piece of God's Star from a subcontinent a few days ago and was going to sell or exchange it in the Treasures Meeting. This item is a rarity. If Miss and Childe Cui is free, you both could join in the fun!" Uncle Zhong put away Zhang Tie's prescription meticulously as he revealed a news to Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian with a smile.

Uncle Zhong saw a bit hope from the prescription. Therefore, he felt a bit better.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were both shocked by this news.

"Someone is going to sell or exchange the piece of God's Star? Is that a fool?"

"It's said that it's a collection of an imperial household on a subcontinent. Because of demon disaster on that subcontinent, the country was exterminated. That imperial household couldn't keep his prestige anymore. In the chaotic world, such a rarity could only incur him trouble; therefore, with the guarantee and suggestion of

Golden Roc Bank, that imperial household determines to sell or exchange it in Taixia Country so as to survive himself..."

"Is there anything special with the piece of God's Star?"

"I don't know about it yet. If Miss is interested in it, I could have someone inquire it from Golden Roc Bank!"

"No need. If the piece of God's Star was really something special, it might have been propagated by Golden Roc Bank before the official auction. We would know that from gossips without having to inquire it purposefully. We need to stay a few more days in Xuanyuan Hill and would like to take a look around there. Uncle Zhong, please have someone prepare two VIP Cards of Treasures Pavilion for us..."

"I've already prepared that for Miss and Childe Cui!" Uncle Zhong replied as he explained to Zhang Tie, "The VIP Cards of Treasures Pavilion could only be distributed to the masters or knights of major clans. I'm afraid that those disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect could not go there with you!"

"No problem. I will have them play a few days for free in Xuanyuan Hill!" Zhang Tie revealed an understanding smile. Right then, Zhang Tie saw an area of the architectural complex being composed of high towers in the distance. The highest tower in the center of the architectural complex was over 1,000 m high, which was very splendid, "Where are we?"

"It's the Humans Pharmacists Union Headquarters!"

...

After over 1 hour's ride, their fleet finally arrived at the private manor of Bai Clan in Xuanyuan Hill.

This manor covered about 20,000 square meters, which was a common area in other places; however, in Xuanyuan Hill, such a private territory was definitely the symbol of identity. None of the land in Xuanyuan Hill could be purchased; instead, they could only

be gifted by the imperial households of Taixia Country. If nobody inherited the land here, they would take it back.

Since Taixia Country was established over 800 years ago, after the two holy wars, besides a small part of the land in the hand of the imperial households, all the rest land in Xuanyuan Hill had been awarded to others. Therefore, it was very hard for a commoner even a knight to gain a piece of land and a position in Xuanyuan Hill today.

That was why Zhang Tie could see time-honored buildings since he entered Xuanyuan Hill. Many buildings in Xuanyuan Hill aged above 500 years on average. Even the trees on both sides of the streets were elder than 100 years.

The vicissitudes and the brilliant civilizations of humans were reflected in the buildings on both sides of the streets in Xuanyuan Hill like frozen painting scrolls.

On the way, Zhang Tie caught sight of the Humans Pharmacists Union Headquarters, the Humans Mercenary Union Headquarters and the Humans Artisans Union Headquarters. Through the brilliant and distinctive architectural buildings on the way, Zhang Tie finally understood why Xuanyuan Hill enjoyed the reputations such as the capital of countries, lighthouse of humans, holy city, core of civilization and human fortress.

It was very normal for a city to have some unions. None of those unions were exclusive to Xuanyuan Hill. However, when they were headed by "Humans" and followed by "Headquarters", the dignified and time-honored sense made people breathless.

It could be said that each place in Xuanyuan Hill contained the time-honored history of a major clan, even humans...

Who could imagine that such a grand city had been penetrated through by demons and Heavens-reaching Church silently...

Chapter 1105: Peach Flowers in the Spring Wind

Xuanyuan Hill was a time-honored and vigorous city.

This city could bring light to humans. Meanwhile, it was silently invaded by the invisible dark.

In the light and the dark, everything in this city became three-dimensional instead of monotonous.

There were peach trees on both sides of many roads in Xuanyuan Hill. Most of them were old peach trees. With twisted trunks, they looked especially beautiful. Although fluorescence of peach flowers had passed, Zhang Tie could imagine the grand scenery when those peach flowers were in full bloom each year.

Uncle Zhong said that when the peach flowers were in full bloom in each March or April, Xuanyuan Hill looked most beautiful. If one looked at it from the sky, one would find that the entire Xuanyuan Hill was as brilliant and beautiful as fire in that period.

It was said that Emperor Xuanyuan met the mother of the crown prince today in the peach woods when he was young and fell in love with each other. Therefore, Emperor Xuanyuan planted many peach trees in Xuanyuan Hill.

It was a romantic love story among the people. Zhang Tie would believe in this story if it were before; however, when he heard it today, Zhang Tie doubted about this story very much. Because he knew that many so-called non-governmental legends were of deep significance, especially those about the current ruler. This love story was probably fabricated by someone. As long as this love story was spread among the people, the peach trees in Xuanyuan Hill almost meant the unshakable position of the crown prince in the east imperial palace.

People's heart was unfathomable.

When he thought about the lackeys of Heavens Church and demons in this magnificent city and looked at those time-honored buildings and peach trees which accounted for the greater part of the city, Zhang Tie felt complex inside.

'Will this place still be covered with peach flowers in full bloom in the spring wind after this holy war?' Zhang Tie wondered because holy wars usually ended those beautiful and magnificent cities.

...

When their fleet arrived at the manor, all the guards and servants were welcoming them in two rows outside the gate of the manor.

There were over 1,000 guest rooms in this private manor. Previously, Lord Guangnan always arrived at Xuanyuan Hill, followed by many servants and guards. Therefore, it was easy for them to receive Zhang Tie and his disciples.

Zhang Tie was arranged to rest in a guest room of the main manor. Bai Suxian had her own suites there. Zhang Tie's disciples were arranged to rest in the subordinate manor.

After coming to Bai Clan's manor, Uncle Zhong led Zhang Tie to his own guest room. Bai Suxian returned to her bedroom. She was going to change a new set of clothes and dress herself up for the supper as she usually did at home as a princess.

Zhang Tie's room was very considerate and luxurious. No matter how scrupulous a person was, he would not find any minor fault in this room, not to mention Zhang Tie who was not censorious.

"Childe Cui, are you satisfied with this room?"

"Hoho, I'm very satisfied with it, thank you so much, Uncle Zhong!"

"Feel like home, feel like home!" Uncle Zhong replied. When Uncle Zhong saw Zhang Tie for the first time, he found Zhang Tie

was pleasing. Now, Uncle Zhong felt Bai Suxian was discerning. A powerful earth knight could match the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion pretty well. Therefore, Uncle Zhong almost treated Zhang Tie as the son-in-law in Lord Guangnan's Mansion as he became more genial, "Just tell me if you need anything. Don't behave pretentiously in front of your Uncle Zhong!"

"Sure!" Zhang Tie nodded as he looked around the room, "Is there a map of Xuanyuan Hill? As it's my first time to visit Xuanyuan Hill, I don't know about it very well. I want to look around Xuanyuan Hill these days!"

"Map? Yes, we have. I will have someone bring it to you after a while!"

"Thanks, Uncle Zhong, by the way, please have someone call Liu Xing to my room!"

...

Uncle Zhong soon left Zhang Tie's room after telling Zhang Tie about the supper time. When he left the room, he even closed the door from outside. At the sight of Uncle Zhong's behaviors, outsiders might think that he was a steward of Lord Guangnan's Mansion; who could imagine that he was a knight.

In Xuanyuan Hill, for the safety of Emperor Xuanyuan, only sage-level knights could fly in the sky. As a result, black iron knights became very average here. After hiding their qi, any commoner in the street might have a terrifying background in Xuanyuan Hill.

Standing in the balcony of his suite, Zhang Tie looked outside. Two manors as magnificent and large as the manor of Lord Guangnan neighbored the latter with peach woods in between. One of them had a classic Hua castle; the other manor looked very boisterous with a high traffic flow. Although Zhang Tie didn't know about the masters and clans of the two manors, he knew that their manors must have a great background in Xuanyuan Hill like that of Lord Guangnan.

Zhang Tie watched the undulating pavilions and edifices in the distance while a thought occurred, 'Where's the residence of the finance minister in Xuanyuan Hill?'

'It's a pretty cool experience for me to exchange the roles with my enemy between prey and hunter.'

'Ahh, and the residence of the leader of the Gobbling Party also the very master of the crown prince in the Eastern Palace who usually dreams about stomping Huaiyuan Palace to death.'

'Now that the two people served as supreme officials in the imperial court of Taixia Country, they would definitely have a chance to meet each other, what if...'

Zhang Tie's eyes flickered as he revealed a mysterious smile.

At this moment, he heard the sounds, "Bang...bang..." as he knew that Liu Xing was outside the door.

Knocking at the door twice with an interval of about 0.8 seconds. Such a detailed demeanor reflected a person's invisible culture and connotation. Over these days, Zhang Tie found that Liu Xing knocked at the doors of his junior fellow or sister apprentices as same as he knocked at Zhang Tie's door. Unless an emergency, Liu Xing would never knock at the door for the 3rd time. Therefore, Zhang Tie was more satisfied with Liu Xing. The first senior fellow apprentice of Iron-Dragon Airboat was growing more and more qualified. This also indicated the difference between those who had battle experience and those who didn't. The former ones usually looked calm and move effectively. By contrast, the latter ones might make a false judgment in emergencies.

"Come in!" Zhang Tie opened his mouth as he turned around.

After pushing open the door, Liu Xing entered as he cupped his hand and said, "Master!"

"Are you satisfied with this place?"

"It's not bad. All the junior fellow and sister apprentices have

already found their own rooms just now. Our rooms are neighboring; therefore, we could look after each other. As junior fellow apprentice had been to Xuanyuan Hill, he said that our rooms could even match the top hotels in Xuanyuan Hill!" Liu Xing replied with a smile.

Zhang Tie had imagined that Zhu Dabiao had been to Xuanyuan Hill. It was not strange for a juvenile who was born in a provincial governor's mansion to have a chance to visit Xuanyuan Hill. Zhang Tie estimated that most of his disciples should have been to Xuanyuan Hill along with their clan elders even though they didn't live here for a long time. Whatever, it was his first time to come to Xuanyuan Hill.

"What's your plan?"

"I will follow your arrangement!"

After being silent for a short while, Zhang Tie said, "I'm going to deal with something in Xuanyuan Hill. Therefore, I could have you on my side all the way. You could have a few days' leave. You don't need to report your schedule to me these days. After dealing with my affairs, when I plan to leave Xuanyuan Hill, I will notice you one day earlier..."

"Yes, master!" Liu Xing replied in a bit excited mood.

As young men, of course, they would feel most happy by enjoying themselves for free here. If Zhang Tie were on their side, honestly, his disciples would feel being a bit restrictive. As for these disciples, Zhang Tie's dignity was too terrifying and overwhelming although he always hid his qi in front of them. Zhang Tie's motif always made them feel as careful as treading upon eggs.

Previously, Zhang Tie almost knelt down in front of Elder Muen's coercion; not to mention his disciples in front of Zhang Tie as an earth knight.

"Hoho, you must feel pretty happy without me ruining the

atmosphere on your side..."

"Erm...this disciple dares not think that way!" Liu Xing lowered his head in an embarrassed way.

"Haha, don't be that restrictive. I'm your master, not your babysitter. Do you really think that I don't know what you young men think about because of my age?" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he teleported a pile of gold checks from his portable space-teleportation item, the amount of which was over 1 million gold coins. "Take this, it's your expenditure in Xuanyuan Hill. You couldn't do anything here without money!"

Liu Xing hesitated a bit as he didn't take the money at once. Because it was a great amount of money for anyone...

"This amount of money is nothing serious. As the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect, you will soon know that money will come and go. Iron-Dragon Sect might not be the most powerful sect in Taixia Country for the time being. After a short while, Iron-Dragon Sect would be the richest sect. As the first senior fellow apprentice of Iron-Dragon Sect, you need to learn how to spend money. You need to spend all of this amount of money with the other disciples in this holiday..."

"Yes, Master!" Liu Xing finally took the gold checks after hearing Zhang Tie's explanation.

"Hmm, it's okay!" Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhang Tie before warning him, "You need to learn to relax yourself in cultivating both culture and battle skills. Although Fire Dragon Sutra is good, you need to know that more haste, less speed. You need to cultivate constantly and diligently and behave calmly in your life. It's my gnosis. You should taste it slowly!"

"Thanks for your lesson, Master!" Liu Xing's heart raced as he bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie.

...

After a few minutes, Liu Xing returned to his own guest room. Although being over 100 m away, Zhang Tie could still hear the cheers from the guest rooms of his disciples. Someone even exclaimed, "Longevity, Master..."

At this moment, all the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect felt that their Master's decision was really exciting and thoughtful although he always looked dignified and solemn.

Chapter 1106: The Golden Water River

On the map, the city Xuanyuan Hill was a huge circle with a radius of about 400 miles. Being located on the plain, this city was surrounded by Fairy Lake, Heavenly Qin Lake and Fair-Sounding Lake. All the three lakes were fresh lakes. The total area of the three lakes surpassed that of Xuanyuan Hill. The irrigation of three lakes led to over 600 square miles' fertile soil around Xuanyuan Hill.

Xuanyuan Hill was surrounded by the 9 immortal provinces of Taixia Country. The entire Xuanyuan Hill was in the center of Eastern Continent. The core of Xuanyuan Hill was the emperor's imperial city, namely the residence of Emperor Xuanyuan, also the heart of Taixia Country.

Being in the center of Xuanyuan Hill, the emperor's imperial city was like the red region in the center of a target.

The radius of the emperor's imperial city was 130 miles. Its area was almost equal to the size of 12 standard Class A cities in Taixia Country.

Xuanyuan Hill was the center of humans. Similarly, the entire emperor's imperial city was the center of Xuanyuan Hill.

The imperial palace of Emperor Xuanyuan, the bureaucratic agencies, the residences of top 3 chancellors and 9 ministers, as well as the imperial households and nobles of Taixia Country, were all in the emperor's imperial city.

There were three kinds of people in the emperor's imperial city: the imperial households and officials of Taixia Country; the clansmen and family members of imperial households and officials; their servants. Besides the above three kinds of people, even the top clans and lords such as Lord Guangnan couldn't have any private manor in the emperor's imperial city. This regulation was made by Emperor Xuanyuan. The emperor's imperial city was

the authority center of Taixia Country. There was only one master here, namely Emperor Xuanyuan. Everyone in the emperor's imperial city was serving Emperor Xuanyuan, from imperial clansmen to the servants.

Therefore, the largest backbone authority group in Taixia Country, even among humans came into being in the entire emperor's imperial city.

Xuanyuan Hill did not have any city wall. Emperor Xuanyuan said that if Xuanyuan Hill needed to be protected by city walls, humans would be exterminated. Therefore, there weren't any city wall or city defense facilities across Xuanyuan Hill.

The emperor's imperial city and Xuanyuan Hill were not separated by city walls; instead, they were separated by Golden Water River, which was an artificial circular canal surrounding the emperor's imperial city. This canal had three sources, respectively in Heavenly Qin Lake, Fairy Lake and Fair-Sounding Lake. The fairy played a fair-sounding music by a heavenly qin around the emperor's imperial city. There were 12 huge bridges named by the 12 earthly branches including rat, ox, tiger, rabbit, dragon, snake, horse, sheep, monkey, chicken, dog and pig crossing Golden Water River precisely like the scales of 12 two-hour periods on the sundial, which were used to communicate emperor's imperial city with Xuanyuan Hill.

Unless one had a special pass that was usually tied onto one's waist or a token, nobody could pass any of the 12 bridges and enter the emperor's imperial city. Those who violated the rule would be killed right away.

On the 3rd day since they arrived at Xuanyuan Hill, it was already November 1st, the 903rd year of Black Iron Calendar.

On that day, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian watched the emperor's imperial city in the distance by a boat on the Golden Water River.

These days, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were traveling Xuanyuan

Hill and visiting places of interest; however, they had just traveled a small area of Xuanyuan Hill. Famous places like Xuanyuan Hill were filled with humanities and love stories. There were widely praised stories and legends everywhere. Perhaps in a time-honored and tranquil roadside teahouse, they could hear the allusions about the top 3 chancellors and some big figures who were once commanding the wind and the clouds. The old trees in the lanes might be souvenirs planted by a top figure from a subcontinent. On the riverside of Golden Water River, there were many love stories about heroes and beauties, chides and misses.

The boat was not long. It was delicate in details. The boatman was a swarthy tough guy. Sitting at the prow, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were drinking peach flower spirit which was the local specialty and taking dried plums as they enjoyed the scenery on Golden Water River.

Golden Water River was about 1.3 miles in width. The cruises came and went on the river, making it very boisterous. One side of the Golden Water River was close to the emperor's imperial city; all the manors and other buildings on the opposite side of the river looked solemn and inviolable with hall walls and vermilion gates. Additionally, very few people were over there. Soldiers in helmets and armors were passing by the riverside from time to time...

On the other side of the Golden Water River, it was completely different. Dense cruises were covering the riverside. Additionally, there were many hotels and stalls over there. Many skiffs and gaily-painted pleasure-boats were parking on the roadside jetties. Many people were drinking and having food with their friends while singing songs loudly and taking liberties with female dancers. What a boisterous scenery!

Although it was already November, the willows on both sides of the Golden Water River still looked green and didn't look like withering at all. It was said that the willows were a new species that the private imperial living affairs and finance ministry

introduced from a subcontinent. It was evergreen round the year. It would replace its leaves when new buds were born in spring...

"I've not imagined about such a prosperous scenery on the Golden Water River in Xuanyuan Hill!" Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian at the prow.

When Bai Suxian traveled with Zhang Tie these couple days, she didn't wear brilliant imperial longuette anymore; instead, she dressed up like a common neighboring elder sister in a skirt with long hair swaying in the air. However, Bai Suxian was born with a beautiful look, plus her hot figure, she looked unutterably dignified. Although being graceful and restrained, she looked extremely coquettish; besides being charming, she looked a bit arrogant and distant. Every twinkle and smile of Bai Suxian was extremely seductive.

Bai Suxian's unique and charming look attracted the attention of so many people on the cruises and gaily-painted pleasure-boats. If Zhang Tie was not on the boat, many playboys who thought they were rich and romantic would have accosted Bai Suxian. However, Zhang Tie's bald head and tower-like figure scared them away.

Chapter 1107: Average Life

Bai Suxian was sitting next to Zhang Tie and making spirit for him attentively. After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian revealed a faint smile as she threw an amorous look at Zhang Tie by her beautiful eyes silently.

Bai Suxian became silent. The boatman said generously at the stern while paddling, "Childe Cui, you might not know that. There are many major clans in Xuanyuan Hill. However, commoners like me accounted for most of the people here. Of course, commoners have to survive themselves by making money. Most of the commoners don't feel like leaving Xuanyuan Hill; however, they don't have crafts; therefore, they could only provide recreational services and the basic needs for the travelers. Take this Old Zhou as an instance, I have to survive on this boat in Xuanyuan Hill!"

As a boatman, Old Zhou survived on this boat on the Golden Water River. Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian rented his boat for enjoying the scenery on the Golden Water River. By the way, they hired Old Zhou to paddle the boat. Zhan Tie and Bai Suxian didn't tell Old Zhou about their identities. When they caught sight of Old Zhou in a wharf in common clothes, Zhang Tie immediately found that Old Zhou was special with a strong figure; additionally, the boatman was a LV 8 fighter with a kind look. After inquiring Old Zhou about the rent, Zhang Tie immediately determined to use Old Zhou's boat. They only told Old Zhou their surnames. Therefore, Old Zhou called Zhang Tie Childe Cui and Bai Suxian Miss Bai.

"Hoho, Old Zhou, what do you mean by saying that you do not feel like leaving Xuanyuan Hill? Does it mean that someone dared force you to leave in the public?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity. Others might be not interested in these trivial affairs after reaching Zhang Tie's position and cultivation base; however, Zhang Tie was especially interested in these trivial affairs as he also lived an average life before.

After visiting some places of interest in Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie felt a bit bored of those legends and allusions about heroes and influential figures. Although those high buildings and decorated archways were magnificent, Zhang Tie didn't have any feelings about them. Not until Zhang Tie watched those cruises coming and going on the Golden Water River, smelled the fragrance of spirit on the riverside and heard the sounds of hawking did the image of Xuanyuan Hill gradually become vivid in his mind.

"Not being forced by anyone!" Old Zhou explained while paddling the boat flexibly in the Golden Water River. At the same time, they passed by a two-storey gaily-painted pleasure-ship while the music and the elegant song of a female drifted out of there. When those men on the second storey of the ship passed by the boat, they widely opened their mouth at the sight of Bai Suxian who was smiling full of tenderness. Even though they were moving far away, they still turned around and watched Bai Suxian.

After hearing the song "The Beloved Ones" from the ship, Bai Suxian revealed a smile at Zhang Tie while blinking her eyes.

As an artificial canal, the Golden Water River linked the three lakes and Xuanyuan Hill. Although this river was wide, it didn't have any strong wind and big waves. The boat could move steadily on the Golden Water River like walking upon the flat ground as long as the boatman had proficient paddling skills.

After hearing Old Zhou's words, Zhang Tie became more curious, "Not being forced by anyone? As long as one settles down here, will he leave?"

"It's said that Xuanyuan Hill is the most prosperous place among all the human cities. If I could live a graceful life in Xuanyuan Hill, of course, I would not feel like leaving such a treasure land. But I have to leave!" Old Zhou paddled the boat as he let out a sigh, "I have to make money to survive my family members!"

"Right, living affairs are trivial. Although money is not almighty,

people could not survive in Xuanyuan Hill without money!" Zhang Tie laughed before saying.

"Yup! It's difficult to survive in Xuanyuan Hill..." Old Zhou clapped his hands out of excitement, causing a clear and crisp sound, "All the real estates in Xuanyuan Hill were gifted by the imperial households of Taixia Country. According to the regulation, we could not sell them. If nobody could inherit the real estates, they would be confiscated by the imperial households. I mean that if I could leave Xuanyuan Hill and let out my manor in Xuanyuan Hill, I could have a profitable income per year. With this rent, my family members would live a wealthy life even in the 9 immortal provinces; instead of having to work hard here every day. So many business groups would like to strive for a residence in Xuanyuan Hill. The rents of houses in Xuanyuan Hill rank top among all the human cities; the rent of a room covering 10 square meters at a remote place would cost over 1,000 gold coins a year. Even so, it's still very hard to rent one house here!"

"Take my home as an instance, my ancestor was the chief of the capital guard in Xuanyuan Hill. With the meritorious service, he was awarded a small manor in Xuanyuan Hill. Our Zhou family was also dignified at that time. According to my grandpa, when our ancestor returned to Xunzhou Province for sacrificing our predecessors, even the Xunzhou Provincial Governor had held a banquet for welcoming him. After our ancestor passed away, with his protection, our Zhou family became prosperous for another dozen years. Nobody among the descendants could match my ancestor. Since the generation of my grandpa, our Zhou family started to decline. When it comes to my generation, I have three brothers. I'm the eldest one. We inherited the ancestral manor in Xuanyuan Hill. It's just a small courtyard. Other two brothers of mine have left Xuanyuan Hill to seek a livelihood!"

"Previously, a nobleman from subcontinent wanted to rent that ancestral manor about 20 years ago at the price of 20,000 gold

coins a year. He wanted to renovate it and live inside all the year round. Our Zhou family were in trouble economically at that moment; with 20,000 gold coins a year, our family could improve our living standard right away. However, my father didn't agree with it. Before passing away, my father even warned us to safeguard the undertakings of Zhou family in Xuanyuan Hill!"

Zhang Tie's curiosity was aroused once again, "Sorry, sorry, I've not imagined that you're a descendant of a guard chief. 20,000 gold coins a year was not a small amount of money, why didn't your father agree with it at that moment?"

Old Zhou revealed a smile as he said unlike a boatman at all, "It's very easy for me to survive myself after leaving Xuanyuan Hill; however, after leaving here, it would be impossible for my descendants to be outstanding in Xuanyuan Hill. As long as I stayed here, there would be a hope for my family. If one of my descendants could become an official in Xuanyuan Hill, my family would be glorious and prosperous at once. Hehehe, although 20,000 gold coins sound like a good reward, nowhere else could have as many powerhouses as that in Xuanyuan Hill!"

"There're the best human schools, the most powerful knights and most opportunities for people to be outstanding in Xuanyuan Hill. As long as I stayed here, if someone among my descendants could become an official here, the relationship paved by my ancestor would become active at once. By contrast, the bit of money is nothing at all! As a common family, if we want to create chances for the juniors to be officials in Xuanyuan Hill, I have to find a way to survive my family members. Actually, the peach flower spirit that you drank was made by my wife at home using the peach flowers in our courtyard every year..."

Zhang Tie didn't deride Old Zhou and his wife; instead, he respected them pretty much. What this old couple did was almost as same as what Zhang Tie's parents did in Blackhot City. Hua parents could sacrifice everything for the sake of their children.

From the point of view of Old Zhou, his courtyard in Xuanyuan Hill was almost like a school district housing, which could provide a chance for the descendants of his clan to be gradually influenced by the atmosphere in Xuanyuan Hill. So many parents across Xuanyuan Hill like Old Zhou gave up their opportunities to be rich parents in other places; instead, they just stuck to do humble works in Xuanyuan Hill until their children became outstanding and glorified their ancestors.

Of course, not all the parents could behave like Old Zhou. Each family had their own situation. However, given the scale and population of Xuanyuan Hill, there must be a lot of families like that of Old Zhou. Actually, most of them should be like that of Old Zhou. Few ancestors' meritorious services could last over 100 years. Xuanyuan Hill had been founded for over 800 years. Few clans in Xuanyuan Hill could enjoy their ancestors' meritorious services for over 800 years.

These clans' ancestors were once glorious and brilliant; otherwise, they would not stay in Xuanyuan Hill. Therefore, many clans dreamed about having their descendants become outstanding in Xuanyuan Hill so as to glorify their ancestors.

"Old Zhou, how many kids do you have?"

Speaking of his kids, Old Zhou's face turned a bit glimmer as he unconsciously raised his voice, "I have 8 kids, 3 daughters and 5 sons. 3 of my sons are average; 2 of them are a bit talented. My 6th son excels at making instruments; he's working as an apprentice in the Humans Rune Instruments Craftsman Union Headquarters and could learn a lot of knowledge. My eldest son is good at fighting. I pulled a few strings that were established by my ancestor. Therefore, he became a leader of a military unit in the imperial guard and has already known about sending money to my home!"

Through several generations' efforts, Zhou family finally got their return in Old Zhou's next generation. People could not easily

enter the Humans Rune Instruments Craftsman Union Headquarters and the imperial guard of Xuanyuan Hill in other places.

"According to you, those families whose real estates have been taken back must suffer a great loss..."

"Hehehe, regulations are made by humans. How could living people be suffocated by urine? Childe Cui, as you've just been to Xuanyuan Hill, you might not know that. You can inquire about it casually. Whose real estates in Xuanyuan Hill have been taken back over the past hundreds of years?" Old Zhou smirked...

Chapter 1108: Working out a Scheme

"It's easy. If a family doesn't have descendants, they could adopt a son from their same clan. If they don't have clansman, a lot of outsiders would like to be their adopted sons. It's a major event to keep the family line alive. Those who don't have sons could adopt a son and rename the surname of their adopted son before registering his name in their own pedigree of a clan. Anyone who dared interfere with it would offend the public. After the old man passed away, their adopted son would inherit their real estates in Xuanyuan Hill. Who would spit out the flesh that they have taken in like an idiot?"

"Take that Lame Liu in my neighborhood as an instance. Because he was injured in his childhood, he couldn't deliver babies. Neither could he get married. Liu's relatives arrived here from Zhongzhou Province so as to send their own kids to Lame Liu as his adopted son. Liu's clansmen almost started a battle due to this thing. Finally, Lame Liu selected a niece as his adopted son. The niece treated Lame Liu even better than his father who gave birth to him. In this way, Lame Liu doesn't need to worry about his old age and funeral affairs. "

"If so, many families could have outsiders settle in Xuanyuan Hill in the name of their adopted son or stepson. Wouldn't those adopted sons and stepsons enjoy many treatments and opportunities in Xuanyuan Hill?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"It was indeed like this hundreds of years ago. I was told that many families had adopted sons and stepsons in a period previously. Some families would even have 10-20 adopted sons and stepsons. Actually, the so-called adopted sons and stepsons are just kids of their brothers, sisters or relatives. Gradually, the schools in Xuanyuan Hill become crowded. Later on, the imperial court had to deliver a strict command that the stepchildren of people who had descendants were forbidden to register in Xuanyuan Hill, male

or female. Those who had no descendant could only adopt one child. As a result, the bad atmosphere of the society was improved from then on!"

After hearing Old Zhou's words, Zhang Tie became happy, "Hahaha, I've not imagined such a funny thing in Xuanyuan Hill!"

"Yup, in the beginning, there wasn't any forbidden command; therefore, they all availed themselves of loopholes. As all the others behave in such a way, if you don't, aren't you a fool? If some relatives who are on speaking terms with you and beg you to take their sons as your stepsons, who could refuse it?"

After hearing Old Zhou's words, Zhang Tie became dumbfounded. Indeed, it was not because others were too cunning. Everybody pursued wealth. Now that there was a method to have their kids register in Xuanyuan Hill and enjoy the top educational resources, opportunities and treatments among humans, those who had relationships would definitely try their utmost efforts to seek for such an opportunity.

However, the forbidden command delivered from Xuanyuan Hill could only block half of this loophole; it didn't work for those families which didn't have descendants. They could only allow those families without descendants to adopt sons because it was the tradition and custom of Hua people. Therefore, the land in Xuanyuan Hill became increasingly precious. Fewer of them could be taken back. Besides some flexible lands in Xuanyuan Hill which were in the hand of the imperial households of Taixia Country, it would be very difficult for others to cram into the circle of Xuanyuan Hill. As a result, the threshold for settling in Xuanyuan Hill gradually rose.

'Even though I've made a lot of military exploits in the Earth-elements Realm, I could only gain a bounty territory outside Xuanyuan Hill. It would be more difficult for others to settle in Xuanyuan Hill. No wonder Bai Suxian said that there were only two kinds of nobles in Taixia Country: first, those who could

wedge their way in Xuanyuan Hill; second, those who are outside Xuanyuan Hill. Her words sounded a bit reasonable.'

Zhang Tie pointed at a gaily-painting pleasure-ship crossing the river as he asked, "What are those gaily-painting pleasure-ships? Are they also flowing brothels in Xuanyuan Hill?"

"Hehehe, such a profession is forbidden to go ashore in Taixia Country. It's a regulation that has lasted for hundreds of years as a feature of Xuanyuan Hill. These gaily-painting pleasure-ships could enter the Golden Water River of Xuanyuan Hill in the daytime; in the evening, they would enter the surrounding three lakes. Childe Cui, although these gaily-painting pleasure-ships look small, they could make a lot. Those gaily-painting pleasure-ships with famous prostitutes could make mountains of golds a day. Those who visited those gaily-painting pleasure-ships are all nobles and rich people, who would treat gold coins as nothing but sh*t. Those who could do such a business in Xuanyuan Hill are all related to big figures in the emperor's imperial city more or less. Without such a background, such gaily-painting pleasure-ships are forbidden to enter the Golden Water River..."

"Does anyone participate in such a business in the emperor's imperial city?"

"Those who could settle in Xuanyuan Hill are all followed by a lot of family members, subordinates and clansmen, whether they are the top 3 chancellors or the 9 ministers in Taixia Country. These people have to live at a high cost in Xuanyuan Hill. If a clan wants to maintain its decent life, it has to establish relationships with influential figures. Even though a person could have a compensation of tens of thousands' kilograms of gold coins a year, tens of thousands of people might be waiting for that. Although the dissolute business in gaily-painting pleasure-ships doesn't sound good, it's also a legal business at least with a high profit. By the way, they could collect a lot of intelligence. Of course, those decent families in the emperor's imperial city don't need their

family members to do such a business. They only need to have a trusted steward find an agency to do it, which would bring them a great amount of money each year. Then, why not?"

When Old Zhou said that, he glanced at Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian for a few more times while revealing a steadfast smile, "According to Childe Cui, Childe Cui should not pay attention to money in daily life. If you two are juveniles, it's normal for you to not know about the expenditure at home. However, given the looks of Childe Cui and Miss Bai along with your demeanors, you must have seen the world and could treat heavy winds and waves as unimportant. Those who have seen the world and known the universal laws must be born in rich and noble clans. You must pretend to be low-key today. Given your background, I dare say that you two at least come from provincial governors' clans!"

'I've not imagined that a boatman on the Golden Water River could have such an insight.'

After promoting to a knight; especially after plundering the wealth of those clans of Three-eye Association, Zhang Tie indeed didn't care about money anymore. Money was merely a worldly possession for Zhang Tie. Besides, Zhang family's business of the all-purpose medicament was pretty hot due to monopoly, which would create mint of money for Zhang family every day. Neither Zhang Tie nor his clan lacked money. Additionally, Zhang Tie and his elder brother didn't have too many descendants in Jinwu City. Although only a few clans had knights across Taixia Country, very few of them lacked money. In order to make money, Huaiyuan Palace also had a lot of clan businesses. Similarly, Zhu Clan, the clan of the Yanzhou provincial governor also had a lot of clan businesses.

However, there was one point that Old Zhou had not imagined or could not imagine based on his former insight. Besides making money, major clans had one more important purpose by doing business or involving in an industry——expanding their influence!

Even those clans which didn't lack money were still doing various businesses and involving in many industries, such as Zhang Yang. For what? For those besides money! The so-called major clans were definitely not only rich; they should also be influential. Even they had mountains of gold coins in the warehouse, they couldn't gain influence. They were just a pile of metals. After investing them in various industries and using them to bind more people's interests and deepen into people's daily needs, they would gain a strong influence and controlling force.

Influence was what the major clans paid special attention to.

Whether a clan was doing business for money or for expanding its influence was the most important criteria for judging a clan's power. The significance of this criterion was nothing less than testing whether a major clan had a deep foundation in Xuanyuan Hill. The second sort of clan might do something beyond their means in order to be impressive; however, the first sort of clan must be powerful. At least in Zhang Tie's opinion, Zhang family was not doing business for money anymore. When they made enough money, money would be meaningless for them. All of their businesses would work for higher clan purposes. For instance, those major clans and syndicates in the Western Continent and the other subcontinent started to control public opinion, military-industrial complexes and grains circulation. They were definitely not doing that for money. Emperor Xuanyuan didn't establish Gold and Power Law for money, either.

Although the gaily-painting pleasure-ships looked like dissolute, they served as recreational sites. From there, people could disseminate and ask for information as well as establish relationships with people from all walks of life. To a certain extent, these gaily-painting pleasure-ships could influence the cultural and recreational circle in Xuanyuan Hill and create some public opinion and specific pop culture among some high-end population. The latter effects might be pursued by these major clans in the

emperor's imperial city who controlled these gaily-painting pleasure-ships. Even if these gaily-painting pleasure-ships' real boss was the Supreme Court of Taixia Country, Zhang Tie would not feel strange about that, not to mention that they were major clans in the emperor's imperial city.

The small gaily-painting pleasure-ships and Old Zhou's words reminded Zhang Tie of many things. Zhang Tie's heart raced as he suddenly took out a gold coin. After pinching it slightly, Zhang Tie tossed it towards Old Zhou.

"Old Zhou, catch it!"

After catching that gold coin proficiently, Old Zhou grinned, "Childe Cui, you can pay me when we go ashore!"

"Hahaha, I like you. We can be friends with each other. If you want to make money, you or one of your sons could come to Fire Dragon Bounty Territory in Youzhou Province 3 months later. By then, I promise your Zhou Clan a unique business on the Golden Water River and let you enjoy the feeling of having a mint of money one day too. You can also be a rich man in Xuanyuan Hill by then..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter.

Old Zhou lowered his head and saw a deep fingerprint on the gold coin, which must be left by Zhang Tie.

Old Zhou then took a deep breath as he thought, 'The good fortune of Zhou Clan is finally coming; no wonder I always dreamed about catching a fierce fire at home these nights. It's the lucky omen of a prosperous clan.'

Additionally, given Zhang Tie's look, Old Zhou realized that Zhang Tie was not having shot from the hip. Although Old Zhou couldn't guess about the unique business mentioned by Zhang Tie, he was clear that it was just a lip service for someone to reward a good fortune to Zhou Clan.

Old Zhou meticulously put away that gold coin as he treated

Zhang Tie more respectfully, "Childe Cui, Miss Bai; if you like, after going ashore, I invite you two to have a meal at my home. I will have my wife prepare some dishes and spirit for you!"

"Haha, Old Zhou, you're too polite. If you really want to appreciate me, when you really do that unique business well in the future, I will feel reassured by having food and drinks at your home for free..."

Old Zhou revealed another smile on his swarthy face as he had long noticed that Zhang Tie was not a commoner. However, he didn't imagine that Zhang Tie could treat him so politely as he was just a trivial figure.

At this moment, Bai Suxian had prepared well the peach flower spirit as she served Zhang Tie the spirit with a big smile.

"What unique business have you thought about on the Golden Water River?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie in a secret way.

Bai Suxian knew that Zhang Tie would not make fun of a commoner. However, she wondered why Zhang Tie would introduce a unique business to a common boatman.

"Haha, you will know that!" Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian after having a sip of her peach flower spirit.

Zhang Tie indeed thought up this business after hearing Old Zhou's words about the gaily-painting pleasure-ships.

'Now that others could do business on the Golden Water River of Xuanyuan Hill, I could also have one. After Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory produced the high-power alcohol and various engines, would it be difficult for Old Zhou to find a unique business on the Golden Water River? As long as Old Zhou's boat could be installed with an engine and a propeller, it would be a speedboat.'

When Zhang Tie thought about Old Zhou driving his speedboat on the Golden Water River of Xuanyuan Hill, leaving a white line behind it, he couldn't stand to giggle inside.

This might be the best advertisement for Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory!

Peach flower spirit was a local specialty of Xuanyuan Hill. This spirit tasted soft, sweet, fragrant and glutinous. People used peach flowers from Xuanyuan Hill to brew spirit. The spirit looked rosy and smelt as fragrant as that of peach flowers. In Xuanyuan Hill, many families would pick peach flowers in their own houses to brew spirit. After coming to Xuanyuan Hill, peach flower spirit almost became one of the necessary "tourism projects" on the Golden Water River. According to the legends, if the beloved ones could have a cup of peach flower spirit face-to-face on the Golden Water River, they would be able to have a mutual affinity and never leave each other.

This explained why Bai Suxian made her utmost efforts to make the peach flower spirit at the prow. Indirectly, it explained why the Golden Water River was one of the most romantic places in Xuanyuan Hill. Besides those dissolute gaily-painting pleasure-ships, couples and lovers could be seen on other cruises and boats everywhere across the river.

While standing at the prow and drinking peach flower spirit with Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian blushed as beautifully as a fairy. As a result, Zhang Tie couldn't stand to glance at her for a few more times.

"Childe Cui, Miss Bai, the bridge in front of us is the Horse Bridge..." Old Zhou's voice drifted from the back.

Actually, Zhang Tie had already seen it without the warning of Old Zhou. A steel bridge crossed the Golden Water River thousands of meters in the front.

The bridge was very magnificent. The arches below the bridge were even available for ten-thousand tons' huge ships. On the side which was close to the emperor's imperial city, there was a wharf which was covered with many steamers with special banners.

After entering the arch on the outer flank of Xuanyuan Hill,

Zhang Tie saw a gate tower like the arch of triumph. There was a shiny statue of a golden horse at the highest point of the city gate under the sunshine. The entire bridge guarded an entrance of the emperor's imperial city in the periphery of Xuanyuan Hill.

The 12 bridges over the Golden Water River were named by the 12 earthly branches in Hua culture, which corresponded to 12 Hua Zodiac. Each bridge had the corresponding totem and statue of one of the 12 Chinese Zodiac. Gradually, commoners in Xuanyuan Hill called these bridges Hua Zodiac bridges.

Watching the Horse Bridge in the distance, Zhang Tie was recalling the map of Xuanyuan Hill.

After passing the Horse Bridge, as long as he kept walking forward, he would enter the Horse Avenue of emperor's imperial city. After entering the Horse Avenue for about 20 miles, he would see the mansion of the finance minister, one of the 9 ministers in Taixia Country.

All the 9 ministers of Taixia Country had fixed official residences in the emperor's imperial city. The official residence of the finance minister was close to the Finance Minister's Mansion, right on the side of Horse Avenue.

Zhang Tie unconsciously felt that the 12 official residences of the top 3 chancellors and the 9 ministers of Taixia Country corresponded to the avenues in the emperor's imperial city which were linked with the 12 Hua Zodiac bridges.

Watching the Horse Bridge in the distance and the flock of sparrows that were flying over the bridge, Zhang Tie's eyes sparkled...

Xuanyuan Hill had most kinds of birds across Taixia Country. In the three surrounding lakes, there were over 100 kinds of aquatic birds. Additionally, in Xuanyuan Hill, sparrows and pigeons accounted for the most. The willows made pleasant shades alongside the Golden Water River. This place was the favorite

place of sparrows. The pigeons mainly gathered in some squares and parks. After living there for a long time, those sparrows were not afraid of people at all...

The boat drove towards the Horse Bridge. When it was less than half a miles away from the Horse Bridge, an extremely brilliant gaily-painting pleasure-ship moved towards them and brushed against their boat with a distance of 100 m in between.

Some young male and female were talking about something on the open delicate deck of the gaily-painting pleasure-ship.

Zhang Tie didn't pay attention to those people. Because there were too many such gaily-painting pleasure-ships on the Golden Water River, Zhang Tie just threw a glance at that gaily-painting pleasure-ship before moving his eyes away onto the scenery on the riverside close to the emperor's imperial city. However, Zhang Tie had not imagined that Bai Suxian immediately became icy all over like a hedgehog with standing spines at the sight of those people.

"Fang Xinyi..."

Those young men almost caught sight of Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie at the same time as they stopped talking and watched this boat at once.

Chapter 1109: Women

It was as normal as encountering a lot of rural nouveau riche in high-end consuming places in the downtown. Besides Lion Fortress, Xuanyuan Hill must rank top with the most number of knights among human cities on the earth surface.

Knights had sharp senses about the qis of each other. Almost the moment Bai Suxian recognized her "good ladybro" on that gaily-painting pleasure-ship, that young female over there also discovered Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie at the same time.

Standing on the prow of the boat, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian looked pretty elegant and dignified with clothes swaying in the air. One was a woman of a woman, the other was a man of a man. They were definitely like an immortal couple.

There were 4 young men and 3 young women on the deck of that gaily-painting pleasure-ship. Besides the woman who hugged a lute in the middle of them, all the other 6 ones were black iron knights at a young age with outstanding looks.

When Zhang Tie was watching those women on the gaily-painting pleasure-ship and guessing who was Fang Xinyi, Bai Suxian had already flown off the boat with beserk battle qi like an aggressive hen. She directly charged towards that gaily-painting pleasure-ship by stepping on the water.

Besides sage-level ones, common knights could not fly here. However, their battle strengths remained unchanged. It was already something for her to step on the water.

'What a beauty!' Zhang Tie could never imagine that Bai Suxian dared fight another woman on the Golden Water River close to the emperor's imperial city.

However, someone knew Bai Suxian's character better than Zhang Tie. When Bai Suxian flew off, another figure also flew off

the gaily-painting pleasure-ship and also rushed towards Bai Suxian on the water.

"Boom..."

The two women jumped into the sky and collided against each other. At the same time, the berserk battle qis caused a wave higher than 30 m like detonating an alchemist's bomb. When the wave fell down, it started to spread over, driving the calm water level berserk at once.

Watching this, exclamations drifted from all the cruises and boats in the far.

The first 2-m high wave hit the opposite gaily-painting pleasure-ship and Zhang Tie's boat almost at the same time.

As a result, the gaily-painting pleasure-ship as long as dozens of meters started to rock heavily in the water. The youths on the deck of the gaily-painting pleasure-ship used their strength by foot at the same time and stabilized the ship. At the sight of this, the female who was hugging a lute became scared too much.

When the wave arrived at Zhang Tie's boat, Old Zhou changed his face at once. Before Old Zhou made a response, Zhang Tie had stepped onto the deck at the prow, causing a white wave to rise from below and cupped the boat to over 4-m high in the air in the shape of a water lotus flower like a huge hand, avoiding the first wave steadily and safely.

At the sight of such an amazing scene, more exclamations drifted from the boats and gaily-painting pleasure-ships in the distance in unison. Someone faintly shouted, "Arhh, the water god is manifesting his power!"

Such a scene also made Old Zhou's face turn pale. However, he still tried his best to stabilize the boat at the stern while holding his paddle.

The nearest boat was over 300 m away from Zhang Tie's boat.

Within 100 m, there was only one cruise and a gaily-painting pleasure-ship. The two ships were both huge. Therefore, the two ships were not capsized although they rocked heavily on the river and caused passengers to become flurried. As for that boat in the distance, when the first wave arrived, its height and power had declined greatly. Additionally, the boatman directly turned his boat and used the stern to bear the first wave. Besides making the inside of the boat wet, the surging wave pushed that boat over 100 m away.

Before Bai Suxian and that figure who flew off the gaily-painting pleasure-ship started the second round of the fight, a roar had drifted over here from the Horse Bridge, "Who dared be that excessive on the Golden Water River?"

With that roar, a fully-armored knight jumped off the Horse Bridge and darted towards them like a lightning bolt on the river.

When the male knight arrived, he directly stood on the water as he looked at Bai Suxian and the other woman, those knights on that gaily-painting pleasure-ship and Zhang Tie on the prow one after another. When he caught sight of Zhang Tie whose boat was cupped by a ripple, he slightly narrowed his eyes.

"Did you two fight here just now?" That male knight asked Bai Suxian and the other woman.

The two women replied with a cold harrumph at the same time as they turned around and ignored the knight's question.

"F*ck..." The earth knight was driven mad. He looked at Bai Suxian and the other woman before losing his temper on everybody at present, "All of you, all the knights here follow me for the investigation. If anyone of you dares to oppose me, I will kill you..."

After delivering this command, the earth knight even threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie. Among all the knights at present, Zhang Tie was the most unfathomable. Expert's movements were always

outstanding. Although the other earth knights might also be able to cup the boat by water using the battle qi, he could never do it as easily as Zhang Tie. Besides posing a high requirement on the power of his battle qi, this effect also required an extremely great controlling ability of water flow.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that his trip to the Golden Water River could come to an end in this way. However, what happened this time reminded Zhang Tie of the nature of women. If Bai Suxian and that woman were just commoners instead of knights, Zhang Tie believed that the two people must have started to scratch faces and stretch hair.

After throwing a glance at that woman carefully, Zhang Tie had known her identity without Bai Suxian's introduction.

Honestly, given her look, Fang Xinyi was not that kind of top beauties which would attract men's attention for the first time. She was just as beautiful as Bai Suxian. However, this woman looked even whiter than Bai Suxian like milk. Additionally, this woman had a very special temperament. She was tender, cold and brilliant. At the sight of her, Zhang Tie felt that a delicate and charming rose was lying on a layer of frost tenderly and felt like pitying her.

No wonder Bai Suxian's dad was fascinated by her. Such a special temperament was especially attractive to old men. Even Zhang Tie's heart raced.

When Zhang Tie looked at Fang Xinyi, Fang Xinyi also looked at him. They then exchanged a glance with each other.

After Bai Suxian noticed that Fang Xinyi was glancing at Zhang Tie, she became intense at once as she hurriedly moved and blocked Fang Xinyi's sight in case that Zhang Tie was robbed away from her.

Fang Xinyi turned her head once again.

Another two knights came over here on water and surrounded them with solemn looks while putting their hands on the handles of their swords at their waists. Although the other guys on the gaily-painting pleasure-ship felt unwilling to do that, they could only tell the boatman to turn the ship towards the wharf beside the Horse Bridge.

"Old Zhou, thanks for your ride. Please carry us over there too. Bear my words in mind. If you want to have a try, you can find me in the Fire-Dragon Prefecture in Youzhou Province!" Zhang Tie told Old Zhou as he hid his battle qi, causing the boat to steadily decline while being cupped by the ripple.

Bai Suxian returned to the boat by stepping on water. After that, she watched Fang Xinyi going back to the gaily-painting pleasure-ship with fierce eyes as she swore her in a low voice, "B*tch!"

...

In the gate tower at the bridgehead of the Horse Bridge, Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and those knights on that gaily-painting pleasure-ship were respectively brought into different rooms for the time being. Even Old Zhou and some irrelevant personnel on the gaily-painting pleasure-ship were requested to write a testimony.

After glancing around the equipment in the room which common black iron knights could not escape from, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, 'Looks like I'm not the first visitor here.'

"Ahh, who are those guys on the Horse Bridge?"

"They are earthly branch guard under the affiliation of Recreational Affairs Ministry, also known as Hua Zodiac Guard. They're responsible for guarding the 12 bridges and the portals of the emperor's imperial city on the Golden Water River!" Bai Suxian threw a glance at Zhang Tie in an embarrassed way as she said, "Forgive me for that. At the sight of that foxtrel, I wanted to kill her..."

"It's alright. Everybody gets impulsive at some moments. We will just rest here..." Zhang Tie waved his hand generously as he added, "It's fine as long as you don't suffer a loss!"

Bai Suxian revealed a sweet smile directly...

...

The fact proved that women, especially beautiful women with deep background would always receive some special treatment in this male-dominated world.

One woman was the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion; the other was an excellent disciple of Qionglou Pavilion, one of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country. In this situation, after confirming that there was no severe outcome, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were only requested to stay there for a few hours. After being warned, they had been set free.

All the knights besides the two women had been implicated and imprisoned for a few hours.

According to the regulation, if knights had a fight and broke the peace in Xuanyuan Hill, they would be imprisoned for 3 months at least or be killed on the spot.

Therefore, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were almost not punished.

When they walked out of the gate tower at the bridgehead of Horse Bridge, it was already dark. Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian met Fang Xinyi outside the gate tower once again.

When Fang Xinyi and Bai Suxian caught sight of each other, they uttered a cold harrumph in unison before turning around their heads.

Fang Xinyi was related to her father Lord Guangnan; therefore, Bai Suxian regarded it a family scandal and preferred to keep it a secret. As for Fang Xinyi, no matter what the relationship was between her and Lord Guangnan, it seemed that she didn't want to reveal it to the public either. Therefore, the outsiders were still

confused about their fight until now.

Those young knights staying with Fang Xinyi didn't feel good. When they were enjoying the lute music on the Golden Water River and commenting on the current political affairs. All of a sudden, a woman rushed towards them like a maniac. If not Fang Xinyi stopped her timely, their gaily-painting pleasure-ship might have been capsized by that lunatic. If so, it would be a bit embarrassing.

Compared to their face, the gaily-painting pleasure-ship became trivial. As "victims", they were even imprisoned for a few hours in the cells especially for knights by the Horse Guard under the affiliation of Recreational Affairs Ministry in Xuanyuan Hill and were not set free until evening. Therefore, everybody lost their interest in this place.

At the sight of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian once again, a domineering and evil guy among those furious young knights sneered at once.

"Princess of Lord Guangnan, you are really domineering. You dared even start a fight on the Golden Water River. However, this is not Xuanyuan Hill; instead of remote places such as Zhaozhou Province. A lord's mansion is nothing here. If Lord Guangnan's Mansion wants to make a show of authority, why not exterminate the barbarians in the south border of Taixia Country and establish another military region in the southern border? Why do you show off your battle strength in such a prosperous place?"

After hearing that, Fang Xinyi looked distant while Bai Suxian raised her eyebrows and was going to lose her temper once again. However, Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he shook his head and pulled Bai Suxian away.

No matter what, Bai Suxian started the fight; therefore, she was wrong. It was reasonable for those who suffered losses to complain about that. Therefore, Zhang Tie just pretended to not have heard

that.

As Zhang Tie didn't care about that, Bai Suxian became silent as she threw a glare at that male knight before following Zhang Tie away.

When Fang Xinyi watched Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian walking away, her eyes gleamed at once. As Bai Suxian's former ladybro, nobody knew Bai Suxian's temperament better than her. Since she acquainted with Bai Suxian, it was her first time to see Bai Suxian becoming so well-behaved in front of a male.

Zhang Tie was very merciful; however, he forgot that one's mercy was usually regarded as being afraid of troubles and timid.

In Xuanyuan Hill, many things could not be handled by even an earth knight.

"I've long heard that the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion is pretty beautiful; it seems real. With one earth knight on your side, you don't even respect the top 7 sects in Taixia Country..." Another voice sounded.

After hearing these words, Zhang Tie suddenly stopped...

Chapter 1110: Losing Life by One Sentence

Everyone had his or her own story.

As a mature knight who had seen the world, Zhang Tie also had his own story.

So did Bai Suxian. Zhang Tie's story started from Blackhot City; Bai Suxian's story started from Lord Guangnan's Mansion. Before gaining Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie's story was always very insipid. As for Bai Suxian who was born in a major clan with an excellent talent and look, her story was always splendid since the beginning, including her life experience, emotional experience and those unspoken love affairs.

All the young boys and girls were amorous.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian both had romantic experiences. If not have witnessed too many countries' perdition and separation between family members, an earth knight at his 30s might still be in "romance".

In that age, it was normal what happened to Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian.

When in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie had dissolute experiences with girls of Rose Association. As a princess, of course, Bai Suxian was not that dissolute. Since young, Bai Suxian was always surrounded by a lot of fervent pursuers. Bai Suxian might have encountered someone whom she would like to pay everything for.

Since Miss Daina left him, Zhang Tie had realized that people could barely pursue perfection in the world, not to mention keeping all the good things or have all the women in the world accost him. Each beauty was just a piece of white paper, who was waiting for a man to make her life colorful.

It was far-stretched, also the daydreams of many horny boys.

With this mature mentality, Zhang Tie became more

comprehensive about Bai Suxian.

Since they fixed their love affair, Bai Suxian had been avoiding talking about her past experiences in front of Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie didn't pump it either; Bai Suxian didn't talk about it in case of dissatisfying Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie also tried his best to care about Bai Suxian's privacy and self-esteem.

The privacy and self-esteem were finally unveiled by someone ruthlessly in front of Zhang Tie today.

After hearing the words behind her, Bai Suxian's face instantly turned pale. Closely after that, she threw a look at Zhang Tie stealthily out of concern.

Zhang Tie suddenly felt that Bai Suxian's hands were quivering for the first time. Bai Suxian's worried look made Zhang Tie's heart aching. 'Since our love affair was fixed, it's her first time to be so unconfident.'

Zhang Tie stopped his footsteps at once as he turned around.

"Let's go..." Bai Suxian who had always been mighty suddenly became weak. She wanted to pull Zhang Tie away; however, Zhang Tie remained unchanged.

With an icy look, Zhang Tie glanced around the 4 male knights beside Fang Xinyi and a female knight who just glanced around Fang Xinyi, Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie with a compelled look.

Zhang Tie was not interested in acquainting with these people since the beginning. Therefore, he didn't even ask their names.

All the knights on the other side had sensed the invisible stress in Zhang Tie's icy eyes. As a result, their disdainful, arrogant and scornful facial expressions gradually became frozen.

"Who said that?" Zhang Tie asked. Meanwhile, he pinched Bai Suxian's hand, letting her calm down.

"It's me. So what?" A handsome male knight with thin lips and a

bit slim eyes in a senior jade waistband and a sapphire bow-silk long gown raised his head and strode out of the team of Fang Xinyi. At the same time, he twitched his facial muscles like being stretched by an invisible line, revealing an arrogant smile towards Zhang Tie. With a sound of "Shhua", he unfolded a fan and waved it in a handsome way, "An earth knight might be domineering in other places; however, in Xuanyuan Hill, this bit of foundation is not enough. So many provincial governors and Cheji generals in Taixia Country are behaving in a low-key manner; not to mention a common earth knight. Xuanyuan Hill is very sophisticated. Besides sage-level ones, dozens of earth knight have been killed in Xuanyuan Hill in the late 100 years. Hehe, another one might lose his life soon. If it's your first time to visit Xuanyuan Hill, I suggest you to not treat this place as your private territory. Mind your own business. It's not worthy for you to do that for a woman!"

Zhang Tie didn't lose his temper; instead, he revealed a smile, "I almost forgot about it. May I know your name?"

"I'm Yue Peng, a trivial person in Heavens Holding Pavilion!" That man replied in an arrogant look as he waved his small fan more pleasantly.

"You're indeed a trivial person. More than that, you're a timid person. You're not even a man!" Zhang Tie abruptly sneered as he watched that knight of Heavens Holding Pavilion who was waving his fan with a disdainful look, "I just asked your name instead of your sect. Why did you tell me about your sect? Whether do you feel that you're not brave to stand out if not tell me about your sect? Besides your sect, what else do you have? Why not tell me about the names of your dad and your mom or anyone great that you know? Even an ambitious 7-year old kid might feel embarrassed by using this trick before a fight, I've not imagined that a male, good-looking knight like you is just as timid as a rabbit. You're wasting this father's saliva..."

Zhang Tie directly spat a mouth of saliva onto the ground.

Closely after that, he turned around and pulled Bai Suxian away. At the same time, he shook his head and told her, "Forgot about him, let's go. I thought that it was a blind guy who scorned behind me; I wanted to teach him a lesson for you; it turns out that he's just a worthless guy. He's just a toad that jumped onto your instep. He wants to bite you; however, he's not brave enough to do that. Neither will he be able to do that. The moment he uttered, he would make you feel very disgusted. If you beat him, when he dropped his snot and tears and rolled over the ground or complained that you were bullying him in front of his parents and grandparents, you would be sick to death. Although he's shameless, this Old Cui has to care about my reputation. If I fought him, I could barely explain it to my friends as long as they asked me about that. After stepping onto a toad, you would feel being smelly all over. Additionally, your shoes would be polluted. You could only treat him as a fart..."

"Hmm..." Bai Suxian responded to him in a low voice. Although she wanted to persuade Zhang Tie to leave as soon as possible, she was still moved by him when she found that Zhang Tie would like to fight for her.

At this moment, due to anxiety, Bai Suxian felt a bit muddle-headed. She didn't even notice that Zhang Tie was more talkative today.

"As the old saying goes; things of a kind come together, people of a mind fall into the same group. Stay far away from these people. If you want to judge one's worldview, look at his enemy. This kind of person only knows about spurting out sh*t and crying in front of his parents. He's just a clown among knights. He could not even match the thugs on the streets and nouveau riches. Stay away from him. Otherwise, our identities would be declined by him. It's too disgraceful. Don't expose what happened today to the public. If Uncle Zhong asks you about that, just tell him that we've traveled on the Golden Water River for one day..."

Zhang Tie didn't speak to Bai Suxian in a secret way. Even some commoners had heard his words clearly, not to mention the 6 knights behind them.

In a split second, even the other knights had turned pale, not to mention Yue Peng who scorned Zhang Tie just now.

The sentence "Things of a kind come together, people of a mind fall into the same group" was too destructive. Additionally, Zhang Tie's reason could really not be easily refuted.

He only needed to tell Zhang Tie his name; why did he tell Zhang Tie about his sect? Evidently, he was lacking confidence. Was Heavens Holding Pavilion something? Wasn't all the people at present members of the top 7 sects?

Although the others on Yue Peng's side didn't say anything, they looked at Yue Peng out of dissatisfaction.

If Yue Peng knew how Zhang Tie grew up and how talkative he was, he would think twice before saying that in case of the possible trouble. Soon after his words, Zhang Tie had caught his loophole and sent him into the hell.

Watching the backs of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian and sensing the "special eye light" of his partners, Yue Peng's face blushed and finally turned green. He pinched his fan forcefully and turned it into powders.

"Stop..." Yue Peng shouted with bloody eyes.

Zhang Tie pulled Bai Suxian's hand and just walked away without even turning around.

Everyone saw Zhang Tie's deep, disdainful attitude from his back.

Only after such a short while, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian had been 50 m away.

"Stop!" Yue Peng roared as he punched towards Zhang Tie's back

with his battle qi...

Chapter 1111: The Difference

When Yue Peng punched towards Zhang Tie's back, Fang Xinyi and all the others on his side felt it was improper. However, it was too late for them to stop him.

With Bai Suxian's exclamation, "watch out", Yue Peng punched towards Zhang Tie's back, breaking Zhang Tie's clothes into pieces. However, Zhang Tie remained unchanged. Closely after that, Zhang Tie turned around with a faint shrill sneer...

In the next second, Zhang Tie abruptly disappeared. Before Yue Peng responded to it, Zhang Tie had forcefully slapped Yue Peng's face, causing the latter to spurt out a mouthful of blood and broken teeth.

Zhang Tie's hand was very powerful; additionally, he stroked back too fast. Even Yue Peng's partners had not seen how Zhang Tie suddenly appeared on Yue Peng's side from dozens of meters away. They were all stunned. Additionally, Yue Peng had not thought about the outcome of his punch out of fury. When Zhang Tie appeared on his side, he had not even released his protective battle qi yet.

Zhang Tie directly made this knight of Heavens Holding Pavilion confused. Zhang Tie directly sent Yue Peng to fly off.

However, before he flew off, Zhang Tie grabbed his ankle. Closely after that, Zhang Tie forcefully lifted him up and was going to crash him onto the ground as if he was a hammer.

At this moment, those knights on Yue Peng's side finally realized what happened. They changed their faces at once. Given the strength of Zhang Tie's slap, Yue Peng would definitely be severely wounded if he were crashed onto the ground.

"Stop!" The youth who mocked Bai Suxian at the beginning punched towards Zhang Tie, followed by all the other 4 knights.

In a split second, Zhang Tie waved his punch to block all the 5 knights' strike at the same time.

The moment the 5 knights touched Zhang Tie's punch, they immediately felt that they were covered by the strict and mighty punch intention of a domineering iron punch.

Previously, the 5 young knights just used 40% of their strength in case of Zhang Tie's safety; however, Zhang Tie's counterattack reversed the initiative. As a result, the 5 young knights changed their faces once again as they had to exert 80% of their efforts to respond to Zhang Tie's counterattack.

The 5 black iron knights' strike was defused by Zhang Tie easily. At the same time, he caught Yue Peng's hand and directly smashed him onto the ground ferociously.

With a "bang", the cyan-stone road outside the gate tower of Horse Bridge was shattered in a split second, causing a huge pit while broken stones flew in all directions. The 5 black iron knights were sent flying 20 m away so as to offset Zhang Tie's powerful punch.

As they were launching a close combat, they didn't mean to hurt the surrounding people. Only the huge pit left by Zhang Tie was a bit fearsome.

Yue Peng, who had been confused by Zhang Tie's slap uttered a miserable shriek due to extreme pain as he spurted out a mouthful of blood once again.

Even though Zhang Tie didn't exert his full strength, he still broke Yue Peng's arms and shins into 70-80 pieces; additionally, Yue Peng's guts were wounded; half of his ribs were broken. This strike could even match that of a cruel torture. Few people could bear it. He would not recover in 1 month if he did not take senior recovery medicament. It would take Yue Peng longer time to grow out his teeth once again even with the help of recovery medicament.

"Tsuang..." The 5 knights couldn't stand to pull out their weapons at the same time.

Watching them pulling out of their weapons, Zhang Tie sneered with an invisible berserk battle qi, "Dare you to fight me in Xuanyuan Hill? Aren't you afraid of being killed by me?"

Zhang Tie's smile made those knights' hearts froze immediately.

It happened so fast that everything had come to an end before Bai Suxian responded.

At this moment, Bai Suxian had jumped onto Zhang Tie's side with the brilliant longsword, the very silver secret item that Zhang Tie gifted her, in hand. Meanwhile, her beautiful eyes turned furious.

The moment the longsword appeared in Bai Suxian's hand, it had turned misty like trickles. The others immediately knew that it was an immortal item and must be very powerful. Given Bai Suxian's look, if she joined the battle, she would definitely exert her full strength.

"Wait...I will never let you go...my master will never let you go..." Yue Peng, who was severely wounded, shouted towards Zhang Tie with bloody eyes while lying on the ground as if he wanted to eat Zhang Tie alive.

"Don't talk about that until you could introduce yourself without mentioning Heavens Holding Pavilion!" Zhang Tie watched Yue Peng with a sneer as he lowered his head, "I will give you a small warning today. Bai Suxian is my woman. If I hear you talk about something that makes me unhappy, I promise you that you will definitely regret coming to this world. Remember, in this world, I'm the very one whom you could not offend for the rest of your life..."

"You..."

Before Yue Peng talked about something, Zhang Tie had already

raised his huge foot and stomped onto Yue Peng's face in an overwhelming way, causing Yue Peng's nose to collapse at once. His blood spurted out of Zhang Tie's foot.

Yue Peng passed out at once.

After grinding his face with his foot twice, Zhang Tie raised his foot.

This time, Yue Peng's whole face looked as colorful as a fried eggplant with soy sauce. Watching his poor look, the other knights felt their spines numb.

"Why are you so vicious?" Fang Xinyi watched Zhang Tie with an icy look.

After being forced to move back by Zhang Tie's punch, Fang Xinyi didn't pull out her weapon. She just watched Zhang Tie with an extremely calm look.

"Am I vicious?" Zhang Tie replied with a faint smile, "Don't forget that he provoked me and started the strike first. I was just defending myself. If he was a commoner, he would have long been killed by that punch. I've already shown my mercy to him given that we're all Hua knights and the holy war is coming!" After saying that, Zhang Tie directly looked at the gate tower of the Horse Bridge as he revealed a smile, "General, you must have seen what happened here. According to the law of Taixia Country, I'm legit, right?"

Since they were set free, Zhang Tie had noticed that the earth knight who had investigated them was watching them quietly on the gate tower. Not until Zhang Tie uttered did Fang Xinyi and the other guys find that one person was watching them on the gate tower being not far away from them.

"I've indeed seen what happened just now. This man attacked you first. It's legit for you to launch a counterattack!" The earth knight considered it twice before replying to Zhang Tie calmly.

"Put away your sword, let's go!" Zhang Tie patted Bai Suxian's back as he directly left with Bai Suxian.

After Zhang Tie left, that earth knight on the gate tower of Horse Bridge told Fang Xinyi and the other guys, "This guy has to stay here. As he attacked others on his own initiative in Xuanyuan Hill, he had violated the law of Xuanyuan Hill. If you don't want this guy to die here due to severe wounds. You'd better notice his master and elder to take him away!"

After saying that, some soldiers carried Yue Peng who was in a deep coma into the gate tower at the bridgehead of Horse Bridge.

Those knights, especially those male knights exchanged a glance with each other as they all looked frustrated. What happened today let all of them understand a truth——Common knights had better not show off their battle strength in Xuanyuan Hill.

Especially when they fought Zhang Tie at the same time just now. Zhang Tie gave them an overwhelming feeling and easily sent them flying away only with one punch. Such a great battle strength shocked those young knights too much.

After looking around the others' poor look, a young knight forced a bitter smile as he let out a sigh, "Alas, the master is right. Xuanyuan Hill indeed has a lot of powerhouses. I've not imagined that I could encounter such a terrifying earth knight here. He just used one hand to defuse the strikes of our 5 people at the same time. No wonder senior fellow apprentice Yue Peng couldn't resist that man's counterattack and got it all to come! What an earth knight! I'm afraid that we could not defeat him even if we form two 3-in-1 battle formations..."

"Don't get discouraged. Given that guy's battle strength, he's at least above 7-change realm!" The knight who mocked Zhang Tie at the beginning became slightly spirited, "I really don't know such a powerhouse among earth knights in Taixia Country!"

"What should we do now?"

"As we're Yue Peng's friends, we'd better tell Yue Peng's master about this event in the courtyard of Heavens Holding Pavilion!"

"Junior fellow apprentice Yue Peng was always stable and wise instead of being that impatient. How could he make such a mistake today?"

"Maybe junior fellow apprentice Yue Peng was a bit intense. After all, he was facing an earth knight. Therefore, he made an error in speaking. He told that man about his sect so as to warn him..."

After what happened today, everybody at present including Fang Xinyi had lost their interest in this place. They then left. So did those onlookers who came here to join the fun from afar after hearing the noise.

Nobody noticed that the earth knight just kept his eyes on Zhang Tie's back with a solemn look.

This earth knight touched a piece of senior alchemist's amulet on his chest inside his armor. He inherited it from his ancestor. Its function was to prevent the wearer from being influenced by most of the spiritual and soul secret methods and help him keep alert.

That amulet could protect its wearer; meanwhile, it could respond to the surrounding spiritual secret methods sharply. When Zhang Tie asked Yue Peng his name, this earth knight could evidently feel that his amulet slightly moved.

Closely after that, that knight from Heavens Holding Pavilion called Yue Peng directly told that earth knight about his sect. Then, Yue Peng was teased sharply.

After being stimulated too much, the knight of Heavens Holding Pavilion was finally instigated. He launched a punch towards that earth knight's back. However, with this opportunity, that earth knight directly crippled this knight of Heavens Holding Pavilion in a few seconds in front of everybody else, including the earth knight on the gate tower, leaving no loophole at all.

If that earth knight had already thought how to deal with the knight of Heavens Holding Pavilion in words since he turned around and used the secret spiritual method to have the knight of Heavens Holding Pavilion show his slip unconsciously, this guy must be very terrifying. He must have amazing scheming, battle strength and secret methods.

The earth knight on the gate tower reflected, 'If not this top-quality ancestral alchemist's amulet which warned me about that, I might not know what really happened until now.'

The knights of Recreational Affairs Ministry who guarded the emperor's imperial city of Xuanyuan Hill were not on the same channel with the knights of the top 7 sects of Taixia Country. To put it straight, among humans, besides the knights of the top 7 sects of Taixia Country who could be able to threaten the security and safety of the emperor's imperial city, all the other knights were dwarfed in front of powerhouses of the Recreational Affairs Ministry. Actually, the Recreational Affairs Ministry was founded to resist the powerhouses of the top 7 sects of Taixia Country. Out of this purpose, this earth knight of Horse Guard under the affiliation of the Recreational Affairs Ministry just enjoyed the show between Zhang Tie and the knight of Heavens Holding Pavilion silently just now.

After considering it for a short while, this earth knight waved his hand and fetched a subordinate knight. He whispered something to that knight, who nodded before leaving the gate tower...

In less than 2 hours, before Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian returned to the manor of Lord Guangnan's Mansion in Xuanyuan Hill, cracking sounds had drifted out of the courtyard of Heavens Holding Pavilion in Xuanyuan Hill...

At the same time, a file about Fire Dragon Hermit appeared on the table of the Recreational Affairs Ministry, one of the 9 ministries in Taixia Country silently.

When the file was hurriedly brought here by a knight of the Recreational Affairs Ministry in a sealed silver lot pot, the minister of Recreational Affairs Ministry, one of the 9 ministries of Taixia Country was drinking tea and chatting with a man in the Class I official uniform of Taixia Country who looked yellowish and dignified in a room while enjoying the moonlight.

The Class I official uniform was embroidered with a Pixiu, a mythical wild animal which was also called gold-eater. The animal was surrounded by propitious clouds, snow, rice, maize, wheat, millet and beans. Those who were familiar with the bureaucratic establishment of Taixia Country would know that he was the finance minister, one of the 9 ministers of Taixia Country.

Only after throwing a glance at that sealed secret lot pot sent by a trusted subordinate of the minister of the Recreational Affairs Ministry, the finance minister had stood up with a smile, "Brother Hanyuan. I will not bother you today. Many forces are converging in Xuanyuan Hill, the Recreational Affairs Ministry have great responsibilities. As Brother Hanyuan has public affairs to deal with, I will not waste your time. I have to go back to my mansion now!"

"Right, Brother Zhengfang, I hope you could pay special attention to that thing. As the overall situation is urgent, the knights under the affiliation of the Recreational Affairs Ministry have to shoulder heavy responsibilities. Additionally, we have to pay special attention to the safety of the emperor's imperial city. Therefore, silver secret items are in urgent demand. As the silver secret items in the imperial warehouses could not even be moved by the crown prince, we could have a chance to solve this problem in the Treasures Meeting of the Gold and Power Market!"

After hearing that, the finance minister replied with a solemn look, "Don't worry, Brother Hanyuan. As you and I are chancellors in the same imperial court, it's our responsibility to share the concerns of the country. I will definitely try must best to do that!"

"After hearing your promise, I feel more reassured! The more silver secret items we have, the better it would be."

Finally, the two Class I officials of Taixia Country bade a farewell to each other. After seeing off Hang Zhengfang out of this courtyard, the minister of the Recreational Affairs Ministry returned to his room.

The minister of the Recreational Affairs Ministry had a beautiful beard, slim and long eyebrows and two pupils in each eye, which looked pretty dignified.

After returning to his room, the minister of the Recreational Affairs Ministry sat on his chair with eyes closed for 2 minutes. After that, the minister threw a glance at a trusted subordinate who was standing in the room quietly before asking him calmly, "What's the matter?"

"The Horse Guard general sent here a secret file!"

"Ah, the case about Li Xiongtao?" The minister of the Recreational Affairs Ministry instantly became interested in it, "Give it to me!"

After taking that lot pot, the minister tore off the special seal and saw a small piece of the crystal inside it. After holding it and watching it for a few seconds, the minister's eyes gleamed. After a short while, he revealed a weird smile, "Ha, I've not imagined that there's such a figure! Interesting!"

Chapter 1112: The Long-Lost Fruit

3 hours later, when Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian returned to the manor of Lord Guangnan in Xuanyuan Hill, it was already dark...

They returned by an alcohol-driven taxi in Xuanyuan Hill. It was pretty prosperous with night lamplight outside the vehicle as if it was a city with gay nightlife. In the vehicle, Bai Suxian was in a low mood since she got on the vehicle. Watching the night scenery outside the vehicle, she might be thinking about something quietly.

Although Yue Peng had been ferociously beaten by Zhang Tie, the scar that he caused on Bai Suxian could not recover in a short period.

Zhang Tie knew women pretty well. Any woman needed to be quiet sometimes no matter how active she was; any woman would feel helpless no matter how firm she was. Therefore, he didn't say anything at this moment. Instead, he just let Bai Suxian lean against his shoulder quietly as he watched the heavy traffic on the road.

Bai Suxian might be thinking about her former emotional experiences.

By contrast, although Zhang Tie also watched the nightscape outside the vehicle, he was imagining about the scenery in the emperor's imperial city of Xuanyuan Hill.

During these days in Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie had received many bits of intelligence. He felt like a spider who was weaving a net silently in the dark. He was thinking about overthrowing the very person, who assumed one of the 9 ministers in Taixia Country, the master of Gold and Power Law and the founder of Heavens Reaching Church. It would be better if he could kill that b*stard so as to inflict a heavy loss to his force and the Gobbling Party at the same time.

With such a powerful opponent in heart, Zhang Tie had long forgotten about the trouble caused by the male knight of the Heavens Holding Pavilion.

In the past, if he offended a knight of the Heavens Holding Pavilion, it would be a major event which would make him sleepless overnight and lose his appetite. By contrast, it was just a small trouble for Zhang Tie. From the beginning, Zhang Tie had kept an eye on him. All of his movements were under Zhang Tie's control.

Perhaps, Zhang Tie had not realized that he was already different than before. He gradually had a domineering profound temperament which common knights would feel awe-stricken about. It was also possessed by many provincial governors and Cheji generals across Taixia Country. Without such a fierce and dignified temperament, how could an earth knight dominate a province of Taixia Country, order so many black iron knights and frighten so many earth knights?

When the vehicle arrived at the gate of the manor of Lord Guangnan's Mansion in Xuanyuan Hill where some red lanterns were hanging in the nightscape, brightening up the surroundings of the gate. Zhang Tie tossed a gold coin towards the driver and told him to keep the changes. Closely after that, he opened the door and got off the vehicle with Bai Suxian.

Watching Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian coming back, some guards outside the gate hurriedly opened the gate and greeted them.

During the period when Zhang Tie was in this manor, all the people in this manor almost treated him as the would-be son-in-law of Lord Guangnan very respectfully.

Soon after the two people entered the gate, Uncle Zhong had come forward to greet them.

These days, with the effect of Zhang Tie's first prescription, Uncle Zhong felt pretty good as the toxicity of the broken-gold

witchcraft parasites inside his body was restricted for the first time. He didn't cough any more; additionally, his face blushed. He looked much better spiritually. Therefore, he started to be more confident about Zhang Tie's prescription.

At the sight of Bai Suxian's fatigued look and the big hole on Zhang Tie's back, Uncle Zhong was startled too much as he changed his face at once, "Ahh, Miss, Childe Cui, what happened?"

"Nothing. We met a blind b*stard. Uncle Zhong, do you know the residence of Heavens Holding Pavilion in Xuanyuan Hill?" Zhang Tie asked with a smile.

"Yes, I know!"

"Uncle Zhong, after a while, please have someone send this clothes to Heavens Holding Pavilion. Just have him tell them that it's from Fire Dragon Hermit!"

There was a huge hole in the back of Zhang Tie's clothes which was caused by Yue Peng's punch. Wise people would understand what happened at the sight of this hole. Actually, Zhang Tie intended to cause such a huge hole in the back of his clothes purposefully.

If a black iron knight dared attack an earth knight from his back on his own initiative, it was nothing different than seeking for death in any place, not to mention in Xuanyuan Hill. Sending his clothes to Heavens Holding Pavilion, Zhang Tie wanted to let them know that he had shown his mercy to Yue Peng today. Heavens Holding Pavilion had to accept this result whatsoever.

Although Heavens Holding Pavilion was something, they could never have a subordinate black iron knight bully an earth knight casually. Even the imperial households of Taixia Country could not do that, not to mention the Heavens Holding Pavilion. An earth knight could determine the fates of hundreds of millions of people in some subcontinents. How could an earth knight be easily humiliated?

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Uncle Zhong understood what happened approximately. He nodded before glancing at Bai Suxian for a couple of times, "Miss, do you want a supper today?"

"No need. I'm a bit tired. I want to take a rest in my room!" Bai Suxian told Uncle Zhong and Zhang Tie. After saying that, she revealed a smile towards Zhang Tie in a reluctant way, "You've not eaten food yet; if you want, go have some. I have no appetite today!"

"Let bygones be bygones. Never mind. After one day's torture, you'd better have a good rest!" Zhang Tie told her as he patted Bai Suxian's fragrant shoulder twice.

"Hmm..."

When they talked, they had arrived at a fountain in the manor. Bai Suxian's courtyard was on the other side; therefore, after noticing Zhang Tie and Uncle Zhong, she returned to her room alone.

Watching Bai Suxian's back, Uncle Zhong's eyes were full of concern. Bai Suxian was pretty happy these days. Why did she suddenly become unhappy today?

"What happened to Miss?" Uncle Zhong asked Zhang Tie about that directly.

Touching his bald head, Zhang Tie replied, "Nothing, just let her stay alone for some time..."

"Was she offended by people of Heavens Holding Pavilion?" Uncle Zhong asked out of a bit fury, "Our Lord Guangnan's Mansion could not be bullied by others in Taixia Country. In the south border of Taixia Country, our Lord Guangnan was awarded over 100 cities. Additionally, Lord Guangnan has tens of millions of guards and over 100 knights as well as many friends and relatives. Furthermore, we have relief in the imperial court. We're not afraid of Heavens Holding Pavilion at all!"

"That son of a b*tch is too immoral verbally. I broke his teeth and limbs. Additionally, we met Fang Xinyi today. I'm afraid that Bai Suxian felt unhappy as she recalled what happened in the past. Don't worry, she will soon be fine!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Uncle Zhong seemingly thought about something. He faintly opened his mouth yet said nothing.

Zhang Tie guessed that Uncle Zhong must know something about the reason. However, as Bai Suxian didn't tell him about the reason, Uncle Zhong felt it was inconvenient to talk about it.

"Childe Cui, do you need me to have supper sent to your room?"

"No need, thanks, I have no appetite either. I want to cultivate in my room..."

"There's an exclusive cultivation room in the manor!"

"No need, I will just stay in my own room. It won't take me too much time!"

"Alright, I will tell others to not disturb Childe Cui's cultivation!"

It was really normal for a knight to cultivate. Therefore, after being told that Zhang Tie was going to cultivate in his room, of course, Uncle Zhong wouldn't suspect it.

...

There was one more huge alloy cage as large as a container on the lawn of the garden in this manor. There was a living LV 6 black spider in the cage, whose blood became the guiding drug of the first prescription that Zhang Tie wrote for Uncle Zhong.

There were some fluorite lamps surrounding the lawn. In the daytime, that alloy cage was covered with a thick piece of black cloth; in the evening, that piece of black cloth would be unveiled. This LV 6 black spider was guarded by 3 guards who were above LV 7 by shifts every day.

When Zhang Tie passed by it, he found a guard had just opened a

window on one side of the alloy cage and dropped a living sheep inside.

The living sheep shivered due to fear while being stiff all over. In the blink of an eye, blood had sprayed in all directions inside the cage. The living sheep then became the food of the LV 6 black spider.

At the sight of the blood spraying, a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind...

At this moment, Zhang Tie even wanted to pound his own head.

'Stupid! I'm so stupid.'

Of course, followed by Uncle Zhong, Zhang Tie just passed by the path on one side calmly as he took in a deep breath.

Besides the smell of tender grass and fresh flowers, the fresh air in the garden also contained the bloody smell of that sheep. Meanwhile, this odor activated a memory zone in Zhang Tie's mind which had not been activated for a long time. That memory zone was filled with endless fights and deaths. Fresh blood was the forever theme of that memory zone.

...

After returning to his own room, Zhang Tie had someone give his torn clothes to Uncle Zhong before closing up his door.

Of course, Zhang Tie was not really cultivating; instead, he just called out the incarnation of the little black beetle from Castle of Black Iron so as to take a round in the emperor's imperial city and check the situation inside. When he saw the LV 6 black spider eating the sheep alive, Zhang Tie suddenly remembered a better detective means which was better than using the incarnation of the little black beetle.

Since he promoted to a knight, as he could not gain any fruit by killing demon knights, Zhang Tie almost forgot that he had such a trump card—the trouble-reappearance fruit. As long as he killed

an enemy, he would be able to reappear the surrounding environment in the new trouble-reappearance fruit.

Zhang Tie started his plan at once.

Speaking of his enemy, it was too simple. Zhang Tie had a lot of "backup" demonized puppets inside Castle of Black Iron.

After sensing the surrounding environment, Zhang Tie found that nobody would come here to disturb him in a short period. Therefore, he directly teleported a LV 9 demonized puppet out of Castle of Black Iron...

Pitifully, the moment the LV 9 demonized puppet was "thawed", before it figured out where it was, its head had been blown up by the battle qi which was shot out of Zhang Tie's finger. Closely after that, its corpse was thrown back into Castle of Black Iron. The entire process lasted less than 0.5 seconds...

...

Chapter 1113: Detecting the Emperor's Imperial City in the Evening

"Ahh, Castle Lord..." Edward hurriedly bowed towards Zhang Tie when he passed by the hall of the palace tree at the sight of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie just passed by Edward as fast as the wind. Before saying anything, he directly rushed towards the small tree and picked off that latest trouble-reappearance fruit at once. Closely after that, he pushed the trouble-reappearance fruit into his mouth before revealing a smile towards Edward. Then, he disappeared right under the small tree. The entire process lasted less than 3 seconds, leaving Edward standing still there with a dumbfounded look...

...

When Zhang Tie came out of Castle of Black Iron, he was still chewing the latest trouble-reappearance fruit as he had already sat down with crossed legs.

Zhang Tie took the last trouble-reappearance fruit in the Earth-element Realm. Even though he had taken the last trouble-reappearance fruit, he didn't activate that trouble-reappearance situation. As he had not taken trouble-reappearance fruit for a long time, Zhang Tie almost forgot about the taste of trouble-reappearance fruit.

The moment the exotic energy of the trouble-reappearance fruit entered Zhang Tie's mouth, it had risen up like a curl of smoke and directly rushed into Zhang Tie's mind sea before converging with Zhang Tie's spiritual energy. After that, a sparkle appeared in Zhang Tie's mind sea while an exotic, hexagon entrance flew over here from the sparkle and covered Zhang Tie completely, bringing Zhang Tie into a bizarre trouble-reappearance situation...

...

Zhang Tie appeared in the same room.

At the sight of Zhang Tie standing there, the demonized puppet that he had killed just now immediately roared with bloody eyes like seeing its enemy before charging towards Zhang Tie.

This LV 9 demonized puppet was just as trivial as a fly for Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie didn't even feel like dealing with it; instead, he just punched a wall into pieces. In the rocks and roar, Zhang Tie instantly strode out of the room and entered the manor.

The manor remained as peaceful as before. Besides nobody was here, every tree and bush here was as same as that Zhang Tie saw a few minutes ago.

The alloy cage was still on the lawn. Although there were still blood stains in the cage and the smell of blood was still in the air, there was no black spider in the cage anymore.

The LV 9 demonized puppet closely followed Zhang Tie out of the broken wall as it rushed towards Zhang Tie with bare fangs and brandish claws. Only by casually flicking towards the demonized puppet, Zhang Tie had blown up the two shanks of the demonized puppet. The demonized puppet shrieked miserably as it fell down. Even so, it continued to climb on the ground towards Zhang Tie as if it wanted to bite Zhang Tie forcefully. However, its moving speed was ten times slower than that before. Additionally, it looked pretty hilarious.

The whole world became quiet.

The moment Zhang Tie moved, he had come to the street outside the manor of Lord Guangnan over 100 m away benefited from his Kuafu bloodline.

The street lamps, roadside stores and nightscape remained unchanged.

After looking around, Zhang Tie found that the street was a bit

more spacious than before. Something must have disappeared.

'Ah, all the alcohol-driven vehicles on the streets have disappeared. Only the buses that parked on the roadsides could be seen. After thinking about it for a short while, Zhang Tie realized that it was a feature of the trouble-reappearance fruit. In the trouble-reappearance situation, moving objects under the control of humans, personal belongings of humans and any items that were interacting with humans or some living beings could not be captured.

Otherwise, trouble-reappearance fruits would really be too amazing.

Even so, Zhang Tie was also satisfied enough.

As for the small tree, Zhang Tie knew that the current Xuanyuan Hill in his eyes was nothing different than the former Wildwolf Valley or the Hidden Dragon Island; in another word, everything here was just a meaningless arrangement of material elements or sceneries in the photos. With a click, all the sceneries, including handsome boys, beauties, ugly ones, gold, silver, copper, iron, jewelry and wastes would be kept. Watching the completely open, empty Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie felt a bit thrilled as if he was pulling the strings in the public in an examination...

Zhang Tie started to run rapidly towards the emperor's imperial city. With the effect of Kuafu bloodline, even though Zhang Tie couldn't fly, he could still move as fast as the wind and lightning bolt on the ground. In each stride, he could move hundreds of meters. Such a speed was even a bit faster than the flight speed of common knights. After running for 2 minutes, Zhang Tie became pretty excited. With a roar, he immediately jumped onto the roof of a roadside building and started to run along the roofs of those buildings...

Under the two bright moons, Zhang Tie jumped over the roofs of the buildings in Xuanyuan Hill as fast as a meteor, leaving the

roadside buildings and streets behind rapidly.

Sometimes, Zhang Tie would even break the roofs of those buildings if he used too much strength on his foot. However, nobody would claim compensation for him in the trouble-reappearance situation.

The linear distance between the manor of Lord Guangnan and Horse Bridge was over 90 miles. In less than 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had already fallen onto the gate tower at the bridgehead of Horse Bridge with a bang.

Standing on the top of the gate tower, Zhang Tie felt a cold wind blowing over. Although there were ripples in the Golden Water River, the gate tower was still empty. There was not even a guard or a knight inside it. After identifying the orientation, Zhang Tie jumped up once again and landed on the huge steel structure of the Horse Bridge. Only after a few steps, he had already rushed over the Horse Bridge and entered the territory of emperor's imperial city.

The emperor's imperial city of Xuanyuan Hill didn't look different than the other places in Xuanyuan Hill essentially. The roadside buildings were tidier; additionally, the residences and signboards of central authority agencies in Taixia Country could be seen everywhere across the emperor's imperial city. All of these places were magnificent and solemn. Even the courtyards in the emperor's imperial city looked special.

If Xuanyuan Hill was regarded as the ground at the foot of Emperor Xuanyuan, emperor's imperial city could almost be regarded as the ground under the eyes of Xuanyuan Hill.

As Zhang Tie ran, he kept recalling the map of the emperor's imperial city in Xuanyuan Hill.

Although commoners could not enter the emperor's imperial city; the map of the emperor's imperial city was nothing confidential. Even the location of the imperial palace was marked

on the map, not to mention the central residences of authority agencies, the manors of top 3 chancellors and 9 ministers.

A few minutes later, Zhang Tie landed before the gate of a grand manor. He raised his head and caught sight of the golden words above the gate——Finance Minister's Manor.

There were copper lions outside the gate of this manor. The footsteps were made of white jade. Besides, 4 lanterns were hanging over the gate. Besides one main entrance in the middle, there were two smaller ones on both sides. All the three entrances on the gate were tightly closed.

After looking at it, Zhang Tie shook his head. Closely after that, he walked onto the jade steps and ascended to the front of the main entrance. Only by one kick, he had blown up the closed gate. After that, he walked inside.

The finance minister's manor covered over 60,000 square meters. It contained pavilions, waterside terraces, open halls, rockeries, gardens and pools.

Zhang Tie started to travel around the manor leisurely like a curious tourist. With lotus-flower eyes, Zhang Tie could see everything clearly in the manor.

There were three underground buildings in the manor, an icehouse which contained many ice cubes, a cellar which contained many drinks and a cultivation room for knights which contained a senior elements gathering matrix. Additionally, there were two secret tunnels from where people could access the finance minister's manor secretly.

Zhang Tie didn't feel it was strange for a manor of one of the 9 ministers in Taixia Country to have such secret tunnels. Given the locations of those secret tunnels, they should have been built together with the manor.

As most of the people living in this manor were servants and

guards, their rooms above the ground were nothing special.

Among the rooms above the ground, there were two buildings which looked like private warehouses. Some jewelry and gold coins were inside the two buildings. Even though they were of great value and rare, they were valueless for Zhang Tie in the trouble-reappearance situation.

There was nothing eye-catching in the rooms of the master of this manor.

After looking around seriously in the manor, Zhang Tie finally came to the study on the side of the lotus-flower pool.

This study was not large; however, it was pretty tranquil and tidy. The moment Zhang Tie entered it, he had seen a treasured calligraphy on the wall, which contained two words "The Best". The signature of the calligraphy was "Scrawled by Water Hearing Mountain Hermit in Hiding Dragon Month, Kuimou Year". Beside that signature, there was a small private seal, which contained three small seal characters "韩正方 1"...

Standing in front of this calligraphy, Zhang Tie watched the three seal characters silently as he slightly narrowed his eyes.

Han Zhengfang, the name of the very finance minister in Taixia Country.

Water Hearing Mountain Hermit must be Han Zhengfang's elegant appellation. Among the top figures in Taixia Country, elegant appellations were very popular. The traditional Chinese chronology was also known as stems-and-branches. If not have studied about it previously, Zhang Tie might not know which year did Kuichou Year refer to.

The latest Kuichou year should be the 891st year of Black Iron Calendar. Each circulation contained 60 years. Given the look of this calligraphy, it should be made on the 891st year of Black Iron Calendar. Hiding Dragon Month should refer to November.

If not have known the other identity of Han Zhengfang, Zhang Tie would not pay too much attention to this calligraphy. After knowing that he was the master of Heavens Reaching Church and colluded with demons, Zhang Tie could have a different feeling about this calligraphy.

The 891st year of Black Iron Calendar should be the very year when the holy war broke out. If Han Zhengfang left this calligraphy at that time, it would be meaningful.

'The best, hiding dragon, interesting. What an ambitious guy!' Zhang Tie revealed a sneer, 'I will change this ambitious hiding dragon into a dead snake.'

After looking at this calligraphy for a short while, Zhang Tie came to the front of the bookshelves.

Most of the book on the bookshelves were political and historical works and poems. There was no trick in those books. After glancing around them, Zhang Tie walked towards the desk over there.

On one side of the desk, there were writing brushes, ink sticks, paper and inkstones. There was a delicate gold folder on the table containing a lot of names cards and invitation cards, which had been arranged well by Han Zhengfang's trusted subordinates for Han Zhengfang's selection.

Zhang Tie picked an invitation card on the top and opened it. It was sent by the minister of Recreational Affairs Ministry, who invited Han Zhengfang for a party 3 days ago. According to the date, they would meet each other today...

Looking at the gold folder on the table, Zhang Tie's eyes suddenly sparkled, 'If I could have a trouble-reappearance fruit every day, won't I get hang of the trace of Han Zhengfang in the emperor's imperial city in advance?'

Chapter 1114: The Mist in the Imperial Palace

After searching over the finance minister's manor carefully, Zhang Tie left and came to the street outside frankly.

It had just been over 2 hours since he entered Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie recalled the map of the emperor's imperial city while a whim suddenly occurred to his mind.

'I'm curious about the look of Xuanyuan Imperial Palace.'

Closely after this whim, another whim flashed by.

'Bai Suxian told me that there was a Battle Skills Collections Pavilion in Xuanyuan Imperial Palace, which contained tens of thousands of secret methods. Only a part of imperial households could enter it. What if I could enter it...'

Zhang Tie's heart pounded.

Zhang Tie also felt a bit hesitated. After all, it was not a commonplace but the imperial palace of Xuanyuan Hill. Zhang Tie was not sure whether there was any aftereffect if he entered the Battle Skills Collections Pavilion of the imperial palace to learn some secret battle skills. He already had too many powerful enemies such as Heavens Reaching Church, the Gobbling Party and demons. If Zhang Tie offended the imperial households of Taixia Country, he would be in a worse situation.

Additionally, in each Hua people's heart, the imperial palace of Xuanyuan Hill, also the residence of Emperor Xuanyuan was pretty sacred. It was the heart of all the Hua people. Even if he slid inside in the trouble-reappearance situation, Zhang Tie was still not confident about that.

Two voices sounded in Zhang Tie's mind at the same time, one

voice encouraged him to go there as nobody would discover that; the other voice persuaded him to not go there out of the respect to Emperor Xuanyuan the most venerable person among humans and the imperial households of Taixia Country.

After struggling inside for a few seconds, Zhang Tie finally gritted his teeth as he said, "Whatever, I will take a look inside. I will not touch the items inside the imperial palace unless in need..."

After muttering to himself, Zhang Tie became decisive as he immediately darted towards the imperial palace.

In the emperor's imperial city, all the 12 avenues that linked the 12 bridges over the Golden Water River could lead to the periphery of the imperial palace. The imperial palace of Taixia Country was a circular region in the core of Xuanyuan Hill, whose radius was 6 miles. Therefore, the area of the entire imperial palace was 113 square miles, which was even larger than a small city.

Zhang Tie was pretty curious about the collections in the imperial palace of Taixia Country. When he arrived at the center of Xuanyuan Hill at his full speed, Zhang Tie was shocked too much by what he saw in front of him.

On the map, he should have arrived at the location of the imperial palace of Xuanyuan Hill.

Besides camp and square, there was also a Jade Belt River as wide as over 50 m around the imperial palace. However, the location of the imperial palace was covered with dense black mist in front of Zhang Tie.

Even with the effect of his lotus-flower eyes, Zhang Tie couldn't see anything in the dense black mist, not to mention any wall or imperial palace.

Zhang Tie attempted to enter the black dense; however, there was a great resistance on the edge of the black mist. Zhang Tie

could not approach it no matter how great strength did he put forth.

'What's wrong?'

Zhang Tie became extremely startled. Since he had trouble-reappearance fruits, it was his first time to meet such a situation.

Of course, the imperial palace of Taixia Country should not be the black mist. The buildings inside the black mist must have not been manifested due to some reason.

Zhang Tie ran around the location of the imperial palace at full speed and found it was fully covered by the black mist.

When Zhang Tie stopped his footsteps in the trouble-reappearance situation and thought about the reason about this special situation, his ears suddenly moved. Closely after that, the trouble-reappearance situation shattered into light spots...

...

Zhang Tie, sitting on the bed with crossed legs, opened his eyes at once...

"Bang...bang...bang" loud sounds drifted from the outdoors.

Zhang Tie picked himself up and walked over there to open the door.

Bai Suxian was standing outside the door in a white night skirt. Zhang Tie didn't know why she suddenly came here. At the sight of Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian immediately hugged him tightly as she buried her face onto Zhang Tie's chest.

In a split second, Zhang Tie felt that the clothes on his chest turned wet by Bai Suxian's tears.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Tie patted her back.

Bai Suxian raised her head with tearful eyes as she said, "Kiss me!"

Zhang Tie let out a sigh as he closed the door.

Although it didn't sound good that Bai Suxian entered his bedroom in the deep night, Zhang Tie believed that nobody in this manor was that gossipy.

...

Only after a few hours' deep sleep, Zhang Tie had already woken up energetically like a fully charged battery.

When he woke up, he found that it didn't break yet through the window screen.

Bai Suxian was sleeping like a little girl while leaning against Zhang Tie's chest with tear stains and a bit tiredness and satisfaction on her face after making love with Zhang Tie.

Bai Suxian was pretty crazy last night. It was her craziest time since they acquainted with each other. Actually, after each orgasm, Bai Suxian would lie beside Zhang Tie and tell him about her story while dropping tears. After that, she would fall asleep in Zhang Tie's arms relaxedly like having unloaded a heavy burden.

Zhang Tie knew that Bai Suxian had already resolved her mental obstacle now that she could tell him about her history which she didn't want to recall previously.

Actually, Bai Suxian's story was not that fresh, which also happened to many women—a beautiful virgin who began to understand love encountered a handsome man by accident. After that, under the young man's sweet and tender pursuit, she fell in love with him and would even die for him. Until one day, the beauty found that the young man approached her only for the prestige and power of her clan. He was just a scheming ugly duckling with a delicate package. Everything between her and this man was designed by the latter. Additionally, this delicate ugly duckling had other women. From the beginning, she was made use of by this man. She was just the man's plaything and served as the

staircase for the man to fulfill his ambition. The beauty was pretty sad that she blew up with that man decisively. Besides, she was even resigned to her backwardness and lived a confused and indulgent life...

This was also what Bai Suxian had experienced.

Since she acquainted with Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian had buried this experience deep in her mind. As a result, it became her mental burden.

If a woman loved a man, she would always display her best side to him. Although being a knight, Bai Suxian had almost the same attitude about affection like the other women. She was afraid that Zhang Tie would dislike her, despise her, even stay far away from her after knowing her past emotional experience. Therefore, her past emotional experience became her minefield that could be barely detonated.

Actually, Bai Suxian detonated the minefield in her heart on Zhang Tie's side last night. She exposed all of her secrets to Zhang Tie.

Watching Bai Suxian for a short while, Zhang Tie got up quietly in case of disturbing Bai Suxian.

After getting up, Zhang Tie came to the balcony outside the bedroom in pajamas and watched the garden in the manor which was adorned with lamps and the contour of Xuanyuan Hill in the distance quietly.

After recalling the emotional experience of Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh.

Compared to his love about Miss Daina, Bai Suxian's emotional experience was more sympathetic. He could neither stay with Miss Daina nor fall in love with her. Whatever, he still had a beautiful memory about her. Although he didn't get Miss Daina's love, at least they had extended their sincerity to each other. By contrast,

the emotional deception and advantage that Bai Suxian had encountered were more woeful.

If a woman encountered such a strike in her best age, she would easily become depraved and disappointed about her whole life.

Bai Suxian almost destroyed her own life.

Let the bygones be bygones. As long as Bai Suxian had resolved the mental obstacle, Zhang Tie would not like to mention about it anymore.

...

"Heller, are you there?" Zhang Tie called Heller consciously.

"Castle Lord, I'm waiting for your order at any time!" Heller's kind and honest sound drifted in Zhang Tie's mind, making Zhang Tie optimistic at once.

"What was the matter with the trouble-reappearance fruit last night? Why the imperial palace in the emperor's imperial city could not be manifested in the trouble-reappearance fruit?" Zhang Tie asked Heller out of his concern.

"Like how you could not get any fruit by killing demon knights, the Manjusaka Karma Fruits Tree is not almighty. Its ability is limited. Take what happened last night as an instance, to put it simply, the imperial palace in the emperor's imperial city of Xuanyuan Hill is covered with a strong energy, which directly shielded the mirror of the material world in the trouble-reappearance situation. Meanwhile, Castle Lord, you should know that all the knights below sage-level ones could not fly above Xuanyuan Hill because of the same energy from the imperial palace!"

"What's that powerful energy?"

"I guess, I guess that there might be a treasured item that could match Castle of Black Iron in the imperial palace of Xuanyun Hill."

"A treasured item that could match Castle of Black Iron?" Zhang Tie became spirited...

"There might be!" Heller came to a pause, "I might have already known your plan, Castle Lord. But there's one point that I have to warn you, Castle Lord, you should check how many stars that represent trouble-reappearance situations are left on the marvelous gate of Castle of Black Iron..."

Chapter 1115: Loss and Gain

'The gate of Castle of Black Iron?'

'The stars of trouble-reappearance situations?'

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie became stunned. Closely after that, he understood Heller's meaning.

Zhang Tie immediately remembered that whenever he took a trouble-reappearance fruit, one more hexagon star would appear on the arch door of Castle of Black Iron in his mind sea which represented the new trouble-reappearance situation.

When Zhang Tie caught sight of the first hexagon star which represented the trouble-reappearance situation on the arch door, he felt it was pretty marvelous. Over the past 10 years, as he took more and more trouble-reappearance fruits, his spiritual energy grew increasingly stronger. Gradually, he could access to Castle of Black Iron as easily as taking a breath. Therefore, Zhang Tie gradually forgot about the stars.

Heller's words reminded him. Zhang Tie hurriedly moved his eyes onto the arch door of Castle of Black Iron in his mind sea.

Like when he saw it for the first time, the classic and brilliant arch door was still standing as quietly as before in the deepest place of his mind sea as if it was waiting for Zhang Tie's arrival at any time. However, being different than when Zhang Tie came here at the beginning, over 95% of the area on this marvelous arch door has been covered with hexagon stars. These hexagon stars set off each other in a harmonious and profound way, making this marvelous arch door more mysterious.

Zhang Tie looked at it seriously and found that only a small part on the top of the arch door was still available, the entire front of the arch door was almost filled with hexagon stars, which meant that it could barely hold any trouble-reappearance situations.

'What about the back and side of the arch door?'

'Of course they are not available. Otherwise, Heller would not say that just now.'

After exiting the inward vision state, Zhang Tie felt a bit complex. The experiences that he took trouble-reappearance fruits flashed by one after another. After a while, he contacted Heller once again as he asked in a bitter voice, "Heller, do you mean that the small tree is running out of trouble-reappearance fruits?"

"Yes, Castle Lord. Like leakless fruits and iron-body fruits, the number of these fruits are limited. Previously, I thought that Castle Lord had already realized it; I've not imagined that Castle Lord forgot about it. Therefore, I warned just now."

Zhang Tie replied with a bitter smile, "As my spiritual energy grew increasingly stronger, I could contact the marvelous arch door only by a bit of spiritual energy. Whenever I wanted to access the arch door, I only needed to run my spiritual energy slightly like pressing a button. Since I promoted to a knight, I barely used trouble-reappearance fruits; therefore, I didn't notice that the small tree was running out of trouble-reappearance fruits!"

"These fruits serve as your foundation and steps, as Castle Lord grew increasingly stronger, these fruits would finally accomplish their mission!"

"Tell me a precise figure, how many more trouble-reappearance fruits could the small tree produce?"

"Only 4!"

"4?"

Zhang Tie was dumbfounded and disappointed; however, finally recovered his composure.

No matter whether he accepted the fact or not, it would not alter the outcome. Now that he could not alter it, he had to accept it.

However, Zhang Tie still had a bit of hope unconsciously.

"Could I have the small tree produce the last trouble-reappearance fruits whenever and wherever I need?"

"The rule about producing trouble-reappearance fruits remains unchanged. As long as Castle Lord kills demons or mutated beats on your own initiative at any time, the small tree will produce the trouble-reappearance fruit timely!"

"I've suffered great losses. If I knew it earlier, I might have saved them!"

"Castle Lord, do you feel that any trouble-reappearance fruit that you took in the past is unnecessary?"

'Which one was unnecessary?'

After thinking about it for a short while, Zhang Tie found that each trouble-reappearance fruit that he took in the past was produced when necessary. All the past trouble-reappearance fruits were produced in necessity when he encountered strikes or for improving his battle strength. Those trouble-reappearance fruits were destined to be produced in his growth. Without those trouble-reappearance fruits, he would never be such powerful. Actually, this question sounded like a laughingstock that he heard about building houses, 'Can we directly build the top floor without the foundation?' Of course not, no way! Without the accumulated battle strength granted by the earlier trouble-reappearance fruits, he would do everything in vain.

Among all the trouble-reappearance fruits that the small tree had produced, only the one today was produced for a certain purpose. As a result, it brought him a huge return. Besides gaining the trouble-reappearance situation of Xuanyuan Hill, he could also grasp the key information about his enemy.

Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside as he told Heller, "Perhaps, I feel a bit sad when I suddenly found that I'm running out of another

fruit!"

"Perhaps, it would be a perfect result if you could have the last trouble-reappearance fruits to play their roles in Xuanyuan Hill. Castle Lord, previously, I was thinking about reminding you of producing a trouble-reappearance fruit of Xuanyuan Hill before you left Xuanyuan Hill without thinking about the function of trouble-reappearance fruit. The trouble-reappearance situation of Xuanyuan Hill is priceless. It's absolutely a treasure!"

"Treasure, why?"

"Castle Lord, you must have forgotten that the other places in Xuanyuan Hill are all available to you besides the imperial palace of the emperor's imperial city. As the core of human civilization, Xuanyuan Hill has Bright Library which is the largest human library and the headquarters of all the human trade unions. The books and materials in the Bright Library and the human trade union headquarters are completely open to Castle Lord in the trouble-reappearance situation. Therefore, Castle Lord could access them for learning and gaining information for free. There might not be any top secret methods among them; however, they are very precious too. Most of them were classified. Commoners could barely touch them. It could be said that they are as valuable as many super secret methods. Besides, the great number of national archives and files in the authority agencies in the emperor's imperial city are also open to Castle Lord. Castle Lord, you could look them up if you need. Given this point, even if Castle Lord couldn't gain anything in this trip to Xuanyuan Hill, you've already reaped a lot with the help of this trouble-reappearance fruit."

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie realized the value of this trouble-reappearance fruit right away after taking in a deep breath. As his exploration in the trouble-reappearance situation was interrupted by Bai Suxian, he was confused by that black mist in the imperial palace of Taixia Country. Therefore, Zhang Tie

didn't realize the value of this trouble-reappearance fruit for the time being.

"If so, if I could produce a trouble-reappearance situation in Taiyi Fantasy Sect, won't I be able to browse all the battle skills and secret methods that are collected in Taiyi Fantasy Sect?"

"Theoretically yes. However, Castle Lord, do you think that the top 7 sects of Taixia Country would just put their precious secret methods in a building like that on the Hidden Dragon Island? If these secret methods don't need to be inherited through enlightenment, how precious they could be? In other words, as the master of Iron-Dragon Sect, will Castle Lord put those precious secret methods in a building?"

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie denied this thought at once, 'It's indeed too silly to put all the precious secret methods in one building. Isn't it equivalent to seeking trouble? It's simply attracting crimes and robbery and setting a target for the enemy. No matter how firm the buildings are, they could be destroyed by knight-level powerhouses. If they have a space-teleportation item, they'd better put these precious secret methods in the space-teleportation item and have them managed by reliable ones even the master of the sect himself.'

'Actually, I have a space-teleportation item of the major sect in Taixia Country, namely, the Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple. According to my knowledge, among those major sects, there are exclusive enlightenment elders who are responsible for keeping different secret methods. As for the situation that Huaiyuan Palace put its secret methods in a building on Hidden Dragon Island, on one hand, the Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace indeed don't have surplus space-teleportation items; on the other hand, as an earth knight, I know that those secret methods that Huaiyuan Palace collected in Hidden Dragon Palace are actually not too precious because over 90% of those secret methods look low-end for those people above knight level. The Breaking Sun

Sutra, the most precious secret method of Huaiyuan Palace, is not put in the Hidden Dragon Island either.'

'The trouble-reappearance situation is virtual. Therefore, it could not simulate the effect of a space-teleportation item. Therefore, all the items in the space-teleportation item could not be detected in the trouble-reappearance situation.'

'In a special environment, the trouble-reappearance fruit would work a lot. However, unless I start to be as timid as a rabbit and don't kill anyone from now on, as long as I trigger the rule of generation of trouble-reappearance fruit, the trouble-reappearance fruit will come into being automatically. However, it is in the holy war when the overall situation in Taixia Country becomes more and more strange and dangerous with so many surging dark forces, how long could I stand not killing a demon or a lackey of Three-eye Association?'

'Therefore, it's hard for me to keep the 4 trouble-reappearance fruits for too long. I'd better play their full role in Xuanyuan Hill instead of wasting them on some important occasions and scenes. I will turn this hinterland of humans into my last trouble-reappearance situation and use the last trouble-reappearance fruits to kill the culprit, the malignant tumor in Taixia Country so as to draw a perfect, meaningful period for the existence of the last trouble-reappearance fruits.'

When Zhang Tie thought about this, he gradually felt relieved.

No pain, no gain. Nothing could be perfect including love, human life and the fruits of the small tree.

After thinking it through, Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile as he told Heller, "Is there any other fruit running out? Heller, you'd better remind me in advance in case of getting me embarrassed!"

"I believe that Castle Lord has already sensed it. Some other fruits might be running out soon too!"

Zhang Tie became silent before asking, "Is that the fruit of judgment?"

"Yes! After killing those b*stards on the airboat of Gold and Power Law, Castle Lord gained some more fruits of judgment. After taking these fruits of judgment, besides your mirror body separation skill, all the other immortal runes have promoted to the master-level realm. From then on, as long as Castle Lord's mirror body separation skill promotes to the master-level realm, you will not gain any fruit of judgment anymore!"

When all the other immortal runes promoted to the master-level realm and the powerful body separation skill appeared, Zhang Tie had sensed that there might not be a new fruit of judgment anymore. After hearing Heller's verbal verification, Zhang Tie recovered his composure.

These fruits which had disappeared or would disappear reminded Zhang Tie of the eagles which gradually grew up from their nestle. One day, they had to leave their nest which prevented them from wind and rain and start to flap their wings in the sky in a domineering way.

'I'm that eagle. The small tree is that nest where I grew up...'

'However, I do not have too many trouble-reappearance fruits left. I have to make a good plan to deal with that culprit. I have to make other preparations...'

...

After thinking about it for a few minutes in the balcony, Zhang Tie quietly returned to his bedroom and cleaned up himself. After doing all this, he threw a glance at Bai Suxian who was in a deep sleep before leaving the room silently...

Zhang Tie didn't know that Bai Suxian had dropped off tears silently the moment he closed the door from outside...

Chapter 1116: Being Leisure

About an hour later, it started to break. Before Zhang Tie returned to his bedroom with a dining car, he had heard faint sobs from the room. Not until he opened the door did the sobs stop.

Bai Suxian was hugging a pillow while sitting on the head of the bed with tears all over her face. She turned around with a dumbfounded look and saw Zhang Tie walking in with the dining car.

Zhang Tie looked around the room out of curiosity and found that nobody else was inside. Everything else remained unchanged.

"What's wrong?" He asked Bai Suxian with astonishment.

"I...I thought that you...left me...and didn't like me anymore after learning about my past!" Bai Suxian said in an embarrassed way.

"What are you thinking about?" Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "I just got up a bit earlier today. After realizing that you've not tasted my culinary skills yet, I made a breakfast for you. When I entered the kitchen, those servants in the manor had just gotten up. I prepared the breakfast myself although it could not match that made by the chefs of the manor..."

When Zhang Tie explained it, he pushed the dining car to the bedside before opening the covers. The breakfast included a bowl of fragrant noodles, a pancake and a cup of juice. Zhang Tie prepared all of it himself carefully although there was not too much food.

Bai Suxian watched Zhang Tie while dropping off tears once again. She had not imagined that this man got up early so as to prepare breakfast for her for the first time when she thought that he was leaving her because of abhorring her bygones. Such a considerate man moved her so much. Therefore, Bai Suxian sighed

with emotion, "You're really a good man!"

"If a man doesn't understand how to make his wife a mistress, he must be philistine!" Zhang Tie blinked his eyes.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian burst out into tears at once.

...

In Bai Suxian's eyes, the breakfast that Zhang Tie prepared for her was the best one that she had ever eaten. It was even more delicious than any delicacies in the world although it lacked patterns compared to that made by the chefs of the manor.

Bai Suxian sprung up from the bed, putting on her pajamas and cleansing up herself almost at the highest speed. After that, she pulled up her hair casually and started to enjoy the breakfast that Zhang Tie prepared for her with a brilliant look on the balcony.

"Come on, let's eat together!"

"I've already taken it. I made it especially for you!"

Bai Suxian tasted the fragrant golden pancake before sighing with emotion, "Ahh, so tasty, how did you make it?"

"I learned it from my mom. After mixing buckwheat flour, eggs with sugar, bake it with sesame oil! If you taste the pancake cooked by my mom, you will find it tastier!"

"Don't you really mind my past?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie with an unconfident look.

"Do you know my past?"

"I read it in the Mountain of Brightness!"

"Actually, since I entered school at Blackhot City, I've already started to fall in love with someone secretly for a long time..." Zhang Tie started to tell the story about how he fell in love with Miss Daina in a melancholy and reminiscent tone.

When Bai Suxian slowly enjoyed her breakfast, she was immersed in the story between Zhang Tie and Miss Daina.

Zhang Tie mentioned that he would always follow Miss Daina from a distance after school each day...

Zhang Tie mentioned that how he hid in a lane behind the bus station to watch Miss Daina's back when she waited for the bus...

Zhang Tie also mentioned how the Hit-Plane Brotherhood masturbated in the classroom, how he annoyed them and finally became their friend.

These stories were simply like myths for Bai Suxian. However, the myths were real and interesting.

"Wait...you mean a boy masturbated in your classroom at middle school?" As a woman, of course, Bai Suxian knew what masturbation meant. Even so, the princess could still not imagine about the experience and life of poor boys in a remote place like Waii Subcontinent.

"Not one, it was a whole row. Can you imagine that? They stood in a row by the windows and masturbated in the public. Finally, they even competed who could eject farther. The loser might even be punished!" Zhang Tie explained with a solemn look.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxia blushed.

"Did...did you masturbate then?" Bai Suxian whispered to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie let out a sigh before saying, "According to the instructions of Hua people, juveniles who masturbate would have a poor health and memory and bad luck. Additionally, they would grow uglier and extremely obscene. As I was too poor at that moment, I almost had nothing, including look, health and luck. I risked my life joining the peers who were taller and stronger than me. Even if I wanted to masturbate, I had no cost to squander!"

Bai Suxian was kittled by Zhang Tie's words once again.

When Zhang Tie mentioned how he plucked up his courage to be a man in Ms. Anna's house and suddenly found that he had a bit "physiological obstacle" due to an extreme pain, Bai Suxian couldn't stand to spurt her mouthful of noodles onto Zhang Tie's body...

After listening to Zhang Tie's story and having the breakfast that Zhang Tie prepared for her, Bai Suxian's mental obstacle and haze disappeared completely when her face turned bright once again.

Zhang Tie knew that Bai Suxian had completely resolved her metal obstacle. Even the breakfast that Zhang Tie prepared for her had been eaten completely by Bai Suxian who usually paid attention to her womanly image, besides that mouthful of noodles that she had spurted onto Zhang Tie's body.

Zhang Tie's story ended with Miss Daina's light kiss onto a strange man in Huaiyuan Prefecture, which also ended all of his illusions in his youthhood. He saw Miss Daina finding her soul partner...

"I told you about my bygones because I wanted you to understand that each one has its bygones. Nobody is perfect. I'm very happy to meet you; I also treasure you very much. If the bygones couldn't become your beautiful memory, just take it as a lesson like being bitten by a mad dog and almost getting rabies. If you care about it too much, you're suffering from the secondary harm caused by the one who harmed you previously!" Zhang Tie made a conclusion sincerely.

Bai Suxian nodded forcefully as her frustrated and frail look had completely disappeared, "I see!"

"Let's visit another place today. I was told that the Treasures Meeting in Gold and Power Market would be very boisterous. As the Treasures Meeting has started for 2 days, let's take a look over there!" Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian in a casual look.

"Nice, nice. I will change a set of clothes right away. After that,

let's go to the Gold and Power Market..." Bai Suxian instantly became cheerful after recovering her vitality. After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie's wet chest, she became a bit embarrassed, "Your clothes..."

"Never mind, I will change a set of clothes too..."

"Don't you really mind my bygones?" Bai Suxian suddenly asked Zhang Tie with a serious look.

Zhang Tie knew that women always behaved like Bai Suxian. When you didn't speak, she was worried that you really didn't mind her bygones. Women were too troublesome. In women's mindset, if a man didn't mind their bygones at all, it indicated that this man might not truly love her.

If he were a lunkhead, Zhang Tie must have been trapped. However, as an experienced man in love affairs, how could he abandon his work which had been seriously undertaken?

Zhang Tie pretended to be furious as he threw a glare at Bai Suxian. Closely after that, he caught Bai Suxian. In Bai Suxian's exclamation, he stretched out his huge hand and patted her plump butt, causing sounds "Pah, pah...", "Hurry up, go prepare for it. You're forbidden to mention this thing from then on. If I saw you leering another man, I will break your legs and shackle you with an iron chain!"

After being patted a few times on her butt, Bai Suxian became well-behaved at once. Instead of being driven angry, she even revealed a tender, coquettish smile as she replied, "I see, master..."

"Go!"

"Pah", Zhang Tie slapped her butt one more time.

With silvery chuckles, Bai Suxian directly jumped off the balcony and landed onto the lawn outside. Closely after that, she ran barefoot towards her residence cheerily.

All the servants inside the manor just pretended to not have seen

their Miss running out Childe Cui's bedroom without even receiving the order of Uncle Zhong.

When Bai Suxian left, Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he lowered his head to watch the wet chest. After changing a set of clothes, he left his room.

Based on Zhang Tie's knowledge about Bai Suxian, Bai Suxian would not leave her room in 2 hours even after being looked by maids because she had to take a bath, do her hair, choose clothes and dress up.

During this period, Zhang Tie could do something.

As the sun had just risen, the garden was filled with cheerful bird chirps. Zhang Tie went to the kitchen and took out a small basin of wheat before starting to feed birds leisurely on the lawn.

There were too many birds both inside and outside the Xuanyuan Hill. People could feed birds in many places across the city. Feeding birds had become a pastime for both old and young in Xuanyuan Hill.

After Zhang Tie scattered a handful of wheat over the lawn, a flock of sparrows that were tweeting cheerily and jumping over the treetops soon flew off by flapping their wings and started to peck wheat over the grass pleasantly without being afraid of Zhang Tie at all. After a short while, even the sparrows in the far had come here. Hundreds of sparrows started to peck Zhang Tie's wheat around him while tweeting...

Not only sparrows, but even pigeons also arrived in only a few minutes...

Chapter 1117: Two Uninvited Visitors

When Zhang Tie fed birds in the garden, a lot of servants and guards in the manor of Lord Guangnan clicked their tongues in wonder and praised that an earth knight could be so kind and nice, a black limo with the license plate of Xuanyuan Hill had already entered the auxiliary road that led to the manor from the main road in the early morning.

An elder and a shrewd middle-aged man at his 30s were sitting at the back seats of the limo.

"Elder, does that Fire Dragon Hermit live here?" The middle-aged man couldn't stand to ask the old man when he watched the grand manor and the luxuriant garden, "Haven't our clan investigated his background? He was born in Yongzhou Province and has no foundation. Even if an earth knight has made some military exploits in the Earth-elements Realm, how could he have such a magnificent manor in Xuanyuan Hill? This one is even a bit larger than our Guan Clan's manor in Xuanyuan Hill."

It was not amazing for a knight to have even 10,000 grand manors like this one outside Xuanyuan Hill; however, in Xuanyuan Hill, such a grand manor was really amazing.

Watching the high snow-white courtyard wall and those special rune alert copper bells that were secretly arranged on the courtyard walls, the old man revealed a smile, "As you've just been in Xuanyuan Hill for a few days, you might not know about the forces layout in Xuanyuan Hill. This manor belongs to Lord Guangnan's Mansion in Xuanyuan Hill; instead of Fire Dragon Hermit. It's not that easy for a new earth knight to have such a grand private manor in Xuanyuan Hill."

The middle-aged man responded at once, "Did Fire Dragon Hermit seek a refuge with Lord Guangnan?"

"No, Fire Dragon Hermit might really be the son-in-law of Lord

Guangnan!" The old man shook his head.

"I've not imagined that Fire Dragon Hermit could be so lucky!" The middle-aged man revealed an admiring look.

"If one doesn't have the corresponding overall strength, it's useless even if he has a pretty good luck. If Fire Dragon Hermit doesn't have a great overall strength, how could he win the bet with our forefather of Guan Clan? Even our forefather told us to do this job well!"

After hearing the elder's words, the middle-aged man felt his heart aching once again, "It's over 600 square miles' bounty land and 10 cities. How much would it cost? Our Guan Clan doesn't make money easily. We've got hundreds of thousands of people surnamed Guan to live; plus their relatives and family dependants. I'm afraid that only our forefather dares to make such a bet with such a high wager. I was told that some branch elders had already quarreled in the clan's Elders' Association..."

The old man replied with a heavy harrumph out of discontent, "They were kicking up a row for such a trifle. Short-sighted. Our forefather's face could never be matched by 10 cities and over 600 square miles' land. Didn't our forefather see that more clearly than them? Even though our forefather had admitted that he had lost the bet; did he need to listen to their opinions? Additionally, now that our forefather could award Fire Dragon Hermit with such things, it indicated that Fire Dragon Hermit must have special abilities that our forefather praised. This man must be unusual if he could promote to an earth knight only after entering the Earth-elements Realm for a few years. That's why our forefather told us to do this job very solemnly!"

"You're right, elder. Without forefather, our Guan Clan would never be so prosperous. We have to save our forefather's face even if we have to give up the last shot in the locker, not to mention that it was just a bit wager. As long as our forefather is on our back, our Guan Clan will be safe and prosperous. If our forefather could

promote to a heavenly knight, our Guan Clan will be much more prosperous. They just bargained with the other elders in the Elders' Association when the grand elder was not there. In the final analysis, they did that only for the benefit of their clansmen. If forefather were at present, they dared not even break wind!"

When they talked, the vehicle had arrived at the gate of the manor of Lord Guangnan. When a guard approached to ask about their identity, the driver passed out an invitation card. After a short while, the gate of the manor had been opened while this vehicle drove inside...

...

Uncle Zhong arrived at Zhang Tie's side and stood aside quietly, watching Zhang Tie feeding those sparrows and pigeons surrounding him.

Previously, Uncle Zhong thought that Zhang Tie might get hang of some animal controlling skill; therefore, he was interested in feeding these little animals. It was also a special cultivation method about controlling animals. However, after observing Zhang Tie's movements for a while, he didn't find any trace that Zhang Tie could control animals. As Uncle Zhong came from the south border of Taixia Country, where there was a long history about controlling animals, he had seen many powerhouses controlling animals; therefore, Uncle Zhong knew something about controlling animals. However, after knowing that Zhang Tie directly took the basin of wheat out of the kitchen without adding any secret medicine into it and didn't utter any strange incantations or animal language without making any strange movements, Uncle Zhong found that Zhang Tie was purely playing with the birds.

It seemed that Zhang Tie was purely interested in feeding birds.

After watching it for a while, Uncle Zhong finally pretended to cough twice.

Coughs in sickness were different than that of reminding someone.

Of course, Zhang Tie could identify it.

After scattering another handful of wheat over the grass, Zhang Tie turned around.

"Uncle Zhong, what's up?"

"Childe Cui, two men are waiting for you in the parlor!"

Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Did Heavens Holding Pavilion dare find trouble here?"

"They're not from Heavens Holding Pavilion, but from the Guan Clan of Lord Mingwu. They came here to fulfill the bet between Childe Cui and Lord Mingwu!"

'Guan Clan of Lord Mingwu? Bet?'

After thinking about it for a second, Zhang Tie remembered that they must come from the clan of Guan Qianchong, the commander of the Black Armor Army. Previously, he bet with Guan Qianchong with the Fire Dragon Bounty Territory in the Earth-elements Realm and won Guan Qianchong's over 600 miles' bounty land and 10 cities. He thought that Guan Clan might find him after a long while or even repudiate the debt by finding him trouble. It was really out of his imagination that Guan Clan could fulfill their bet so fast.

Zhang Tie became thrilled as he directly scattered the rest wheat over the grass like pouring water. Closely after that, he directly threw the basin to a guard dozens of meters away and patted his hands before saying, "Please show me the way!"

Uncle Zhong then led Zhang Tie to the parlor.

"Oh, by the way Uncle Zhong, have you sent my torn clothes to the courtyard of Heavens Holding Pavilion in Xuanyuan Hill?"

"Yes, I have!"

"What did Heavens Holding Pavilion say?"

"I'll tell you about it. According to the people who sent the clothes over there last night, when an elder of Heavens Holding Pavilion saw the big hole on the back of the clothes, he looked pretty bad, but he didn't say anything!"

"Haha, he's right to be silent. Whatever, he could not appreciate me for giving a less to the good-for-nothing knight of Heavens Holding Pavilion!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter.

"Although Heavens Holding Pavilion won't dare to harm you in Xuanyuan Hill, Child Cui has to be alert after leaving Xuanyuan Hill. Like Lord Guangnan said, sometimes these major sects would do bad things for fame and fortune. They seek revenge for the smallest grievance yet pretend to be fair and reasonable!"

Uncle Zhong mentioned the major sects in Taixia Country not out of full respect; instead, he sounded experienced. Zhang Tie realized that Lord Guangnan's Mansion might have conflicts with the major sects in Taixia Country. Even if there wasn't, like major clans, major sects would always have some losers or disgusting guys who behaved like a donkey in a lion's hide.

"Haha, thanks, Uncle Zhong. If they really want to do bad things for fame and fortune in front of me, I will let them know that someone in the world could be both whoremasters and demolition team!"

After hearing Zhang Tie, Uncle Zhong burst out into laughter too.

"Childe Cui, the parlor is in front of you..." After leading Zhang Tie to the front of the parlor, Uncle Zhong directly left. After all, he was the steward of Lord Guangnan's Mansion in Xuanyuan Hill, not Zhang Tie's private steward. As Zhang Tie was not the son-in-law of Lord Guangnan yet, he had to be meticulous in case of incurring a laughingstock due to excessive passion.

After extending his gratitude to Uncle Zhong, Zhang Tie directly entered the parlor.

At the sight of Zhang Tie coming in, the two visitors in the parlor threw a glance at his bald head before standing up and nodding towards Zhang Tie respectfully, "Fire Dragon Hermit!"

As an earth knight, Zhang Tie's position could match the grand elders in Guan Clan and was just a bit lower than Guan Qianchong. Of course, the two people from Guan Clan dared not upstage Zhang Tie.

"Take a seat please!" Zhang Tie came to a chair beside the two people leisurely with a teapot in between. In this way, they could tilt heads and talk with each other more conveniently.

Seeing Zhang Tie sitting down, the two people from Guan Clan sat down too. At this moment, the maids served them tea before leaving politely.

Zhang Tie knew that the two people from Guan Clan were glancing at him stealthily. After taking the cup of tea and having a sip, he uttered, "It's said that you're here to fulfill the bet between me and Commander Guan?"

"Yes, at the order of our forefather, we treasure this thing very much. The moment we received the order of our forefather, we had started to prepare it for you. As it took us some time to prepare over 600 square miles' land and 10 cities and had to mobilize a great amount of fund, we're a bit late. Please do not blame us for that, Fire Dragon Hermit!" When the old man from Guan Clan replied, he slightly lowered his body towards Zhang Tie.

"You're too polite, Commander Guan!" Zhang Tie cupped his hands towards the old man with a solemn look, "When I made a bet with Commander Guan, I was just a bit impulsive, Commander Guan must know the reason. After returning to the earth' surface, I almost forgot about this thing. Actually, you could just take it as a joke between me and Commander Guan. It's just some cities and

over 600 square miles' bounty land. Just forget about it..."

'It's over 600 square miles' land and 10 cities. How could he give it up so generously? The elders of Guan Clan have quarreled more than once in the Elders' Association for this wager. There're many more annoyances. How could he directly decline it? What a great favor it is!' The two representatives of Guan Clan were both moved...

...

Chapter 1118: An Ally in Taixia Country

Zhang Tie really didn't lack money now. Money and land didn't mean too much for him and couldn't relieve his current problem at all. Through Guan Qianchong's help, he covered his secret that he was the apprentice of Zhao Yuan; additionally, Guan Qianchong helped him win an airboat from Feng Yexiao, a grand elder of Taiyi Fantasy Sect. Actually, Guan Qianchong had helped him twice indirectly. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not joking. Although the members of Guan Clan might be unwilling to give him such a wide area of bounty land to Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie really didn't care about that.

Even though he had over 60,000 square miles' bounty land, he could only sleep on one bed. Even if he had mountains of wealth, he could only have some food by chopsticks. When he had enough wealth, his happiness and sense of achievement would have nothing to do with wealth. Zhang Tie had already passed the period of seeking for wealth.

'I've not imagined that Fire Dragon Hermit directly gives up the bounty land which has arisen so many quarrels between our clan elders. Now that he could win the bet with our forefather and could be closely followed by the princess of Lord Guannan, he's indeed not an average person.' The two people from Guan Clan threw a glance with each other as they both saw a bit admiring and bashful look from each other and showed a bit more reverence to Zhang Tie sincerely.

"Fire Dragon Hermit, you're too generous!" The elder from Guan Clan cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie with a solemn look, "Thanks for your good intention, Fire Dragon Hermit. However, as it's the award that you won from Guan Qianchong the forefather of our Guan Clan and our forefather has told us to do this job well, we've already brought you the relevant documents!"

When this Guan elder uttered, he drew his hand over the table

while some thick documents appeared on the teapoy in between. These documents were made of special material, which was more senior than silver paper. All the documents were giving out a dark golden light. Additionally, there were watermarks and three-dimensional concave-convex grains on the surface of those documents, making each paper of these documents unique. Generally, these special grains would appear on gold notes of super great par-value. Contracts would even be marked with secret codes that could only be identified by difference engine and pass the notarization and backup of relevant authorities in Taixia Country; any correction had to undergo a series of procedures; therefore, it was very hard to forge them.

The Guan elder took the first document.

"This document is the certificate of the ownership of all the rest lands in Yangui Mountain Range besides that of Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory. According to the forefather, our Guan Clan bought the rest part of Yangui Mountain Range covering 1 million square miles as the compensation for the wager!"

After putting the first document in front of Zhang Tie, the Guan elder took the second document.

"This document is the asset appraisal report about the total value of the 10 cities inside Fire Dragon Bounty Territory made by the four major asset appraisal agencies in Taixia Country. The total value about the 10 cities varies from 664 million gold coins to 683 million gold coins. They have fully considered the investment cost for the traffic logistics system, the urban asset premium brought by the natural commercial system and demographic dividend and the current urban building cost in Taixia Country. The 4 major asset appraisal agencies would like to assume the collateral responsibilities for the losses that you will suffer because of the adoption of their appraisal report. Guan Clan adopts the maximal value of your asset made by the 4 major asset appraisal agencies in Taixia Country."

After putting the second document in front of Zhang Tie, the Guan elder took the 3rd document.

"This is a document about the drawing right delivered from the Hua People Banks Federation. Anyone who possesses this document could withdraw the deposit of 690 million gold coins or precious metals of the same amount of value from any bank of Hua People Banks Federation. Hua People Banks Federation will provide a guarantee for this amount of money. The deposit of 690 million gold coins has been optimized. If not withdraw them, it would become a fixed deposit in the bank. You will enjoy the interest rate of fixed deposit. If you want to withdraw it partially, the part of deposit that you withdraw would be available to current interest rate while the rest part of deposit still sticks to the fixed interest rate. This amount of money is equal to the compensation for the wager of your 10 cities!"

This was how major clans in Taixia Country behaved!

Watching the three documents in front of him, Zhang Tie sighed with emotion inside, 'How nice! It's perfect. The land area of the rest Yangui Mountain Range is much larger than that of his Fire Dragon Bounty Territory; the drawing right of the 690 million gold coins is more valuable than that of the 10 cities in Fire Dragon Bounty Territory.'

After thinking about it for a while, Zhang Tie only took that document of the ownership of the rest land of Yangui Mountain Range as he pushed the other two documents back to the front of the Guan elder decisively. After that, he said, "I only want to take the rest land of Yangui Mountain Range. Please take back the drawing right of 690 million gold coins. I intend to make friends with Guan Clan, will Guan Clan do me a favor?"

"Erm..." The two people from Guan Clan threw a glance with each other. The Guan elder then replied with a bit embarrassed look, "As we're following the order of our forefather, I really can't make a decision!"

"Could you contact Commander Guan right now? I will talk to him!" Zhang Tie said as he threw a glance at the finger ring on the hand of the Guan elder.

The silver finger ring was wide. There were some beautiful square grains around the finger ring. Compared to common remote-sensing crystal finger rings, this finger ring looked more delicate and senior as it integrated with more than one top-quality remote-sensing crystals. With such a finger ring, he could contact many people at the same time. Zhang Tie estimated that this Guan elder might be able to contact Guan Qianchong directly; therefore, he posed this question.

"Well, I will contact our forefather right away!" The Guan elder nodded before throwing a glance at the document about the drawing right of the 690 million gold coins.

It was 10 cities. If he could save the 10 cities for Guan Clan after contacting his forefather, this Guan elder would definitely be glad to do that.

Like instant messaging tools, they could communicate with each other by remote-sensing crystals very conveniently. After injecting his spiritual energy into one remote-sensing crystal, the Guan elder became silent for one minute in front of Zhang Tie. After that, he became reassured as he took off that finger ring and passed it to Zhang Tie. Meanwhile, he pointed at one square grain on the finger ring before saying, "You could contact my forefather with this remote-sensing crystal in universal plain code!"

After taking that finger ring, Zhang Tie immediately injected his spiritual energy into that piece of remote-sensing crystal and sent a message to the opponent.

"Hi, Commander Guan, I'm Cui Li!"

"Fire Dragon Hermit, according to my juniors, you will accept the rest land of Yangui Mountain Range; however, you want to return the drawing right of the 690 million gold coins to us?"

Given the polite diction, Zhang Tie knew that it should be Guan Qianchong.

"Yes!"

"Why? Do you fear that Guan Clan cannot afford it or have another purpose?"

"Haha, what purpose could I have from Guan Clan? I have enough land and money. Do I want to be the son-in-law of Guan Clan or what? Zhang Tie joked with Guan Qianchong.

"If you really want to be the son-in-law of Guan Clan, given the 10 cities that you returned to Guan Clan, I promise you that you could select 100 women from the young generation of Guan Clan as your wives, how about it?"

Zhang Tie was almost choked by Guan Qianchong's words. As for Guan Qianchong, his juniors were just a matter of figure. Even though those people shared his bloodline, it was nothing serious for him to give 100 of them to others. What a mentality! Was it the mentality of an emperor or a queen ant?

"Haha, Commander Guan, I will not play jokes with you. Just take 690 million gold coins as my return to your favor. Without your care, I could barely win an airboat from Taiyi Fantasy Sect in Lion Fortress. I always give kindness for kindness and hatred for hatred!"

"It's a good reason. I'm glad that you don't want the 690 million gold coins in case of those short-sighted juniors in Guan Clan to quarrel with each other at home which is really boring. We knights don't treasure money too much. The higher level the knights are, the more they neglect those gold and white things. By contrast, commoners think that the value of money is limitless. On the road of cultivation, the more unpromising the guys were, the more they would treasure money. As too many commoners depend on Guan Clan, such a great amount of money would survive them for a period. I, Guan Qianchong, owe you a favor this time!"

"Commander Guan is credible. Guan Clan does a good job. Therefore, you made me a bit bashful!" After sending this message, Zhang Tie continued, "Commander Guan said that too many commoners depended on Guan Clan. I've got a business; I wonder whether Guan Clan is interested in it or not?"

"How large is the business?"

"Given Guan Clan's ability, if you want to do that, you could easily make 100-200 million gold coins a year!"

"If one could make a big fortune easily, the business must be illegal or violating the universal laws. Guan Clan knows many businesses like this; many people want to cooperate with Guan Clan too. However, Guan Clan would never make such kind of money even if we're starved to death!"

Guan Qianchong's words turned sharp.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "Commander Guan, you're right. But besides being illegal and violating the universal laws, actually, there's another exclusive, bright and legal business that you could make a big fortune. Won't Guan Clan do such a business?"

"Is there any business like this in Taixia Country?"

"Previously, there isn't. But since I'm here, there is!"

"If you want to cooperate with Guan Clan, Guan Clan want 50% of the profit as this business is in Taixia Country!"

"No way! But I could consider to promise you the franchise right in one or two provinces of Taixia Country. As Guan Clan are not that influential in other provinces and prefectures of Taixia Country, I will choose other cooperative partners!"

"With only the franchise right in a couple of provinces could Guan Clan easily make 100-200 million gold coins a year?"

"Might be more than that!"

Guan Qianchong was shocked. Although he was a shadow knight,

it didn't represent that he was otherworldly and didn't understand the value of 100-200 million gold coins.

At this moment, Guan Qianchong finally understood why Zhang Tie didn't care about the drawing right of 690 million gold coins. If Zhang Tie really had such a business, 690 million gold coins were really nothing serious in Zhang Tie's eyes. If he could easily make 100-200 million gold coins in one or two provinces a year, how much he could make across Taixia Country annually?

If it was told by a commoner, Guan Qianchong would definitely think that one was boasting. However, as it was told by Zhang Tie, who had defeated him in a bet, Guan Qianchong had to treat it seriously.

"What's that business?"

"It's a secret for the time being. But I promise that this business is legal or doesn't violate the universal laws!"

"Well, Guan Clan will do this business. What does Guan Clan need to do?"

"I've not thought through yet. Commander Guan could have someone contact me. He'd better be able to make decisions in case of troubles!"

"Well, give your finger ring to the one who gave it to you! And, I will tell you a good news for free. The general has to know that you enrolled Liu Xing and the other 6 black-armor fighters as your apprentices. General has a good impression of you and speaks highly of you!"

After hearing Guan Qianchong's words, Zhang Tie became slightly stunned. The one who could be called general by Guan Qianchong must be Du Guyi, the Demon-Suppression General, also a legendary figure in the Earth-elements Realm. Zhang Tie had not imagined that even Du Guyi could receive the news that he enrolled Liu Xing and the other 6 black-armored fighters as

apprentices and have a good impression about him. 'Does good people always have a good fortune?'

...

When Zhang Tie contacted Guan Qianchong, the two representatives of Guan Clan didn't know what Zhang Tie said to the forefather of Guan Clan. As knights had very powerful spiritual energy and consciousness, even though they used a plain code, they could still communicate much faster than the mouth. Only after taking that finger ring for half a minute, Zhang Tie had returned it to the elder of Guan Clan.

Only after taking that finger ring for a few seconds, the Guan elder had thrown a shocked glance at Zhang Tie. Closely after that, this Guan elder took in a deep breath before standing up with a solemn look once again. Under the amazed look of the other Guan representative, he bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie, "According to our forefather, I, Guan Qianyu will stay with Fire Dragon Hermit for your order from today on!"

Not until then did Zhang Tie know that this Guan elder was called Guan Qianyu. Given this name, Zhang Tie immediately knew that the representative word of Guan knights should be "Qian". Therefore, all the human knights with the word "Qian" in the middle of their names should be the knights of Guan Clan.

In Taixia Country, a business that could produce hundreds of millions of gold coins per year would attract the attention of knight-level elders of a clan for sure.

Watching the Guan elder who bowed towards him, Zhang Tie knew that he finally got his first powerful ally in Taixia Country...

Chapter 1119: Setting a Trap

After the flock of sparrows and pigeons in the manor ate up the wheat that Zhang Tie had spread over the grass, they had flown off by flapping their wings. After flying around the garden for a short while, they flew out of the high walls of the manor towards afar...

Pigeons could reach high as they rushed into the sky in the blink of an eye. The flock of sparrows flew away while tweeting. Among those sparrows, some very strong and young sparrows flew towards the emperor's imperial city.

As there were too many birds in Xuanyuan Hill, nobody would pay attention to the movements of some sparrows and pigeons.

...

When the flock of birds flew off the manor, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian had just left the manor by a black limo.

The sound caused by the sparrows flapping their wings in the sky attracted Bai Suxian's attention. Bai Suxian then turned around and watched the sparrows flying over the treetops. Not until the flock of sparrows disappeared did Bai Suxian turn around and watch Zhang Tie with a smile, "It's said that you were feeding birds in the garden just now?"

"Haha, I just waited for you by playing with birds!" Zhang Tie explained casually.

"Can you control animals?" The young sister asked seriously.

After hearing that question, Zhang Tie's heart raced, 'Were my trivial movements discovered by Bai Suxian? No way, although I was feeding birds, I started the two secret methods in the "Gain Section" and "Control Section" of the Great Wilderness Sect silently. As for the secret method in the "Gain Section", I formed special runes in wheat by battle qi and helped some to strengthen some sparrows' health; after that, I control them using the secret

method of the "Control Section". I made them my ears and eyes so that they could "raise or enlarge their army" outside. How could she notice that I was using the secret methods of Great Wilderness Sect ?

'The secret methods in the Great Wilderness Sect are top secret methods in controlling animals. All the secret methods in the Great Wilderness Sect are silent in use. Unless Bai Suxian has also learned the Great Wilderness Sect and has great accomplishment than me in it, she could never discover it.'

"Why do you ask me about this?" Zhang Tie asked leisurely.

"Do you know that I've also learned some animal controlling skill?"

"Of course, I know. When in the Earth-elements Realm, I saw that you had a red spider as your concierge. Finally, I was even drugged by your spirit and raped by you. My good reputation was completely ruined by you overnight!" Zhang Tie let out a long sigh, "Who could imagine that a young sister could put a love potion in the spirit of a man? However, I encountered such a fortunate thing!"

"Stop..." Bai Suxian beat Zhang Tie once with a bashful look. Zhang Tie burst out into laughter.

They sat at the back seats which were isolated from the front seats; therefore, they were not afraid that their words were eavesdropped by the driver.

"I mean it!" Bai Suxian turned solemn, "If a knight grasped some animal controlling skill, it would be very useful in an emergency. In Earth-elements Realm, even a bit of animal controlling skill would be more useful than having a LV 15 battle spirit as my concierge in the hidden place. I learned how to control animals from a guest in my father's mansion. Although it's just a bit, it's enough in a special environment. If you want to learn it, you could go to Lord Guangnan's Mansion with me next time; I will tell my

father and have you learn some animal controlling skill from the guest of the mansion. Whatever, the more skills you grasped, the safer you would be. After learning some animal controlling skill, you would be a bit safer in the Earth-elements Realm if you went there in the future!"

'It turns out Bai Suxian is going to introduce her teacher of animal controlling skill to me.' Zhang Tie was startled too much. Closely after figuring out Bai Suxian's meaning, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside at once. Although he knew that Bai Suxian had a good intention, Zhang Tie still felt it was a bit hilarious, 'As long as I'm free, I could cultivate the Great Wilderness Sect, it's just a matter of time for me to reach the peak of animal controlling skill. Why do I learn any inferior animal controlling skill?' Although Zhang Tie thought in this way, he couldn't tell Bai Suxian what he was thinking about; especially when Bai Suxian was very passionate. Therefore, Zhang Tie just went through the motions.

"Of course, I could. It's nothing bad to learn a bit animal controlling skill. When I go to Lord Guangnan's Mansion with you in the future, I could learn it from a guest instructor in the mansion. And, I heard that animal controlling skill is a major knowledge in the south border of Taixia Country!"

"Previously, when the Great Wilderness Sect was not exterminated, animal controlling skill was predominated in the south border of Taixia Country. Many elders of the Great Wilderness Sect even had knight-level mutated beasts as their battle mounts at that moment. Many knight-level mutated beasts had special abilities which were even more powerful than that of common knights. Additionally, they had telepathy with the elders of Great Wilderness Sect; therefore, when in a fight, one knight-level elder of Great Wilderness Sect could easily defeat more than two common knights!"

"Knight-level mutated beasts? Are there such high-level mutated beasts in the south border?"

"Of course, there're mutated beasts in many places across Taixia Country. However, many mutated beasts have been hunted or driven away over the past hundreds of years as they are too close to cities and human habitations and posed great threats to humans or have special values. Therefore, we could barely see them now. However, the south border of Taixia Country is covered with numerous huge mountains, dense mountain caves and abysses. It's absolutely the paradise of mutated beasts and various animals. After entering that place, even earth knights could not leave safe and sound, not to mention commoners..."

"Now that the mutated beasts and elders of Great Wilderness Sect in the south border are so powerful, how could Great Wilderness Sect be exterminated by others?"

"I was told by the animal controlling teacher that the Great Wilderness Sect was indeed the predominance of the south border previously; they were in their heyday at that time. However, there was also a bad atmosphere among the Great Wilderness Sect . Many cultivators of the Great Wilderness Sect paid special attention to the cultivation of animal controlling skill and gave up the cultivation of battle skills completely. Numerous people were jealous of the Great Wilderness Sutra of the Great Wilderness Sect which was a top treasure. Later on, the Great Wilderness Sect fell from the pinnacle of its power and was finally exterminated by a domineering power overnight. This is a suspension case in Taixia Country."

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the Great Wilderness Sect had such a vice of "tending to go overboard on one subject". However, after realizing that there were so many secret methods in the Great Wilderness Sect , Zhang Tie became reassured, 'As for many disciples even elders in the Great Wilderness Sect , as long as they could reach the highest level of Great Wilderness Sutra , they might be able to solve all the problems. Therefore, they might consider the time in cultivating battle skills as a waste...'

The history of the Great Wilderness Sect made Zhang Tie sigh with emotions inside. Meanwhile, he made a decision inside that he would not make the mistake of the Great Wilderness Sect. 'Compared to those mutated beasts, the human body is the largest treasury. The ultimate purpose of cultivation in battle skills is to open this treasury. No matter what, I would not give up cultivating battle skills. I have to keep the secret that I have the Great Wilderness Sutra . After finishing the plan in Xuanyuan Hill, I will never easily expose my cultivation base in controlling animal.'

"Alas, it's too pitiful!" Zhang Tie let a sigh for the Great Wilderness Sect sincerely, "Is your teacher great?"

"Yes, he's really something!" Bai Suxian nodded, "Now that he's recruited by my father as the guest instructor, of course, he's not usual. My father told me that this instructor was as powerful as the disciples of the Great Wilderness Sect who had reached the 9th floor of the tower. Additionally, some of this instructor's abilities indeed originate from some secret methods left by the Great Wilderness Sect..."

"Disciples who had reached the 9th floor of the tower?" Zhang Tie's look turned weird because Bai Suxian's words reminded him of the All-Spirits Pagoda in his mind sea. He then asked, "The level sounds a bit weird!"

"I don't know it either. I just heard that the levels of animal controllers in the south border almost originated from the Great Wilderness Sect. Generally, the criteria of the Great Wilderness Sect are the criteria of the entire animal controlling system in Taixia Country!"

"Are disciples on the 9th floor of the tower very powerful?"

"Yes, they're very powerful. This instructor could control all the mutated beasts below LV 8!"

"Hmm, it sounds indeed great!" Zhang Tie praised as he thought that, 'If a disciple on the 9th floor of All-spirits Pagoda is powerful,

what about me the disciple who has reached the 15th floor of All-Spirits Pagoda?'

"I feel that you look a bit strange!" Bai Suxian said as she blinked her eyes after glancing at Zhang Tie for a short while suddenly.

"Hehehe, really?" Zhang Tie rubbed his face by fingers, "Perhaps, I was thinking about the affairs between me and Guan Clan and was a bit absent-minded!"

"Oh, you said that you're going to cooperate with Guan Clan in a business in the future, what's that business?"

"We just joined hands to make some alcohol machines!"

"Liar!" Bai Suxian pouted with an unbelievable look.

"I'm not lying!"

"If you lack money, I have some case-dough given by my mom in the south border. You can take it!"

"How much case-dough did your mom give you?"

"8 cities and 1 basin. Among the 8 cities, there's a Class A city. The basin covers about 300,000 square miles. Additionally, I could have over 10 million gold coins' annuity per year from Xuanyuan Hill..."

After hearing her words, Zhang Tie became speechless. Even the "case-dough" of the princess of Taixia Country left many people behind...

"Whatever, the case-dough will follow me when I get married!" Bai Suxian threw a glance at Zhang Tie and lowered her head before whispering tenderly.

After throwing a glance at Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie scratched his finger over her nose as he said, "Money is boring. I'm just looking for an ally in Taixia Country by cooperating with Guan Clan!"

When she thought about Zhang Tie's original identity, Bai Suxian understood something, "But how much could you make from alcohol machines?"

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he said, "You will see after a few months..."

"But one ally is a bit weak!"

"Have you heard about the story of buying horse's bones at the cost of 1,000 gold coins? Starting from Guan Clan, there will be more and more allies!" Zhang Tie revealed a confident smile.

Bai Suxian didn't know what Zhang Tie wanted to do; she just felt that Zhang Tie was setting a trap, a great trap.

...

2 hours later, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian arrived at the Gold and Power Market in Xuanyuan Hill...

Chapter 1120: A Trouble

Before they arrived at Gold and Power Market, the 16-lane main road in Xuanyuan Hill had started to be crowded, causing the vehicles to move at the turtle's speed.

Zhang Tie saw many people getting off their vehicles due to impatience and walking towards Gold and Power Market. He then asked the driver and learned that the [Qian Gate](#) of Gold and Power Market was only over 2,000 m away from here. This was the most crowded section of the road outside Gold and Power Market. He then opened the door and got off the vehicle together with Bai Suxian while telling the driver to return to the manor. He and Bai Suxian would go there by foot.

"If I knew it was gonna be so crowded here, we would have chosen other gates. The other gates of Gold and Power Market are definitely not that crowded. I'm afraid that the greater part of people wants to enter Gold and Power Market through the Qian Gate for a good luck. Therefore, it's especially crowded here!" Bai Suxian complained.

"Hoho, it's just over 2,000 m. We can go there by foot!" Zhang Tie said casually.

"As you say!" Bai Suxian revealed a smile towards Zhang Tie as she went with Zhang Tie arm in arm. As a result, they aroused others' attention at the same time. As she was going to attend the Treasures Meeting with Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian looked more outstanding after dressing up herself delicately.

Gold and Power Market had 8 gates, which corresponded to the [eight diagrams](#) of Hua people. The Qian Gate represented the heavens gate. According to the superstition, the Qian Gate would bring people good luck generally. Therefore, the gate outside the Qian Gate looked a bit crowded.

It was the 3rd day since the Treasures Meeting in Gold and Power

Market started, also the most boisterous period of the entire Gold and Power Market; therefore, many people came here. Among those people who couldn't stand to get off their vehicles and walk towards the Qian Gate, Zhang Tie saw various skin colors, costumes and heard weird voices. Besides someone whom Zhang Tie was sure that they came from the Western Continent, there were some weird people that even Zhang Tie didn't know which subcontinents did they come from. All of them were walking towards the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market on the sidewalk.

After observing those people in strange clothes and voices carefully, Zhang Tie found that all of them had great battle strength. Most of them were above LV 13. Some of them were even knights. They kept looking at the scenarios on the roadsides and the vehicles coming and going with amazed, shocked and a bit restrained looks like rustics. Some minorities' eyes even contained a bit greed about the prosperity of Xuanyuan Hill. However, they all hid their greed meticulously. Taixia Country was so powerful that it could shatter all the foreign people's any ambition about this continent except for demons. Actually, according to Zhang Tie's knowledge, many major clans in Taixia Country were on the back of these subcontinents and dominated the vicissitudes of those countries on the subcontinents.

6 foreign people were walking in front of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian. They were all tall and muscled all over in vests made of animal hides; especially the muscles on their naked arms which looked like hills. The front part of their heads was bald. There was a braid behind their head. Besides, there were some odd-looking bones on their braids and heavy weapons such as axes over their waists, which looked pretty fierce.

When the foreign people walked, they kept talking loudly. Two of them even rudely pointed at those buildings on the roadsides and some passers-by on the streets. The 6 foreign people almost blocked half of the sidewalk.

2 of the 6 people were black iron knights; one black iron knight was a bit elder with some grey hair; the other black iron knight looked a bit younger. The other 4 people were battle demons and battle spirits. Zhang Tie didn't understand what they were talking about. Such guys were as trivial as ants in Zhang Tie's eyes even the two knights. They could not even match chickens or dogs. Therefore, he just threw a glance at those rude guys before moving his eyes away.

As there were too many people on the sidewalk, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian just stayed 5-6 m behind the 6 foreign people and slowly approached the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market.

Although it was Zhang Tie's first time to visit the Gold and Power Market, Bai Suxian had come here for a few times. Therefore, Bai Suxian started to introduce Zhang Tie about Gold and Power Market cheerily.

Perhaps, Bai Suxian's voice was too silvery and pleasant to hear. After Bai Suxian spoke for less than 2 minutes, a foreign guy in front of her had turned around to look at Bai Suxian. At the sight of her, this foreign guy's copper-bell sized eyes instantly burned. Closely after that, he pointed at Bai Suxian and started to utter loudly; as a result, his partners and that younger black iron knight turned around at the same time.

At the sight of Bai Suxian, all the foreign people's eyes sparkled like how hungry wolves caught sight of a lamb. Their sounds grew louder. That young black iron knight even swallowed his saliva and licked his lips.

"Rude!" Bai Suxian uttered a cold harrumph at the sight of those foreign people as she tilted her head with a furious look. Zhang Tie also frowned slightly.

However, they were on the street of Xuanyuan Hill. She could not beat them and kill them because they looked at her for a short while and pointed at her with louder voices. Otherwise, others

would criticize her bullying the weak. Therefore, Zhang Tie pinched her hand to warn her to not become impulsive.

As Zhang Tie was on her side, Bai Suxian just glared at those foreign people silently.

However, Bai Suxian was too beautiful and sexy. Even though she just glared at them, she still looked pretty seductive and coquettish. Not until the old black iron knight turned around and threw a glance at Bai Suxian and said something loudly did the other foreign people shut up and turn back unwillingly.

"Hurrumph, if it's in the south border, I will have people chop off their heads right away!" Bai Suxian said mercilessly.

"Forget about them. These guys might have not seen the world. Barbarians are uncivilized. It's normal for them to be rude! But I wonder how did so many foreign people enter the Gold and Power Market?"

"Most of the foreign people who come to Xuanyuan Hill during the Treasures Meeting from all the other continents and subcontinents should be invited by Gold and Power Law or some major clans in Taixia Country. Some of them are here to do business by trading treasures; some were here to see the world; some were invited by Gold and Power Law or those major clans for a trip so as to maintain their relationships. The major clans or big sects such as Gold and Power Law could dispatch an airship to a subcontinent to carry all their guests to the Gold and Power Market, which would not take them too much time on the way..."

"Wuh, I see!" Zhang Tie nodded. Bai Suxian's words reminded him indirectly that someone in Ice and Snow Wilderness might attend this Treasures Meeting.

'Theoretically, Ice and Snow Wilderness is not qualified to be invited. However, it depends. If those bears were invited by Golden Roc Bank, they might really come to Xuanyuan Hill to broaden their vision. I have a remote-sensing crystal necklace in my space-

teleportation item which could be used to contact Ice and Snow Wilderness. Last time, I used it to contact Pontiff Sarlin and told him that I was safe in case they were worried about me when I had just been wanted by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country. I even told Pontiff Sarlin to not contact me unless it's necessary and keep my secret in case they were implicated. From then on, Pontiff Sarlin didn't contact me anymore.'

Sometimes, no news was the best news.

Bai Suxian's words reminded Zhang Tie to contact Pontiff Sarlin when he returned to the bedroom in the evening. As he had not met those people on Ice and Snow Wilderness for a long time, honestly, Zhang Tie missed them a bit.

...

Over 2,000 m's distance would not even cost commoners much time, not to mention Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian. They had already seen the high gate tower of the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market only after a few minutes.

The entire area of Gold and Power Market in Xuanyuan Hill was almost like that of an independent small city. The gate tower of Gold and Power Market was also especially high and magnificent.

As too many people wanted to enter Gold and Power Market from the Qian Gate, it became a bit crowded inside the Qian Gate.

As a result, a conflict was destined to happen.

After Zhang Tie promoted to an earth knight, he had been able to hide his qi casually. If not earth knights on the same realm, even though Zhang Tie didn't activate hiding skill in a normal state, commoners, even black iron knights could not see through Zhang Tie's real battle strength. Few people besides Zhang Tie could identify that he was an earth knight.

Bai Suxian dressed up herself delicately in a beautiful alchemist's necklace that Zhang Tie had not seen which might contain

different attributes. One attribute of that necklace was to hide one's qi to a certain degree. After putting on it, Bai Suxian's qi was only like that of a LV 10 fighter.

Therefore, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian didn't feel that formidable.

When they gradually entered the Gold and Power Market, two of those foreign people who were walking in front of them suddenly exchanged a glance with each other before revealing a bit weird smile towards Bai Suxian's sexy figure. Closely after that, they pushed to Bai Suxian's side. One of them purposefully collided with one guy on his side as he thrust forward his belly towards Bai Suxian's butt...

northwest gate

eight combinations of three whole or broken lines formally used in divination.

Chapter 1121: Seeking for Death

Kind-hearted people would be bullied, docile horses would be mounted. This proverb came true on Zhang Tie once again. Zhang Tie didn't care about these foreign people's rudeness previously; he had not imagined that these guys could behave severer.

At this moment, honestly, Zhang Tie was really infuriated.

Even though he was facing them with his back, Zhang Tie could also sense what happened behind him. Without even looking around, he had known what the two foreign b*stards were thinking about.

It was the young black iron knight who had thrust his belly forward towards Bai Suxian's butt. Even though Zhang Tie was facing him with his back, he could still sense clearly the b*stard's coarse smile and the ugly bulge at his crotch.

Perhaps, this foreign knight thought that it was nothing serious for him to bully this Hua beauty in the crowd.

However, it was in Xuanyuan Hill, this guy was too audacious. Zhang Tie even wondered why this guy could be so audacious. After coming to Xuanyuan Hill for so many days, Zhang Tie found that all the Hua knights were mannered, not to mention these knights coming from subcontinents.

When that guy was about 20 cm away from Bai Suxian, Bai Suxian had already released her protective battle qi, which formed a firm isolation. The moment that guy touched her protective battle qi, his smile suddenly froze while Zhang Tie's furious kick had arrived at his crotch.

Closely after that, an earth-shaking miserable shriek sounded among the crowd near the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market. At the same time, a blood mist formed at the tall foreign people's crotch while he was sent over 10 m high in the air and fell down

heavily like a pile of mud. He then started to twitch while a great amount of fresh blood spurted out of his eyes, ears, mouth and nostrils.

All the surrounding people hurriedly scattered in all directions. However, none of them stayed too far away. Whatever, everybody liked to join in the fun. Additionally, few people here were afraid of trouble. There were many Hua and foreign knight-level powerhouses in the surroundings.

At the sight of this scene, another rude foreign guy who approached here together with that foreign black iron knight instantly widely opened his eyes as he roared. At the same time, he drew out his huge ax and aimed towards Zhang Tie's head.

"You're seeking for death!" Bai Suxian roared. When that tough man was less than 2 m away from Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian had already released a purple battle qi palm towards him.

The foreign fighter was also a LV 14 battle demon with a great battle strength; pitifully, he chose the wrong opponent. Bai Suxian was a knight, a vicious female knight who attacked him out of fury.

When Bai Suxian's battle qi touched the foreign fighter who was raising the huge ax, the upper body of that foreign fighter instantly blew up into pieces. Closely after that, his lower body fell onto the ground while his huge ax was still flying towards Zhang Tie due to great inertia...

When that guy launched a strike towards Zhang Tie, the other three foreign people drew out their portable weapons at the same time although they were a bit far. Closely after that, they rushed towards Zhang Tie with bloody eyes while shrieking loudly. The old foreign knight changed his face immediately as he shouted towards them; however, it was too late...

When the old foreign knight shouted, he also moved. However, he didn't run towards Zhang Tie, but hurriedly towards the knight

who had been lying still on the ground like a pile of mud due to Zhang Tie's kick...

When the huge ax was approaching him, Zhang Tie just revealed a faint smile. Watching the three rude foreign people rushing towards him while shrieking loudly, Zhang Tie leisurely stretched out his left hand as he faintly bent over his middle finger tenderly like picking a flower before flicking onto the blade of the huge ax like flicking off a drop of dew from a pedal of a fresh flower...

With a sound "Weng...", the wuthering huge ax uttered a silvery sound. Closely after that, the dead huge ax turned into a cheerful bird as it turned around and flew towards the three foreign people after drawing a changing curve in the air as fast as a lightning bolt.

The three foreign people released their protective battle qis at the same time. Two of them were battle demons, the other one was a battle spirit. However, in front of that cheerful bird, their protective battle qis were as fragile as a piece of paper.

After the revolving ax broke through a foreign guy's chest, it drilled out of his back. After that, it entered the second foreign guy's chest. After penetrating three people's chests consecutively, the ax head didn't even carry a bit blood as it entered the slate on the ground with a sound "Tseng", exposing a small part of metal handle above the ground about half a step away from the foreign knight who was lying on the ground, twitching all over.

Not until the huge ax entered the earth did the three foreign people fall onto the ground.

After hearing the sound when the huge ax entered the earth, the elder foreign knight raised his head and threw a glance at Zhang Tie and the other three corpses. Closely after that, he changed his face once again; however, he didn't have time to say anything; instead, he took out a vial of black medicament and rapidly poured it into the mouth of that young knight whose head was in his arms.

Pitifully, this vial of medicament didn't work anymore. Because

that guy who spurted out dense fresh blood just now was now spurting out pieces of guts. Before the medicament was absorbed, it had been spurted out together with the broken pieces of guts. That guy's eyes had already jumped out of eye sockets and were hanging on his face, making it terrifying and disgusting. The former fierce face looked like a dead dog being rolled by a steam armored vehicle...

Before that vial of black medicament was fully poured into his mouth, the paralyzed foreign guy had spurted out his last piece of black gut. Closely after that, he tilted his head and lost his last breath completely.

Zhang Tie's kick directly killed that foreign black iron knight by breaking all of his muscles, bones and guts before this black iron knight released his protective battle qi.

The elder foreign knight suddenly raised his head as he shouted loudly. At the same time, he glared at Zhang Tie out of fury. Zhang Tie also watched him icily.

The elder foreign knight dared not move. Because Zhang Tie's merciless eye light had evidently revealed a message——If you dare move, you will die, which made him feel cold all over. It was his first time to smell death and terror since he came to Taixia Country.

The huge ax that entered the ground next to that foreign knight was a warning.

Even now, Zhang Tie still hid his battle qi. Even so, his prestige as an earth knight was still hard to be covered.

Although that dead black iron knight didn't make preparation for the coming battle and failed to release his protective battle qi, his death by one kick could still indicate that this was a top earth knight.

It was pretty silent at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market,

except for the sound of taking deep breaths.

Everybody could predict that there would be a conflict. Many people were ready for joining the fun by releasing their protective battle qis. However, nobody could imagine that the conflict could come to an end so fast. From the foreign knight's thrust towards Bai Suxian's back to that 5 of the 6 foreign people's death in a split second, the entire process lasted less than 10 seconds.

As the proverb went, outsiders would join the fun; however, insiders would pay attention to the skills. At this moment, those knight-level powerhouses among the people were all immersed in the realm when Zhang Tie flicked off that huge ax like picking a flower. That movement was extremely marvelous. Since the huge ax was flicked off, the icy steel of that huge ax seemed to have become a spiritual living being. In the blink of an eye, the lives of two battle demons and one battle spirit had withered like leaves, spraying their blood over the ground. The entire process was fierce, brutal and extremely poignant.

"Earth knight..." Someone whispered while looking at Zhang Tie in an awe-stricken manner.

Bai Suxian also threw an icy glance at that elder foreign knight as she told Zhang Tie, arm in arm, "Let's go!"

These corpses were like disgusting flies and mosquitoes for Bai Suxian. As the flies and mosquitoes seek for death themselves, it was not her fault. The princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion didn't even feel that it was anything serious.

"Nobody could leave..." An intense yet sharp voice suddenly sounded inside Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market. Along with this voice, a thin guy with a long face and sparse beard in the high-mountain crown and a set of golden Hua clothes pushed through the crowd and entered the open land before the Qian Gate.

At the sight of those corpses, especially that young knight's corpse, the guy with the long face and sparse beard suddenly

changed his face as if he were the doomsday. His eyes almost popped out of his eye sockets. At the same time, his voice raised as if he was crying, "Ahh, who, who dared kill our VIPs in Gold and Power Market?"

Chapter 1122: Meeting Han Clan Once Again

At the sight of this commanding guy with the long face and sparse beard, the foreign knight who was shocked too much to move instantly stood up as he pointed at Zhang Tie and roared in gibberish.

Zhang Tie just listened to his words in an impatient way while pricking up his ears by one hand with crossed arms.

Although Zhang Tie didn't understand the words of that foreign elder knight, he understood the words of this guy with the long face and sparse beard. This guy turned around and watched Zhang Tie while narrowing his eyes. Closely after that, he rolled his eyes as he suddenly told the two people on his side while pointing at Zhang Tie, "This guy dared kill people at the gate of Gold and Power Market in the public. I doubt that he's a demon or a mole of Heavens Reaching Church. Catch him and interrogate him. After that, send him to the Supreme Court!"

After hearing his words, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter. At the sight of this guy with the long face and sparse beard, Zhang Tie had known that he was only LV 8. Although the two guys on his side looked stout, they were only LV 13. A LV 8 trivial role told two LV 13 ants to catch an earth knight. What a joke!

This guy with the long face and sparse beard unconsciously reminded Zhang Tie of Samira whom he met in Blackhot City. There were always such trivial figures on each continent. They shared a commonplace, namely, as they had been used to assume the authority of the forces and figures on their side as their own for a long time, they felt that they were also growing powerful. Gradually, they would lose their awe as they felt that they could solve all the problems with the forces on their back. Therefore, their words would even make Heavenly knights feel bashful.

In the past, Zhang Tie might talk with such a person for a short

while; however, now, Zhang Tie even lost his interest in talking with them.

After hearing that guy's order, the two LV 13 battle generals exchanged a glance with each other as they intended to move forward to catch Zhang Tie.

"If anyone of you dares to move, this grandma will break him into pieces just like those lying on the ground!" Bai Suxian glared at the two fighters who intended to move forward, "How dare you trivial ants stretch out your claws towards this grandma? As we're all Hua people, I gave you a warning, if you dared to move one step forward, I'd kill you!"

The two LV 13 battle generals threw a glance at those broken pieces on the ground before moving their eyes onto Bai Suxian. They then hesitated and dared not move anymore. The two people were not idiots. The moment Bai Suxian's knight's consciousness targeted them, the two people had already sensed it. Like rabbits being pressed down by lion's claws, the two people were brave enough as they didn't turn around and escape away.

That foreign knight pointed at Bai Suxian in gibberish once again.

"This woman killed people too, She's on the side of that man. Catch them all. It's in the Gold and Power Market of Xuanyuan Hill, they dare never resist you!" The guy with the long face and sparse beard jumped up once again.

At this moment, with a sound of "Pah...", the guy with the long face and sparse beard went around at once. At the same time, his face turned swollen. He then glanced around with a confused look, "Who hit me? Ahh, who hit me? Come out if you're a man..."

Zhang Tie moved too fast that the guy's eyes couldn't even capture Zhang Tie's movements. Even though Zhang Tie slapped him in the public, he could not see who hit him at all. Only a few knights among the onlookers could barely see that it was Zhang

Tie who slapped him.

Zhang Tie moved one step forward and slapped him; closely after that, he moved one step back. As it was too fast, his movements had exceeded the utmost limit of the visual sense of commoners. As a result, others felt that Zhang Tie was just standing still at the original place.

"Pah..." one more slap.

The second one was a bit severer than the former one as it directly sent some teeth of the guy with the long face and sparse beard flying away, causing him to revolve a few circles before falling down severely, his hat skew to the other direction. Grasping the chance, the two LV 13 battle generals hurriedly ran over there to help him stand up.

After being slapped twice, that guy's face had been as swollen as that of a pig's head. The moment he stood up, someone among the onlookers had started to laugh at him.

Most of the onlookers were Hua people. As this guy directly put a label on Zhang Tie who was also Hua at the sight of the conflict between Hua people and foreign people without asking about the reason by assuming the authority of the forces on his back, he didn't leave a good impression to all the other Hua people. When they saw him being slapped, they burst out into laughter unscrupulously at once.

Right then, the crowd near the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market seemed to have separated by an invisible great strength while three more people came over here.

At the sight of the people in the front, Zhang Tie's eyes faintly narrowed.

Given that guy's qi, Zhang Tie knew that he was also an earth knight. However, what made Zhang Tie narrow his eyes was not the level of that earth knight, but his look.

That man's face reminded Zhang Tie of the damned "young master" that he had killed on the airboat of God and Power Law.

The earth knight in the front looked similar to that young master. Additionally, the two people both looked a bit gloomy. However, this guy looked a bit elder than that young master. With a handlebar mustache, this earth knight's domineering qi felt firmer. This guy was followed by two swarthy, aggressive black iron knights.

At the sight of this man, the guy who had been slapped twice by Zhang Tie hurriedly moved forward like a dog as he pointed at Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian and wanted to say something in an embarrassed way...

The earth knight with a handlebar mustache slightly frowned. Without even looking at that guy with the long face and sparse beard, he directly waved his arm as he said calmly, "It's fine, it's none of your business here, you can leave!"

After hearing his words, the guy with the long face and sparse beard quivered all over as he hurriedly lowered his head and left the crowd quietly.

When the elder foreign knight caught sight of this earth knight with a handlebar mustache, he hurriedly shut up as if he was afraid of that earth knight pretty much. Meanwhile, he stood on one side tamely and silently.

The earth knight with a handlebar mustache glanced around those corpses and that elder foreign knight in the ring. When he moved his eyes onto Zhang Tie, he looked a bit gloomier.

"Who are you?" That man asked icily.

"Who are you?" Zhang Tie maintained a calm look as he flicked off the earwax from his fingernail, "Before you ask about other's name, don't you introduce yourself? It's the basic etiquette in Taixia Country, a nation of propriety!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, that earth knight with a handlebar mustache became silent while the two swarthy black iron knights couldn't stand to move one step forward. However, that earth knight slightly raised his hand to stop them.

Bai Suxian looked a bit solemn. As a knight, she could also feel the strong killing qi given out from the two black iron knights. The killing qi was formed among mountains of corpses and the bloody sea. Bai Suxian could probably defeat one of the two black iron knights independently; however, it would be a bit difficult for her to deal with two of them at the same time because she faintly felt that the two black iron knights' killing qi could integrate with each other. The two knights probably were proficient in a powerful joint attack skill which could increase their battle strength sharply. Benefited from this joint attack skill, the two black iron knights' battle strength might even surpass that of the 3-in-1 battle formation of common knights.

Only after throwing a distant glance at the two swarthy black iron knights, Zhang Tie had grinned. At the sight of Zhang Tie's faint smile, the two swarthy black iron knights felt their hearts pounding by a heavy iron hammer at the same time. As a result, they changed their faces.

With sharp knight's consciousness, the two swarthy black iron knights could evidently feel that Zhang Tie was telling them——In front of me, you're just chickens and dogs who are going to be sold with labels on your heads. Even if you join hands with each other, you're not qualified to fight me. You'd better save your loyalty...

The earth knight with a handlebar mustache slightly narrowed his eyes before bursting out into laughter, which sounded a bit icy instead of being passionate. Closely after that, he said, "This humble man is Han Yuanhong, the Bright Gold Master of Gold and Power Law, also the master of Gold and Power Market. May I know your name, younger brother? Which sect and clan do you come from?"

"This humble man is Cui Li, the master of Iron-Dragon Sect in Yangui Mountain Range of Northeast Military Region!" Zhang Tie also replied with a smile.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had already confirmed that Han Yuanhong was the very son of Han Gongang, the finance minister of Taixia Country, also the elder brother of the d**chebag young master that he killed on the airboat. 'The real name of the young master that I killed is Han Yuantu. Given their names and looks, Han Yuantu and Han Yuanhong must be brothers. The other identity of Han Zhengfang the finance minister is the master of Gold and Power Law. What a family! Additionally, the father and the two sons are all knights, one shadow knight, two earth knights. Such a clan must be in its heyday in Taixia Country.'

"In Xuanyuan Hill, a life for a life. Knight is not an exception. Younger brother Cui Li, I've not imagined that you could make such a big mistake in Xuanyuan Hill the moment you established a sect! You're still too young!" Han Yuanhong let out a sigh with emotion, which sounded full of pity; however, his words were full of killing intent.

Chapter 1123: A Fierce Battle

Given Han Yuanhong's words, he must want to kill Zhang Tie. Therefore, Bai Suxian was driven mad. Raising her eyebrows, she wanted to refute him. However, Zhang Tie stopped her by pinching her hand at once. Closely after that, he burst out into laughter, which could be heard by so many people nearby...

Zhang Tie's laughter was presumptuous and blatant as if he had heard something extremely hilarious. With Zhang Tie's laughter, Han Yuanhong's pitiful face became a bit stiff.

"I was wondering why some vulgar foreign fighters from a subcontinent dare to behave so blatantly in Xuanyuan Hill by treating Hua laws as sh*t and Hua people's dignity as nothing. How dare they do such a rude thing to Hua woman? It turns out that big figures like Han Yuanhong are on the back of these vulgar foreign people. Han Yuanhong, your subordinates said that those vulgar foreign people were VIPs invited by the Gold and Power Market. They must be your VIPs. Han Yuanhong, as a Hua knight, you're managing Gold and Power Market on behalf of the Gold and Power Law. Even if you don't stand on our side; at least, you should be fair. However, on such a critical point, you confuse right and wrong and stand on the side of these foreign people without even figuring out the reason. The moment you opened your mouth, you would like to kill a Hua earth knight who has made rich military exploits in the Earth-elements Realm by killing numerous demons. I wonder whether you're narrow-minded, blind, deaf or treat Hua knights as your enemy? How could such a person rule the Gold and Power Market in Xuanyuan Hill? What a shame of Gold and Power Law! I, Cui Li don't have a friend like you. Neither do I want you to call me younger brother Cui Li!"

Zhang Tie exerted his utmost to speak loudly. As a result, it could spread over 100 square miles.

Han Yuanhong's words could only be heard by people at present;

however, Zhang Tie's words could be heard by everyone in the block near Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the boisterous Qian Gate became quiet in a split second. All the surrounding people, especially so many Hua people admired Zhang Tie and spoke highly of Zhang Tie inside as they glanced at Han Yuanhong with a weird look.

Han Yuanhong wanted to kill Zhang Tie; however, Zhang Tie wanted to nail Han Yuanhong onto the column of stigma.

Hua people hated traitors the most; especially those prestigious traitors. Almost everybody wanted to kill such traitors.

Zhang Tie's words were equal to swearing that Han Yuanhong was a traitor.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Han Yuanhong changed his face immediately.

As a prestigious earth knight in Gold and Power Law, Han Yuanhong ruled Gold and Power Market; additionally, his father was the finance minister of Taixia Country. After being in this position for a long time, he had been used to flattering words and smiles. Even those major clans and sects of Taixia Country who didn't fawn on rich and powerful persons would treat him politely and respectfully given his overall strength, position and his father. Actually, Han Yuanhong was equal to a young master of the top 7 sects in Taixia Country.

After being in such a high position and living such a dignified life for so long, unavoidably, he had formed some stereotypes. Take today's situation as an instance, as Taixia Country was too large with so many knights, honestly, Han Yuanhong had not heard about Cui Li at all. He sniffed at the status of the master of a rustic sect called Iron-Dragon Sect too. Inevitably, he despised Zhang Tie more or less. In Han Yuanhong's opinion, now that an earth knight killed his VIPs in his private territory, as long as he showed his

identity, of course, Cui Li would not dare butt head with him. Therefore, Cui Li would be trapped by his words and lose his initiative. As a result, even if he couldn't kill Cui Li, he would at least scrape the skin of this silly muscled man. It was not his first time to meet and deal with such an earth knight. In the final analysis, he didn't think that Cui Li could pose a threat to him at all; instead, he just thought that Zhang Tie was under his control.

Han Yuanhong didn't know the real identity of Cui Li; however, Zhang Tie knew the real identity of Han Yuanhong. Additionally, Zhang Tie even knew his father's identity and the top secret and the fatal loophole of Han Clan.

Zhang Tie had already killed Han Yuanhong's brother. This time, he planned to kill his dad in Xuanyuan Hill, and Han Yuanhong. In Zhang Tie's eyes, the father and the two sons of Han family were all his enemies. He would not feel good until he killed them all. When they met for the first time just now, Han Yuanhong even prepared to control Zhang Tie step by step through word game; however, Zhang Tie grasped the opportunity and directly attacked his opponent's fatal loophole without sparing any chance for Han Yuanhong to quibble at the risk of his own life. At this moment, Gold and Power Law, Bright Gold Master of Gold and Power Law and the finance minister were nothing but sh*t in Zhang Tie's eyes. Zhang Tie didn't fear about offending Han Yuanhong openly. Whatever, he was here to uproot this malignant tumor in Xuanyuan Hill. Therefore, he didn't worry about their revenge at all.

When two parties met on a narrow path, the braver one would win the battle!

Zhang Tie's words infuriated Han Yuanhong at once. Not until then did Han Yuanhong realize that this tough guy's mouth was even sharper than blades. Being utterly different than all the previous earth knights that he had met before, this earth knight didn't even mean to treat him courteously but without sincerity.

"Cui Li, don't talk nonsense and cast wild aspersions at me!" Han Yuanhong hurriedly shouted loudly so that all the others at present could hear it clearly as a counterattack, "You've killed the Prince Sricise of Orkey Empire in Newcrescence Subcontinent and his bodyguards. It's the holy war. As the pillar of humans, of course, our Hua people should make ourselves an example in accordance with the law for the sake of our authority among foreign people. Only in this way could we join hands with each other to fight demons. However, as a Hua knight, you discriminate foreign people so much; you bully the weak by force in the Treasures Meeting of Xuanyuan Hill and killed a foreign prince and a knight in the public. If not deal with you, many foreign knights would feel disappointed. As a result, our Hua people would lose alliance in the holy war. Additionally, who had seen that the Prince Sricise and his subordinates did anything rude to the Hua woman in the public? However, everybody had witnessed that you killed people here!"

Although they were just quarreling with each other, it could even match the fierce battle between two earth knights at their full efforts. Zhang Tie put a label of a traitor on Han Yuanhong; Han Yuanhong made a counterattack at once by putting a label on Zhang Tie that Zhang Tie discriminated foreign people and intended to destroy Hua people's arrangement in the holy war. In such a fierce battle, the loser would lose all standing and reputation in the blink of an eye and face a frustrated future at the risk of his life.

"Hahaha, what a joke! Han Yuanhong, why not ask about my experiences in the Earth-elements Realm? When this old Cui fought demons with foreign brothers such as Cecilia and Bolam in the Earth-elements Realm shoulder to shoulder, drunk watermelon spirit in the first abyss at the risk of our lives, where were you? When this old Cui fought tens of thousands of demon knights with tens of thousands of foreign human knights in Tiewei Mountain, where were you? Who would discriminate his own

brothers who fought demons together with him at the risk of their own lives? Who would discriminate his comrades-in-arms who shared the same bottle of liquor with him? In the eyes of this Cui, there are only brothers and enemies. If we're brothers, we would safeguard each other by blades and our own blood; if we're enemies, we would deal with them by blades and our own blood. Lip service doesn't work for me!"

"Good!"

The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, an exclamation in unison had drifted from the Qian Gate. As Zhang Tie's last words touched them. Such a hot-blooded declaration could not be made without experiences on the battlefield. Therefore, Zhang Tie won a resonance at once.

Many foreign knights changed their eye light at Zhang Tie after hearing Han Yuanhong's words. In Taixia Country, there were indeed Hua people who despised foreign people. However, after hearing Zhang Tie's words; especially when Zhang Tie mentioned the names of some foreign knights who had battle experience in the Earth-elements Realm, even the surrounding foreign knights started to respect Zhang Tie. Such a man was a real knight, a real fighter. The greater half of those people who hailed Zhang Tie were foreign knight-level powerhouses.

Zhang Tie adopted a speaking skill when he mentioned Tiewei Mountain. Actually, Zhang Tie's words contained two meanings: first, Zhang Tie formed a large battle formation with foreign knights and fought tens of thousands of demon knights; second, Zhang Tie joined hands with the large battle formation of human knights to fight tens of thousands of demon knights. Actually, the second meaning was precise. However, in the current situation, all the onlookers would take the first meaning. He was not telling a lie. Because Zhang Tie had indeed killed a lot of demon knights in Tiewei Mountain. He gained his bounty land because of his military exploits in Tiewei Mountain. However, Zhang Tie was

sure that Han Yuanhong didn't know the name list of all the human knights who formed the huge battle formation in Tiewei Mountain; therefore, he was not afraid of the oral counterattack of the opponent. At this critical moment, he needed to overwhelm Han Yuanhong by momentum and cause him to be speechless.

The surrounding applause made Han Yuanhong's face to become completely gloomy...

Chapter 1124: Genuine Meeting of Minds

What made Han Yuanhong's face gloomier was that more and more people poured towards the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market as they talked with each other; actually, many people directly ran over here from outside; instead from inside.

Zhang Tie's loud voice shocked too many people inside the Gold and Power Market too.

Han Yuanhong had not been such embarrassed in his own territory. Watching more and more people gathering around him, Han Yuanhong threw an icy glance at Zhang Tie before gritting his teeth.

"Whatever, the fact is that you've killed people at Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market. Arrest Cui Li!" Han Yuanhong roared.

"Who dares to move?" Zhang Tie's eyes sparkled like a lightning bolt as his battle qi tornado immediately rushed into the sky with a real fire-dragon as long as about 1,500 m behind him. The fire-dragon image rose up in the air with a yelp that rent the air. Closely after that, it dove downwards by flapping its wings and suspended near the Qian Gate. As a result, it became dark at once near the Qian Gate. Such a domineering fire-dragon image aroused all the others' exclamations at once.

Han Yuanhong didn't imagine the two points today: first, he didn't imagine that Zhang Tie had completely figured out the background of Han Clan. He wanted to deal with Zhang Tie by the fact that Zhang Tie killed people in Xuanyuan Hill; however, he didn't imagine that Zhang Tie didn't come to terms at all; second, Han Yuanhong didn't imagine that Zhang Tie really dared fight him in the public. It was not in other places, but in Xuanyuan Hill. If they fought here, they had to assume the corresponding outcome.

Facing such a single man who was not afraid of fighting him

verbally and physically, all the means that Han Yuanhong used to deal with those earth knights and black iron knights didn't work any longer. Given Zhang Tie's current look, he didn't even care that it was in Gold and Power Market. Therefore, he couldn't arrest Zhang Tie without a battle.

'Should I start the battle?'

Han Yuanhong hesitated. At the sight of Zhang Tie's fire-dragon image, Han Yuanhong had known that he met a tricky guy today. If he really started the battle, almost half of the Gold and Power Market would be destroyed. Although knights could not fly in Xuanyuan Hill, their battle strength and destructive power remained unchanged.

"Who dares to move?" When Han Yuanhong became hesitated, another roar like that of Zhang Tie's drifted from inside Gold and Power Market. Along with this roar, a shadow darted towards here from dozens of meters away on the top of those buildings on both roadsides. Closely after that, he landed beside Zhang Tie steadily, breaking many slates into pieces.

Although he was short and thin, he still revealed a mountain-like overwhelming qi.

"Elder brother, it's you..." Zhang Tie watched Mountain Lifting Hermit who was descending from the sky surprisingly. He had not imagined that he could meet Mountain Lifting Hermit once again in Xuanyuan Hill after leaving the Earth-elements Realm.

It had been a few years since they separated from each other in the hieron's ruins. Mountain Lifting Hermit looked as same as that when Zhang Tie met him for the first time——high nose, high forehead, some silver hair near his ears, slim sparkling eyes, It seemed that Mountain Lifting Hermit had fully recovered. Additionally, his cultivation base had improved a bit.

Mountain Lifting Hermit watched Zhang Tie with a faint, warm smile, "A few days ago, I received the news from my old friend in

the Earth-elements Realm. He said that you were still alive and had promoted to an earth knight. Furthermore, you made remarkable military exploits in Tiewei Mountain and was rewarded with a bounty land before leaving Earth-elements Realm. I was thinking to look for you after attending this Treasures Meeting; I've not imagined that I could hear your voice here. Therefore, I came here to take a look. What a coincidence!"

Mountain Lifting Hermit was always silent. Now that he could say so many words this time, it indicated that he must be very thrilled.

"Elder brother, wait for me on one side, there might be a bloody battle in the Gold and Power Market today. If I could survive the battle, I will talk about the old days with you!" Zhang Tie told Mountain Lifting Hermit solemnly.

After throwing a glance at Han Yuanhong and his two subordinate knights, Mountain Lifting Hermit revealed a faint smile, "Younger brother, are you looking down upon me? Even my life is saved by you. Today, this elder brother will accompany you to climb a mountain of swords or plunge into a sea of flames, whether it's in Xuanyuan Hill or not. As long as younger brother don't mind that, this elder brother could even give my life back to you today!"

The moment Mountain Lifting Hermit finished his words, he had released his battle qi tornado while a virtual image of a giant lifting a mountain gradually rose up and covered the entire Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market together with Zhang Tie's fire-dragon image.

Honestly, at this moment, Zhang Tie was really moved. Zhang Tie dared butt head with Han Yuanhong because of the following two reasons: first, he knew the background of Han Clan. Han Clan was Zhang Tie's deadly enemy. Han Clan not only screwed him but also intended to kill his father. Therefore, Zhang Tie shouldn't be timid in this situation; second, Han Clan were in the wrong;

additionally, Bai Suxian was not a commoner, she was the daughter of Lord Guangnan who was unrivaled in the south border of Taixia Country. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't fear that this event was getting out of hand. As those b*stards treated Bai Suxian rudely first, Zhang Tie would always be in the disadvantageous position. Nobody could punish him due to this event. Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could meet a member of Han Clan here; therefore, he directly slapped that guy's face fiercely so as to vent his spleen. Bai Suxian didn't speak at this moment because Zhang Tie had already told her to not expose her identity in a secret way until Han Yuanhong was involved in the drama a bit deeper.

However, Mountain Lifting Hermit didn't know what Zhang Tie was thinking about. When Mountain Lifting Hermit released his battle qi tornado and the virtual image, he really chose to stand on Zhang Tie's side at the risk of his own life. If Zhang Tie started the battle, Mountain Lifting Hermit would definitely fight the enemy shoulder to shoulder.

What a righteous man!

What a dauntless man!

What a forthright man!

Previously, Zhang Tie felt that Mountain Lifting Hermit was cold outside yet passionate inside. He had not imagined about such a spirited and generous side inside this thin body. Therefore, he was filled with deep veneration.

Zhang Tie didn't persuade Mountain Lifting Hermit anymore. Otherwise, Mountain Lifting Hermit would feel that he was insulting and looking down upon Mountain Lifting Hermit.

Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit exchanged a glance with each other before smiling towards each other full of sincerity and trust.

With Mountain Lifting Hermit on his side, Zhang Tie felt much

more confident. He glared at Han Yuanhong full of contempt before bursting out into laughter, "Come on, don't you want to revenge for that d**chebag prince who sexually harassed the Hua woman in the public? I killed that son of a b*tch. Come on, show me your talent, bright gold master of Gold and Power Law. As earth knights, we don't play lip service. Show me your masculinity..."

Han Yuanhong had not been stimulated in this way at the gate of Gold and Power Market and in other places across Xuanyuan Hill for over 100 years. He couldn't imagine why he was always in the disadvantageous position today. Even though he was thinking about killing Zhang Tie while suffering from some loss just now, he had already abandoned this thought now. The reason was simple, even if he could fetch some helpers rapidly, after this battle, the entire Gold and Power Market would be ruined for sure. Besides, the surrounding places in Xuanyuan Hill would be damaged to a certain degree.

Although he was the master of Gold and Power Market, he didn't have the right to enforce the law. After Zhang Tie killed people in Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market, as the general manager, he could play edge ball and have his subordinates arrest Zhang Tie. However, if two earth knights of Taixia Country fought him here, he had to bear all the consequences. Although his dad was influential in Xuanyuan Hill as one of the 9 ministers in Taixia Country, his dad was not Emperor Xuanyuan who could almost deal with everything in Taixia Country. If he pushed Han Clan in the teeth of the storm in Xuanyuan Hill, it would not be in correspondence with the great undertaking of Han Clan. Additionally, he didn't know about the trump cards of this earth knight called Cui Li.

Watching Zhang Tie and hearing his words, Han Yuanhong's face turned blue as his eye light changed constantly...

"Who dared to sexually harass our Hua woman in Xuanyuan

Hill?"

When Zhang Tie was butting head with Han Yuanhong, an extremely dignified voice drifted from inside Gold and Power Market which contained a special strength and wave. Along with this voice, the onlookers at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market gave a way while some guys walked towards the ring.

At the sight of that man in the front, Zhang Tie's heart shocked at once.

That was an extremely dignified old man with thick eyebrows and purple face. He gave out a majestic and aggressive qi all over.

Zhang Tie didn't know this old man; however, he could identify the Xiezhi crown on the head of the old man. The Xiezhi crown was 56 cm in height. It was made of violet gold. Xiezhi crown was the symbol of chief justice in Hua people. Across Taixia Country, many people wore Xiezhi crowns. When Zhang Tie served as the chief justice in Youzhou Provincial Court, he also had one. However, he didn't usually wear it. The size of Xiezhi crown was an important reference of the identity of the wearer. Previously, Zhang Tie's Xiezhi crown was only 30 cm in height. Across Taixia Country, besides the minister of justice, one of the 9 ministers in Taixia Country, nobody else dared wear such a high Xiezhi crown unless he was seeking for death or wanted to be the public enemy of all the courts across Taixia Country.

Besides the high Xiezhi crown, the invisible qi of this old man indicated that he was a shadow knight.

Treasures Meeting in Xuanyuan Hill was really filled with righteous knight-level powerhouses. Zhang Tie had not imagined that such a small chaos at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market could attract the attention of a big figure like the minister of justice...

Chapter 1125: Dignity

As a shadow knight and the minister of justice, this guy had a very strong qi field. The moment he appeared, everybody else at present had concentrated on him. He was more domineering than anyone else at present. Most of the people even ignored those knight-level powerhouses behind him.

"Minister of justice..." At the sight of this old man, Han Yuanhong hurriedly moved one step forward as he cupped his hands towards this old man.

The minister of justice just threw a distant look at Han Yuanhong before replying, "Hmm" in a calm way. Closely after that, he glanced around those corpses on the ground, then the virtual images of Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit and said distantly, "Xuanyuan Hill is the hinterland of Taixia Country. If your virtual images stayed here for too long, others would think that an urgent situation had cropped up here. Hide them!"

Zhang Tie exchanged a glance with Mountain Lifting Hermit before nodding tacitly at the same time. Meanwhile, they hid their virtual images. Now that the minister of justice arrived, of course, the battle had to come to an end. If they really started a fight in front of the minister of justice, they would make the minister of justice very embarrassed. Who dared make the minister of justice embarrassed? It was said that the minister of justice had the greatest battle strength among the 9 ministers in Taixia Country as he had to frighten those evil forces. Even two common shadow knights could not defeat the minister of justice.

Zhang Tie didn't know which secret method was the minister of justice cultivating. When the minister of justice threw a glance at him just now, Zhang Tie felt being transparent all over as if all of his secrets had been exposed. Therefore, his heart pounded.

"Uncle Sun..." Bai Suxian who had been silent for quite a while

suddenly uttered as she hailed the minister of justice by lowering her body.

After hearing Bai Suxian's words, Han Yuanhong's heart pounded at once although he was standing a few meters away.

The minister of justice focused on Bai Suxian for two seconds before revealing a smile as if he finally remembered who was Bai Suxian, "When I saw you last time, your dad brought you to pay a formal visit to the empress dowager in the Longevity Palace of Peach Mountain. I've not imagined that you could promote to a knight after 19 years!"

Bai Suxian let out a sigh, "Uncle Sun, even as a knight, I was still almost sexually harassed by some thugs under your eyes. Xuanyuan Hill is growing more and more chaotic!"

After hearing Bai Suxian's words, the minister of justice blushed as he coughed. Closely after that, he threw a glance at those corpses on the ground, "You mean them?"

"Who else? One of them wanted to molest me. After he was killed by my brother Cui, his partners started to attack us by force. We had to kill them all. I've not imagined that the master of Gold and Power Market could suddenly come out and intend to revenge for those thugs by arresting my brother Cui!" Bai Suxian slowly let out a sigh.

The minister of justice immediately moved his eyes onto Han Yuanhong.

Han Yuanhong hurriedly moved one step forward, "Minister of justice, I beg for your fair judgment. I was told that someone killed foreign VIPs at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market; therefore, I hurriedly came over here to control the event. I wanted to put the killer under control at first. Because those being killed are not commoners, but the Prince Cricise of Arlkey and his bodyguards. Arlkey Empire is abundant in high-quality crystals, which is the most important strategic resources. Their crystals are supplied to

the private imperial finance and living affairs ministry and the top 4 troops of Taixia Country. Arlkey Empire is the most important trading partner of Taixia Country in New Creasence Subcontinent. They are especially invited by Gold and Power Law to attend the Treasures Meeting. However, the prince of Arlkey Empire was killed in Xuanyuan Hill, minister of justice, please decide the case fairly!"

When Han Yuanhong talked about high-quality crystals, the others didn't make any response to it; however, Zhang Tie's heart raced as he immediately thought about the material of bloody sea. A great number of high-quality crystals were demanded to build a bloody sea. Han Zhengfang was the master of Gold and Power Law, Han Yuanhong was the bright gold master of Gold and Power Law; therefore, it would be too easy if they would like to gain high-quality crystals from Arlkey Empire. Additionally, it would not arouse others' doubts. Given this point, Zhang Tie finally figured out why Han Yuanhong hurriedly came out to revenge for the motherf*cking prince of Arlkey Empire. There must be a dirty trick inside.

Pitifully, Zhang Tie knew that even though his presumption was true, nobody would believe in his words. As a result, he might beat the grass and frighten away the snake. As Zhang Tie was here to uproot Han Clan; instead of giving them a warning, even though Zhang Tie was clear-minded, he still remained silent.

"Nobody could enjoy a privilege in Xuanyuan Hill. Of course, the killer should receive the punishment; however, if those being killed sought for death themselves, it's nothing serious. Our Taixia Country have strict laws. If Arlkey Empire has other thoughts about this event, just dispatch someone to New Crescence Subcontinent to change an emperor for the country or have the private imperial finance and living affairs ministry take over this country." The minister of justice said it calmly. Closely after that, he glanced around the onlookers as he told them, "As there're so

many people here, someone among you must have witnessed what happened just now, just tell me about that!"

Soon after the minister of justice finished his words, some people among the crowd had exchanged glances with each other before a tough guy strode one step forward and cupped his hands towards the minister of justice. Closely after that, he said loudly, "Minister of justice, this humble man indeed saw that these foreign people commented this young lady with dirty words behind her back. In the beginning, the group of foreign people was far away from this young lady and the tough man behind them. Two of them purposefully collided with each other behind this young lady; closely after that, one of them wanted to thrust his belly towards this young lady. However, he was kicked off by this tough man. At the sight of this scene, all of his partners drew out their sabers and axes and started to attack the two people; finally, they were killed by this young lady and this tough man!"

...

"Minister of justice, I saw that too. It was true. Just now, I was doubting whether this guy who intended to thrust his belly towards this young lady on purpose; later on, I knew that this guy was a knight; however could a knight lose his balance only after being touched by his subordinate bodyguard? Therefore, it's indeed a purposeful sexual harassment!"

...

"Minister of justice, I saw it too. Just now, this group of foreign people behaved in a rude way behind this young lady and this childe..."

Many witnesses stood out of the crowd and explained what they saw at once. Two of them were even foreign people. Just now, they were not far away from Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian behind them; therefore, they saw what happened too. As for these foreign people, the motherf*cking Arlkey Empire had nothing to do with

them. They were not of the same human race at all; additionally, what Zhang Tie said formed a resonance with them; therefore, they would like to bear witness for Zhang Tie.

After hearing these words, Zhang Tie sighed with emotion, 'Taixia Country is really powerful. If it were in other continents or subcontinents, who dared bear the witness heroically when they knew that they might offend the bright gold master of Gold and Power Law indirectly by doing so. However, at this moment, almost all the people who had witnessed the process of the event would like to bear the witness. Although it was a trivial matter, it implied the patriotism of a nation. At this critical moment, most of the people in the surroundings would choose to stand out to bear the witness instead of being silent for the sake of their safety in a "wise" way. Such an uncompromising spirit and mentality facing the evil forces in the public made Taixia Country powerful and frightened demons.

Zhang Tie found that he had a new recognition about Taixia Country.

After hearing the testimony, Han Yuanhong silently lowered his head.

The minister of justice was clear about the process of this event too. After glancing around the scene, he pointed at the elder foreign knight from Arlkey Empire and asked, "As the prince of Arlkey Empire and his bodyguards dare do a shameless thing in Xuanyuan Hill, they deserve the death. The killers are innocent. Given the severity of this event, I declare that all the people from Arlkey Empire of New Crescence Subcontinent are forbidden to enter Xuanyuan Hill from today on. Anyone who violates this rule will be killed. Drive this man out of Xuanyuan Hill..."

Since Han Yuanhong arrived, the elder knight of Arlkey Empire had been standing aside tamefully. Like a transparent person, he could not interrupt their talk at all. After hearing the judgment of minister of justice, he widely opened his mouth with astonishment

and panic. Closely after that, he looked at Han Yuanhong and talked gibberish. Pitifully, Han Yunhong didn't even throw a glance at him.

"Be quiet in front of the minister of justice, slap your mouth..." The two subordinate knights beside the minister of justice strode forward and grabbed that elder foreign knight's arms at once. Closely after that, they slapped that elder foreign knight's face a few times and drew him away. As the minister of justice had sent the order to drive this man out of Xuanyuan Hill, of course, they need to execute it right away. Meanwhile, someone else beside the minister of justice had already passed the notice to the subordinates through the remote-sensing crystal. From today on, everybody from the Arlkey Empire of New Crescence Subcontinent was forbidden in Xuanyuan Hill. All those who had entered it would be driven away at once.

No matter how fierce the foreign people were, they had to behave like tame kitties in Xuanyuan Hill.

All the foreign knights among the onlookers were scared by what they saw as they hurriedly ordered their subordinates to follow the laws in Taixia Country and not stir up any trouble here. It was in Xuanyuan Hill, not any remote places like their hometowns. Because a prince of a major country in a subcontinent which had established important trade ties with Taixia Country wanted to sexually harass a woman, he was kicked to death by an earth knight. His life was as cheap as that of a dog. Actually, his life couldn't even match that of a dog. At least a dog could rub a beauty on the street for a short while. By contrast, besides losing his own life, even this prince's country was involved in it. Their royal households might be changed. Such a person died in vain in Xuanyuan Hill. What about others? In Xuanyuan Hill, every knight has to behave carefully no matter how powerful he was.

'F*ck, that d**chebag must have not imagined that the woman whom he stirred up was followed by such a terrifying earth knight,

who could kill him in a split second. Xuanyuan Hill is too terrifying. How come earth knights stroll on the streets casually? F*ck, I have to be careful later on.' Such a thought flickered through many foreign knights' brain at this moment.

Taixia Country was powerful because of etiquette and great battle strength.

After dealing with this event simply, the minister of justice left as if he had done something trivial, leaving awe-stricken eye lights behind him.

Nobody had noticed that Zhang Tie had released two tracing feathers onto that elder knight's clothes when he was drawn away.

Chapter 1126: Gold and Power Market

The conflict between Zhang Tie and those rude foreign people and between Zhang Tie and Han Yuanhong at Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market was resolved in only a few words with the arrival of the minister of justice. After the minister of justice left, all the others left too. Those being involved in this event and those onlookers had different feelings. Perhaps only they themselves knew about it.

Han Yuanhong left silently. Before he left, he threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie. Those onlookers threw a bit awe-stricken glance at Zhang Tie when they left; especially some foreign people in special costumes kept a distance from Zhang Tie consciously.

After Zhang Tie exposed his identity as earth knight, even though Bai Suxian was beautiful, nobody dared approach Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian anymore. Whatever, very few people in this world could stand an earth-knight's kick. The guy who was kicked to death was really unfortunate. As a black iron knight, he dared sexually harass an earth knight's woman. It was nothing different than seeking for death.

After glancing around those leaving onlookers and Han Yuanhong's back, Zhang Tie recovered his composure too. After exchanging a glance with Bai Suxian, he turned around and spoke to Mountain Lifting Hermit, "Elder brother, I forgot to ask you about that, why are you here?"

"I'm living in the Heavens Seal Hotel in Gold and Power Market. It's less than 1.5 miles from Qian Gate. When I was going to leave my room, I suddenly heard your voice. I almost thought that I misheard it. Therefore, I came over here!" Mountain Lifting Hermit, who always looked solemn, revealed a faint smile facing Zhang Tie. He looked Zhang Tie up and down seriously with an amazed look, "I've not imagined that you could promote to an earth knight. After promoting to a black iron knight, many people

couldn't promote to an earth knight in their whole lives. I've really not imagined that you could catch up with me so fast..."

"It's a long story!" Zhang Tie glanced around those people who were still peeping at him as he told Mountain Lifting Hermit, "Elder brother, now that you're living not far from here, how about talking about it in your residence? As there're too many people here, it's not convenient for a talk!"

Mountain Lifting Hermit threw a glance at the surroundings before nodding, "Right, let's talk about it in Heavens Seal Hotel!"

Closely after that, Mountain Lifting Hermit led Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian towards Heavens Seal Hotel.

After entering the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market, the roadsides were covered with stores. There were a great variety of shocking beautiful items inside those stores, including sabers, swords, helmets, armors, medicaments, rune items, living animals and specimens of mutated beasts and various senior crystals. Many people were hawking with alchemists' and rune equipment in hands like how peddles held a drum-shaped rattle.

Previously, Zhang Tie had not seen anyone who sold element crystals; however, after entering Gold and Power Market for less than 1,000 m, Zhang Tie had seen a few stores selling element crystals. Of course, the prices of those element crystals were astronomic figures for commoners. At the sight of those figures, one would know why gold and silver didn't count most for knights.

In the Treasures Meeting, you could almost buy everything that you could imagine.

What made Zhang Tie speechless the most was a sentence in red lacquer in the advertisement board at the gate of a business group — the Hereditary throne of the High Mountain Kingdom in Goldenrock Subcontinent for sale; legal demise; after becoming an imperial clan, you would never be bothered by a coup. Those who have been conferred with the rank of nobility officially would

enjoy a great discount; if you want it, let's talk about it face to face inside the store...

Besides Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie estimated that he could not see such a commercial advisement anywhere else. Otherwise, Zhang Tie would definitely think that someone was making a parody. However, in Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie knew that it was not a parody. Nobody dared make such a joke with so many passers-by at this moment.

When Mountain Lifting Hermit noticed that Zhang Tie paid more attention to that advertisement board, Mountain Lifting Hermit said, "I've been to the High Mountain Kingdom in Goldenrock Subcontinent when I was young. This country only covers over 2 million square miles. The entire country is abundant in pure aluminum and golden leaves pomelos; simple folk custom; beautiful and amorous beauties. When I went there last time, I had just promoted to a black iron knight. That country even wanted to employ me as the No. 1 knight. Their princess..." Mountain Lifting Hermit stopped with a reminiscent look when he mentioned about the princess of High Mountain Kingdom. Finally, he revealed a bitter smile and shook his head.

Watching Mountain Lifting Hermit's look, Zhang Tie knew that Mountain Lifting Hermit must have an unforgettable love story in Goldenrock Subcontinent. Each knight had a lot of love affairs at a young age, including Mountain Lifting Hermit. Many people might not have experienced too many such love affairs; therefore, they were very curious and longing for that. However, knights had so many such experiences; therefore, they had seen through everything. After dozens of years, even over 100 years, perhaps only a couple of women could stay in a knight's memory at most.

"What's wrong with the princess of High Mountain Country?" Bai Suxian asked Mountain Lifting Hermit. Women were always interested in such things unimaginably.

"The princess of High Mountain Country was my friend. We've

got acquainted with each other for too long. 5 decades ago, I entered secluded cultivation for 10 years so as to promote to an earth knight; when I promoted to an earth knight 10 years later, I found that she had already died on the 6th year since I started my secluded cultivation..."

"She's dead?" Bai Suxian widely opened her eyes, "Did she..."

"Not like what you imagine. She died naturally. She only lived 121 years due to a poor gift in cultivation. Before she died, she even had someone give me a letter and express that she wanted to see me for the last time. However, I was in secluded cultivation at that moment. When I received the letter, it was already a few years later..." Mountain Lifting Hermit said with a sad look.

It seemed that this affair was not a beautiful memory for Mountain Lifting Hermit; therefore, Zhang Tie stopped Bai Suxian by throwing a glance at her. Meanwhile, he changed the topic, "Is there any problem with the royal households of High Mountain Kingdom?"

"In the holy war, it's normal for small countries to be exterminated. There's not even a knight-level powerhouse in the royal households of High Mountain Country in the subcontinent. They were living a scary life every day. Actually, they were not happier and safer than common rich people in the major provinces of Taixia Country."

Since they left the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market, the three people had found that they were followed by two "tails". However, the three people just ignored them. Whatever, Gold and Power Market was not opened by Han Clan. Even though they offended Han Yuanhong, they could still swagger all the way in Gold and Power Market without worrying about any trouble. In the public, Han Yuanhong dared not hurt them at all like that they could not do anything to the two "tails" behind them. They just knew it and didn't expose it.

They soon came to the gate of the Heavens Seal Hotel.

This hotel could never be matched by common hotels. Heavens Seal Hotel looked like Lord Guangnan's Manor in Xuanyuan Hill. It was even a bit more luxurious than the latter. The hotel included some smaller independent courtyards. The walls between courtyards had been specially designed so that outsiders could barely peep inside.

The courtyard of Mountain Lifting Hermit was less than 300 square meters. There was even a small bamboo wood in the courtyard which looked more tranquil.

During the period of Treasures Meeting, the daily rent of such a small courtyard was 100,000 gold coins. Those who could live in such high-end courtyards were always rich lords coming from subcontinents or knight-level powerhouses of Taixia Country.

There was a tea house inside the courtyard. When they talked with each other, they sat down inside the tea house with crossed legs. At the same time, they drank tea and started to chat.

"Younger brother Cui, weren't you trapped in the hieron's ruins with that demon earth knight? We didn't see you come out of there until we left the hieron's ruins. I even thought that you've sacrificed at that time. Unimaginably, you have promoted to an earth knight. Such a sharp turn almost made me confused!"

Only after having two sips of tea, Mountain Lifting Hermit had asked Zhang Tie about his experience out of his concern.

Even though they were in the courtyard of the hotel, Mountain Lifting Hermit knew that this topic was too sensitive; therefore, he asked Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian in a secret way for the sake of respect and confidentiality. After all, they had just offended the master of Gold and Power Market; additionally, they were in other's territory; therefore, they had to be alert.

Outsiders were shocked by the news that Zhang Tie had

promoted to an earth knight. However, it was more shocking for Mountain Lifting Hermit who had entered the hieron's ruins and fought together with Zhang Tie inside to hear this news. The feelings between when you heard that a stranger hit the jackpot and that someone familiar hit the jackpot were utterly different.

Mountain Lifting Hermit should be shocked and curious about Zhang Tie's experience as a knight, Zhang Tie's friend and comrade-in-arms.

After hearing this question, Zhang Tie pondered...

Chapter 1127: Sincere Friends

Finding that Zhang Tie was silent, Mountain Lifting Hermit lowered his head unconsciously while his passionate look gradually turned to the original solemn look. At the same time, Mountain Lifting Hermit let out a sigh inside, "I've not imagined that this question could make you embarrassed, younger brother Cui, I'm too offensive!"

After hearing Mountain Lifting Hermit's words, Zhang Tie knew what he was thinking about. Therefore, the moment Mountain Lifting Hermit finished his words, Zhang Tie had shaken his head as he watched Mountain Lifting Hermit sincerely and said, "Elder brother, you must have misunderstood me. When in Earth-elements Realm, you fought demons with me side by side. We're David And Jonathan! I would never hide the facts in front of elder brother. I was just concerned that I might surprise you if I told you about my secrets!"

Zhang Tie replied in a secret way. Even though others were standing on his side, they could not know what Zhang Tie was talking about.

Bai Suxian threw a glance at Zhang Tie silently. Using his instinct, Bai Suxian had guessed what Zhang Tie was going to talk. Therefore, she wanted to remind Zhang Tie by throwing a glance at him. As a big secret, as long as it was leaked, it might cause great troubles.

Of course, Zhang Tie knew about Bai Suxian's concern. Zhang Tie just comforted Bai Suxian by pinching her hand forcefully.

Mountain Lifting Hermit revealed a genial smile once again, "This elder brother has traveled so many places on the earth and below the earth these years, although I'm not very strong-willed, it's difficult for the younger brother to surprise me!"

"Actually, I'm not Cui Li; I'm Zhang Tie, the very Zhang Tie who

was wanted by Taixia Country. Since the first day I met you, I had been Zhang Tie. Cui Li is just my incarnation!"

"What?" Mountain Lifting Hermit sprung up at once with a "shocked" look. As he was shocked too much, he even forgot to use the secret way.

Looking at Zhang Tie's helpless expression which meant "I've long known that you would behave like this", Mountain Lifting Hermit looked left and right before taking in a deep breath and sitting down with a solemn look.

"Young brother...Cui, is that true? Aren't you kidding me?" Mountain Lifting Hermit asked seriously in a secret way once again.

"Yes, it's true. I'm not kidding you. I am Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie is me!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"I've seen Zhang Tie's order for arrest. Your look and figure are pretty different than Zhang Tie's..."

"I've awakened an immortal ancestral bloodline. I named it body changing immortal bloodline. With this kind of bloodline, I could change my look and figure casually..." As Zhang Tie explained, he silently stretched his right hand in front of Mountain Lifting Hermit. Right under the gaze of Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Tie's right hand started to change.

It gradually turned older with more and more wrinkles and senile plaques like a withered twig. Closely after that, it slowly grew younger and became as elastic as kid's skin. Finally, it recovered its original look of Cui Li's hand. In the entire process, Zhang Tie's hand also changed its color between yellow, black, white and brown like that of different human races'.

From a hole, one would know the overall situation. Although Zhang Tie didn't change his whole body, the change on his hand was already shocking enough. Mountain Lifting Hermit realized

that this was definitely a unique ability. No secret method could make this come true.

"Besides awakening body changing immortal bloodline, I've mastered many secret methods too. As long as there's a complete secret method, I will be able to simulate its effect after forming chakras. I've got another secret method called Thousands of Beads Multitasking Sutra. As long as I have sufficient element crystals, I would be able to absorb element crystals at a speed 10 times greater than that of the others. Additionally, I've mastered some more secret methods. With these special abilities and secret methods, I entered Earth-elements Realm in the identity of Cui Li without leaving any loophole, turned the tide in hieron's ruins and promoted to an earth knight in a short period..."

After Zhang Tie said these words, he told Mountain Lifting Hermit about his experience in the hieron's ruins including how he killed Old Monster Qi; promoted to an earth knight and returned; encountered Bai Suxian, joined the large-scale battle between humans and demons in Tiewei Mountain; came to Northeast Military Region to open his Iron-Dragon Sect; came to Xuanyuan Hill until he met Mountain Lifting Hermit today. During this process, Zhang Tie also exposed the identity of Bai Suxian to Mountain Lifting Hermit.

Except for the trump cards of Castle of Black Iron, King Roc Sutra and divine dominator, Zhang Tie had been frank to Mountain Lifting Hermit to the utmost extent.

Even though Mountain Lifting Hermit was startled by Zhang Tie's experiences and became speechless. Mountain Lifting Hermit had not imagined that Zhang Tie could have such amazing experiences and grasped so many shocking secret methods.

"I've not imagined that younger brother Zhang Tie could have such wonderful experiences!" Mountain Lifting Hermit let out a sigh, "But, younger brother, aren't you afraid that I screw you with your secrets?"

"Given your dauntless spirit when you stood on my side just now, if the elder brother wants to screw me with these secrets, it must be because that I've offended you. If so, I deserve that!" Zhang Tie shrugged as he said like a single man, "Each one has his secrets. However, if I don't even believe the elder brother, a person who could stand on my side at the risk of your life, who else could I believe? No matter how powerful one is, if he doesn't even have such a close friend or be alert to everybody else, it would be meaningless even if he could promote to a heavenly knight or a sage! Don't we hope that we could live a franker, more fearless and freer life one day by exerting our utmost efforts to climb up?"

"We indeed hope that we could live a franker, more fearless and freer life through constant cultivation!" Mountain Lifting Hermit repeated Zhang Tie's words. After repeating it for a while, he let out a sigh heavily.

"Oh, elder brother, after you left the hieron's ruins, where have you been? A few days ago, I asked about you in the Earth-elements Realm in vain!"

"After being screwed by Old Monster Qi's five-poison bloody soul driller at that moment, I was severely wounded. After leaving the hieron's ruins, I thought that the younger brother has sacrificed in the hieron's ruins. Being very disappointed, I directly left the Earth-elements Realm and casually found a mountain in Military Province and entered a secluded cultivation and rehabilitation. Not until a few months ago did I completely recover my wounds. Closely after that, I contacted a friend in the Earth-elements Realm and was told that you were still alive and had returned to the earth's surface. After hearing that there was a Treasures Meeting in the Gold and Power Market, I wanted to join the fun here and try my fortune; after that, I planned to find you in the Northeast Military Region!"

Mountain Lifting Hermit told Zhang Tie about his experiences over the past years too.

Five-poison bloody soul driller was really vicious and powerful. During these years, Mountain Lifting Hermit was almost in recuperation.

"Elder brother, what kind of fortune do you want to try in Gold and Power Market?"

Mountain Lifting Hermit replied with a bitter smile, "Honestly, I want to look for the same thing here as what I wanted to look for in the hieron's ruins. As space-teleportation equipment is extremely precious, I could barely see it; however, in the treasures meeting, I might buy one. I've already received the news that someone would sell a space-teleportation equipment in this treasures meeting of Gold and Power Market!"

"Space-teleportation equipment?" Zhang Tie became dumbfounded.

"Younger brother, don't laugh at me. Since I promoted to an earth knight, I had been desiring for a space-teleportation equipment. However, I always missed the opportunities because of bad lucks or lack of conditions. Therefore, this elder brother still does not have a space-teleportation equipment until now. As a result, I have too many inconveniences. During these years in the Earth-elements Realm, without a space-teleportation equipment, this elder brother missed many opportunities for exploring treasures. Without a space-teleportation equipment, I would even have a big problem in replenishment in some special places in the Earth-elements Realm and might lose my life in the worst scenario!"

Zhang Tie was not strange about space-teleportation equipment at all. He even felt that he was more and more tide up with space-teleportation equipment. Since he killed the demon general, he had been gaining space-teleportation equipment one after another. Therefore, he had almost been numb about that. However, Mountain Lifting Hermit's words reminded Zhang Tie that space-teleportation equipment was still extremely precious for an earth

knight who didn't have any background in Taixia Country. Many knights would like to spend a lot on space-teleportation equipment.

'Should I directly present a space-teleportation equipment to Mountain Lifting Hermit?' Zhang Tie considered about this question seriously. Zhang Tie never grudged a space-teleportation equipment as he could even share his secrets with Mountain Lifting Hermit. However, he knew that Mountain Lifting Hermit would never accept such a favor without any reason. Given his temperament, if Zhang Tie did that, Mountain Lifting Hermit might directly leave out of fury.

"This elder brother has been closer to the end of my life; however, I couldn't even see through something like you. As I encountered younger brother by fortunate today, this elder brother has a presumptuous request, please promise me!" Mountain Lifting Hermit uttered when Zhang Tie was thinking about how to present a space-teleportation equipment to him.

"Elder brother, just go ahead. As long as I could do it, I would never refuse!" Zhang Tie said righteously.

"May I join Iron-Dragon Sect?"

After listening to Mountain Lifting Hermit's words, Zhang Tie became a bit stunned. Closely after that, he almost jumped up cheerily.

Chapter 1128: Grand Elder of Iron-Dragon Sect

"Elder brother, do you really mean that?" Zhang Tie asked happily.

Honestly, Zhang Tie didn't have any experience in establishing a sect. The significance that an earth knight joined his sect would be utterly different than that Zhang Tie enrolled his apprentices. As it brought Zhang Tie a great sense of identity and achievement. It was an earth knight. An earth knight was definitely unrivaled in Waii Subcontinent. Even in Taixia Country and the Earth-elements Realm, an earth knight could also be on the equal footing with a provincial governor.

Zhang Tie knew that it was a demographic dividend. His responsible and dauntless spirit in the hieron's ruins gained Mountain Lifting Hermit's identification. Therefore, Mountain Lifting Hermit would like to join Iron-Dragon Sect. Otherwise, an earth knight could establish a sect wherever he wanted; even if he didn't want to establish a sect, he could also become the VIP or employed elder in the top 7 sects in Taixia Country.

"I'm single and have nothing to worry about. As long as the younger brother doesn't mind it, this elder brother could be a steward for you!" At the sight of the Zhang Tie's pleasant look, Mountain Lifting Hermit felt pretty warm inside as he turned pleasant too.

Zhang Tie said seriously, "Elder brother, what are you talking about? If the elder brother could join my small temple, I would be pretty happy. However, as Iron-Dragon Sect has just been founded, it's a bit simple and crude. I will be relieved as long as the elder brother doesn't mind it!"

"Honestly, these years, many sects and clans have invited me to join them; however, I always felt that I lacked something;

therefore, I didn't promise any of them. After getting acquaintance with younger brother, I figured out what I lacked, "freedom from worry!" Mountain Lifting Hermit signed with emotion, "Compared to other sects and major clans, where I have to be meticulous. To be with younger brother, I don't need to set up others or be screwed. Everything is simple. Additionally, I have to find a safe destination so that I could settle down when I'm injured!"

"Elder brother, trust me; if you join Iron-Dragon Sect, you will be the grand elder of Iron-Dragon Sect. My Iron-Dragon Sect is in the 18 Xuantian Mountain Peaks in Yangui Mountain of Northeast Military Region. After a few days, elder brother could go back to Iron-Dragon Sect with me. If Elder brother likes any one of the 18 mountain peaks, just take it. You will be the owner of that mountain peak. You could cultivate safely and enroll some apprentices before imparting your Mountain Embracing Sutra to them. It all depends on you!"

"It turns out that younger brother has long thought about my Mountain Embracing Sutra ." Mountain Lifting Hermit watched Zhang Tie with a faint smile.

Zhang Tie replied with a shameless look, "It would be a waste if you didn't impart such a count-level classic to your apprentices!"

After throwing a glance at each other, the two people burst out into laughter at the same time.

"I will take one mountain peak from Iron-Dragon Sect too!" Bai Suxian who had been listening to their talk silently on one side suddenly uttered.

"You want one too?" Zhang Tie turned around and threw a glance at Bai Suxian before saying, "You stay with me, then why do you want to take a mountain peak?"

"No, I want one, I want one..." Bai Suxian pouted her mouth as she directly drew Zhang Tie's hand and started to behave like a spoiled child.

"Ahem...ahem..." Mountain Lifting Hermit pretended to cough twice as he looked at Zhang Tie, "Younger brother, can you talk about such a confidential affair back in your room? This elder brother has been old enough, I cannot bear the stimulation of you young people anymore!"

Before Zhang Tie responded to it, Bai Suxian had already blushed, "I've not imagined that Mountain Lifting Hermit is so obscene!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he waved his hand and said, "Well, when we go back, you can take whichever mountain peak you want!"

"That's my man!" Bai Suxian became satisfied too.

"Younger brother, hasn't your order for arrest been canceled off by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country? Aren't you free now? But why..."

"Although the order for arrest has been canceled, the culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City has not been caught. It hasn't ended yet. Therefore, I don't prepare to recover my original look in a short period!"

"If younger brother needs this elder brother's help, just let me know!" Mountain Lifting Hermit said solemnly. Although it was just a simple promise, Zhang Tie knew that Mountain Lifting Hermit must be much more serious than others who made promises by beating their own chests. This was Mountain Lifting Hermit's temperament.

"Elder brother, I swear that I will not behave affectedly with you!"

"How many people have known your real identity, younger brother?"

"Elder brother, Bai Suxian and my elder brother Zhang Yang. Even my parents and elders of Huaiyuan Palace don't know that

Cui Li and Zhang Tie are the same!"

"What do you plan to do? You can't be Cui Li for the rest of your life!"

"I'm also thinking about exposing my real identity to the public these days!" Zhang Tie said seriously, "Actually, I have no ambition. I like tranquil life with my wives and children. I think it's enough for me to have sufficient money with friends on my side. Previously, I always thought that I could avoid trouble by being low-key. However, through what I experienced in Taixia Country during these years, I find that it's more effective to make someone fear about you than trying to stay away from them for more people. In this world, the battle strength is more persuasive than the mouth. The so-called peace is neither begging others to not harm you nor just bearing it when you're bullied by others, but scare them away from you!"

"If there's really such a day, younger brother's body changing immortal bloodline would definitely shock the entire world. By then, those who really want to do harm to you might not be able to fall asleep when they thought about your body changing immortal bloodline. In the worst scenario, if Huaiyuan Palace were exterminated one day, as long as younger brother could survive on, with the talent of body changing immortal bloodline, you could make the enemy of Huaiyuan Palace sleepless and restless for the rest of their lives. I wonder when the younger brother could jump out to revenge them crazily. If an earth knight like younger brother really starts to fight the top 7 sects at the risk of your life one day, they might be annoyed too much!" Mountain Lifting Hermit threw a glance at Zhang Tie as he said solemnly, "At that moment, common evil forces would indeed be shocked by your talents; however, if I were the enemy of Huaiyuan Palace and younger brother's clan, I would ensure that I could kill you the moment I launched a strike. In this way, younger brother would be the shield and umbrella of Huaiyuan Palace and your clan. All the

conflicts and stress would concentrate on you. If they didn't kill you, they would not do harm to Huaiyuan Palace and younger brother's clan!"

"If I could be the shield and umbrella of my family, I would never feel regretful to die for them!" Zhang Tie revealed a frank smile, "Isn't this the natural response of a man? As an earth knight, it's my greatest honor to provide those people on my side with a better life, watch them smile and being free from fear even in the chaotic world. I don't want to be popular among lords; I don't want reputation, wealth, power and undertakings; I don't want to reach the peak of knight's world; I only expect that those beside me could have a smile which was free of trouble forever! I would like to do everything that I could do for such a smile!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian clenched his hand with sparkling eyes. Mountain Lifting Hermit became silent for a while before sighing with emotion, "Given your words, younger brother, you're greater than me!"

"Elder brother, everyone has his own ambitions. Elder brother pursues the peak of knight's world. I pursue a smile from those people on my side at home!"

"What do I pursue for?" Bai Suxian interrupted him.

"You pursue staying with me obediently!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

"I see, master..." Bai Suxian replied in a spoiled way while her happiness was going to spill out of her eyes.

"Ahem...ahem...younger brother, if you keep behaving like that, this elder brother has to leave!"

"Hahaha, elder brother, I will not stimulate you anymore. Elder brother, you said that you were going to leave the hotel when you heard my voice. Where were you going to?"

"I'm going to the Treasures Complex, it's said that a piece of God's

Star from a subcontinent is exhibited over there. There might be some space-teleportation items for sale; therefore, I want to take a look at them!"

Zhang Tie exchanged a quick smile with Bai Suxian before saying, "It seems that we were predestined to meet each other today, we're also preparing to take a look over there!"

"Let's go!"

"Let's go!"

Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit burst out into laughter at the same time as the three people left the small courtyard of Heavens Seal Hotel towards the Treasures Complex.

Through communication, Mountain Lifting Hermit had already confirmed to join Iron-Dragon Sect, plus Bai Suxian. Therefore, the relationship between the three people became closer than before.

Mountain Lifting Hermit's original surname was Gan. Therefore, Bai Suxian directly called him senior fellow apprentice Gan. Mountain Lifting Hermit also called Bai Suxian junior sister apprentice Bai. According to the suggestion of Mountain Lifting Hermit, they should call each other officially in Xuanyuan Hill, especially in Gold and Power Market no matter how they called each other privately. Therefore, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Bai Suxian should call Zhang Tie "master" out of respect, which could indicate Zhang Tie's identity and position in Iron-Dragon Sect.

Of course, Bai Suxian accepted the appellations pleasantly; Zhang Tie refused it in vain.

Zhang Tie was very curious about this piece of God's Star in the Treasures Meeting...

The three people moved fast. Soon after they left Heavens Seal Hotel, they had seen a magnificent huge building with rich Hua characteristics in front of them.

There were two huge words Treasures Complex on the top of the 10-m high front gate!

Chapter 1129: The Treasures Complex

The two words Treasures Complex were as assertive as flying dragons and dancing phoenixes. Hanging over the high front gate, the two words were radiating golden light. Each of them was as large as a half person. When Zhang Tie approached them, he felt a stress from the words which were like living animals. As a result, Zhang Tie's battle qi started to wave. Zhang Tie was really shocked by this feeling.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to meet such a situation. The two words Treasures Complex reminded Zhang Tie of the strong coercion that Elder Muen imposed on him in Heavens Cold City. This effect was caused by a sharp difference between realms.

"Yi, what happened?" Zhang Tie stopped at once. He looked up at the two words Treasures Complex with sparkling eye light once again and abruptly felt that each word was as overwhelming as a mountain.

"The two words are Emperor Xuanyuan's Calligraphy. It contains the strong qi of a knight who cultivates an emperor-level secret method. This qi is special among humans. Although so many years have passed, the qi remains unchanged. Only those above knights could sense this qi. Like how ants in a cave couldn't feel the dignity of a huge dragon in the sky, people below knight could not feel that anything was wrong below the two words!" Mountain Lifting Hermit explained it to Zhang Tie.

"The calligraphy of Emperor Xuanyuan?"

"Yes, it's sunny today; if you came here on rainy days, you would see a grotesque scenery. Rain and snow keep 3 m away from this board. It's always dry below this board. It's said that this board is water-proof and fire-resistant. Because of the 2 words, this board becomes a treasure as if it has been processed by a rune instrument producer!"

Mountain-Lifting Hermit's words made Zhang Tie dumbfounded in a split second. He was really startled by a sage-level knight's battle strength. Compared to the battle strength of common fighters, knights register a qualitative leapfrog in the battle strength; similarly, compared to the battle strength of common knights, sage-level knights register a qualitative leapfrog too.

"Elder brother, do you feel the stress from the 2 words too?"

"Of course; however, as I've been here before, I'm not that amazed like you!"

"I've not imagined that sage-level knight could have such a terrifying battle strength. After so many years, the two words could still cause such a great stress to other knights!"

"Stress is a driving force. Many knights across Taixia Country have determined their mind at the sight of the two words on the front gate of Treasures Complex. When I saw the two words the first time, I had determined to reach the peak of the knight's world for the rest of my life!" Mountain Lifting Hermit raised his head and watched the 2 words while a sophisticated and decisive look flashed by.

The road towards peak was pretty bumpy and lonely. So many people gave it up on the halfway. It required great determination and braveness to choose this way.

"Elder brother's determination is really admirable!" Zhang Tie said sincerely. Without the small tree, Zhang Tie knew that he could not even enter the realm of a knight for the rest of his life, not to mention a sage-level knight. Zhang Tie really admired those people who could promote to knights by their own ability and determine to reach the peak of knight's world.

"Although I promoted to a knight earlier than you, younger brother has already caught up with me!" Mountain Lifting Hermit replied with a big smile.

"Actually, you've missed one point, the 2 words are an incentive for Hua knights and cause many foreign knights to be breathless due to fear. I finally know why Hua people could lead all the other humans!" Bai Suxian said.

When Bai Suxian spoke, 2 foreign knights approached the gate too. It might be the 2 knights' first time to be here. The moment they sensed the aggressive qi of the 2 words, one of them released his protective battle qi unconsciously at once, the other one was forced to move 2 steps backward. The two people changed their faces immediately. Watching the 2 huge Hua words on the gate with astonishment, they jabbered and dared not move forward...

At the sight of such a situation, Zhang Tie, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Bai Suxian exchanged a glance with each other silently before entering the gate.

"It's Treasures Complex, do you have VIP cards?" One of the two young domineering Hua knights stretched out his hand and stopped the 3 people politely.

Even though the 2 concierges of Treasures Complex were knights. After realizing it, common knights would feel being dwarfed inside.

Bai Suxian stretched out her hand with 2 crystal VIP cards on it; Mountain Lifting Hermit took out of a crystal VIP card from his sleeve too. After taking the 3 crystal VIP cards, the concierge checked them before giving them back to the 3 people and let them in.

The 3 people then entered the gate while raising high their heads.

"I've not imagined that it was so strict here. Commoners might not dare enter at the sight of the 2 words and the 2 knight-level concierges."

"Anyone who could enter Treasures Complex must be dignified. As long as a Hua person become an earth knight, he will have a VIP

card of Treasures Complex. Common knights are forbidden to go inside, except for black iron knights such as young sister Su Xian, who come from major clans and sects or are especially invited by Gold and Power Law!"

"Are we deep into the tiger's den?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie with a smile, "Han Yuanhong's nestle in Gold and Power Market is in the Treasures Complex. At the gate, I've seen 3 people peering at us at the gate of the Treasures Complex."

"Yup; however, 3 of us are not afraid of a tiger at all, am I right, elder brother?" Zhang Tie said with a smile.

"Young brother Cui Li is right. Xuanyuan Hill is the sacred land of Hua people; instead of one's backyard. Even the master of Gold and Power Law is also appointed by Emperor Xuanyuan. Iron barracks, flowing soldiers, some people are at most a senior steward here. Only Emperor Xuanyuan among humans could be unrivaled forever!" Mountain Lifting Hermit said heroically.

Zhang Tie nodded as 3 of them passed through the gateway of Treasures Complex.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the gate tower, he had seen a huge wall.

The wall was higher than 10 m and over 30 m in length. The entire wall was verdant all over like a curtain. Besides being fascinatingly verdant, it was also mixed with red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue, and purple colors. The entire wall was decorated with 9 colorful vivid Hua dragon totems in different movements, which looked pretty domineering.

At the sight of the wall, Zhang Tie had been shocked. Zhang Tie found that the raw material of this wall was a quality eternal stone. Additionally, this piece of eternal stone was an entity. The piece of eternal stone alone was already a priceless treasure, not to mention the exquisite carving skills.

Before Zhang Tie promoted to a knight, he had gained some eternal stones in the underground relics of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Those eternal stones were extremely rare and valuable; therefore, Zhang Tie made a big fortune. By contrast, this eternal stone was definitely more qualified than them; what was more, it was an entity. In front of this extremely huge external stone, those eternal stones that Zhang Tie gained previously in the underground relics were nothing but sh*t. How much was such an eternal stone? Precisely, how many cities was it worth?

"This is 9-dragons wall. This original eternal stone of this wall weighs over 4,600 tons. It's the largest and most advanced eternal stone that humans have discovered by far. It was discovered by a grand elder of Wang clan of Tianhai Palace, a top clan in Taixia Country in the Earth-elements Realm. After discovering it, the grand elder of Wang clan immediately contacted his clansmen and took it out of the Earth-elements Realm. When it was displayed, it shocked the entire Taixia Country. Later on, Gold and Power Law exchanged something for this eternal stone and carved 9 dragons on it before putting it here for appreciation. This 9-dragons wall is also the top treasure of Treasures Complex!"

As it was not the first time for Mountain Lifting Hermit and Bai Suxian to see this 9-dragons wall; therefore, the 2 people were not shocked by it anymore. After noting that Zhang Tie paid special attention to this 9-dragons wall, Bai Suxian started to introduce Zhang Tie about the history of this 9-dragons wall.

"Isn't eternal stone a precious material for alchemists? Why do I feel that this eternal stone has not been processed by an alchemist? Isn't it prodigal for it to stand here?"

"You're right, it's said that the effect of this 9-dragons wall could cover an entire city and extend the longevity of commoners in this city if it was fully activated. Pitifully, only one person among alchemists could do it; however, as that person's identity is special; nobody could invite him to process this 9-dragons wall through

alchemist's skill. Even if all the other alchemists joined hands with each other, they could only reach half effect of that person. Therefore, in case this top treasure was spoiled, they just put it here until someone could play its role to the utmost one day..."

Chapter 1130: Overall Situation and Familiar Ones

'There is only one alchemist master across Taixia Country who could make full use of this eternal stone yet could not be invited?'

After hearing the words of Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Tie immediately thought about his master Zhao Yuan. However, he still asked with astonishment, "Elder brother, who's that alchemist master? Now that he's so great, why can't he come here to refine this eternal stone?"

Mountain Lifting Hermit revealed a smile as he threw a glance at Zhang Tie in a profound way, "That man is a legendary figure in Taixia Country. Young brother, you should have heard about him. He's Zhao Yuan, the alchemist master who has been ranked top on the wanted list of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country for many years. Given alchemist's skill, nobody across Taixia Country could match him. It's said that Zhao Yuan the alchemist master is eccentric, vicious and has a great battle strength. Additionally, he's a heavenly knight who has formed 4 chakras with a lot of means; it's said that this guy could even protect himself from sage-level knights. Who would be able to invite such a great figure to refine this eternal stone?"

"Oh, I see!" Zhang Tie understood it right away; meanwhile, he also understood why Mountain Lifting Hermit threw a glance at him; additionally, Zhao Yuan and Zhang Tie were all "hot figures" on the wanted list; therefore, Mountain Lifting Hermit threw a glance at him in that way. Standing in front of the 9-dragons wall, Zhang Tie looked at it as he said, "What a huge eternal stone! There must be a lot of leftover bits and pieces!"

"It's said that over 100 tons of bits and pieces were cut off, which were also shopping-rush goods. They became the treasure of many alchemists. As 9-dragons wall is too famous, most of its bits and

pieces were processed into various jade wares surnamed 9 and were sold at high prices. Young brother, we could see these items on the Treasures Meeting!"

"I'm waiting for that!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

"All the items being made of the bits and pieces of this eternal stone are surnamed 9. However, there're too many fake goods. All the items that were made of top-quality eternal stones are declared to come from the eternal stone of 9-dragons wall. Actually, who knows where do they come from?" Bai Suxian explained straightforwardly, "Lord Guangnan's Mansion would receive some pieces of refined items from the 9-dragons wall almost every year. All the other major clans and sects would receive some year too. All the rich and powerful ones would like to show off with one or two alchemist's items from 9-dragons wall. All the so-called alchemist's items from the 9-dragons wall would weigh thousands of tons. Therefore, less than 1 of 10 items made of top-quality eternal stones in the market really comes from the 9-dragons eternal stone. But nobody could identify them. Given the same effect, everyone just pretends to not know that it's fake!"

Zhang Tie shook his head with a bitter smile as he had not imagined that he could meet such a ridiculous thing in Taixia Country too. Actually, Zhang Tie did such a thing in Donder's grocery store. It was a common trick in groceries. Take those small metal parts and tools in the grocery as an instance. They purchased them in Blackhot City; however, they labeled the items with "made in Kalur City". As long as there was not a sharp difference between them in quality. The buyers would not identify them at all. After being labeled with "made in Kalur City", they could make some more copper coins. As Zhang Tie was young at that time, he even despised Donder's trick very much. It was really out of his imagination that he could meet such a trick in Taixia Country. Those being trapped were all top-class ones in Taixia Country. Therefore, everyone pursued benefit and fame, whether they're

knights and Lords or commoners.

After throwing another glance at this shocking 9-dragons wall, the 3 people detoured it and walked towards the inside of Treasures Complex.

After passing the 9-dragons wall, they entered a magnificent lobby, which was over 100 m in length and 30 m in width. Additionally, there was a huge ceiling crystal lamp composed of tens of thousands of high-quality crystals on the highest dome of the lobby, which looked like sparkling stars over the sky. On both sides of the lobby, there were 4 bank counters. There were beautiful Hua girls behind each window of the four counters, who were watching the passers-by in the lobby with genial smiles or serving people who were standing in front of the windows.

Additionally, there were labels behind each counter, which were Xuanyuan Bank, Golden Roc Bank, Pangu Bank and Eastern Bank respectively.

People came and went in the lobby. Zhang Tie found that most of them were knights. At the sight of such a boisterous scene, Zhang Tie felt like coming back to the Lion Fortress.

The 4 banks carried out the same businesses here, namely, mortgage, guarantee, financing and debit and credit. Each knight coming to the front of each bank window would be received by exclusive personnel. After dealing with the procedures over the counters here, many knights hurriedly left with documents and certificates in hands. Someone directly withdrew thick gold notes over the counters. Zhang Tie also saw a large amount of earth-element crystals and water-element crystals behind some counters which were taken away by some knights in regular procedures.

"The imperial households of Taixia Country are on the back of Xuanyuan Bank; Xuanyuan Bank is the most powerful bank in Taixia Country. It could formulate some industrial regulations like central banks in foreign countries. Golden Roc Bank is the most

important member of Gold and Power Law which has a long history. Although Golden Roc Bank is a bit weaker than Xuanyuan Bank in Taixia Country, it's most powerful in all the overseas subcontinents. Additionally, until today, the identity of the master of Golden Roc Bank is still mysterious. It's said that that guy has never shown up. I only heard from my father that the highest management of Golden Roc Bank was a commission. Each member of the commission is very mysterious and powerful. They barely show up. Only one or two members of that commission contact Taixia Country. The members of the highest management have the right to meet Emperor Xuanyuan, like the top 3 chancellors and 9 ministers in Taixia Country. My father guessed that there was a sage-level figure behind Golden Roc Bank whom even Emperor Xuanyuan was afraid of!" Bai Suxian said in a secret way.

As it was Zhang Tie's first time to visit Treasures Meeting, Bai Suxian and Mountain Lifting Hermit introduced him about the situation here. Only Zhang Tie and Mountain Lifting Hermit could hear it. Such news might only be touched by top-class figures such as Lord Guangnan. At least Zhang Tie didn't know that there were so many secrets behind Golden Roc Bank.

"Now that there's a sage-level knight on the back of Golden Roc Bank, why would Golden Roc Bank join Gold and Power Law? With a sage-level knight, Golden Roc Bank could be on the equal footing with the major sects in Taixia Country, right?" Zhang Tie asked with astonishment.

"I have no idea!" Bai Suxian shook her head before saying, "It's just a speculation. Nobody knows whether there is a real sage-level knight or not, male or female, Hua or foreigner. Those members of the top management of Golden Roc Bank almost never show up. They were only received by Emperor Xuanyuan for a few times. Outsiders are confused about the process of the receptions!"

"What a bank!"

"It's said that Golden Roc Bank didn't appear in Taixia Country

and Eastern Continent at the beginning, but in the Western Continent. Its headquarters is also in the Western Continent!" Mountain Lifting Hermit also revealed a secret.

After digesting this secret, Zhang Tie continued to ask, "Who are on the back of Pangu Bank and Eastern Bank respectively?"

"It's the other 6 major sects besides Gold and Power Law on the back of Pangu Bank. As Emperor Xuanyuan established Gold and Power Law to restrict the other 6 major sects, the other 6 sects also established Pangu Bank and Xuanyuan Bank to restrict Golden Roc Bank. In the spheres of influence of the top 6 sects, Pangu Bank has the largest influence; Eastern Bank was established by over 100 top clans in the 9 immortal provinces. With 9 immortal provinces as their foundation and the support of over 100 major clans, even if there's no sage-level knight on the back of Eastern Bank, it could also be on the equal footing with the major banks. Additionally, Eastern Bank always remained neutral between the imperial households and the major sects in Taixia Country. This bank didn't even join Gold and Power Law!"

"According to you, the 4 banks almost represent the 4 greatest powers inside Taixia Country. Xuanyuan Bank represents the imperial households and court of Taixia Country; Pangu Bank represents the 6 top sects; Eastern Bank represents major clans in Taixia Country; Golden Roc Bank might represent a mysterious and powerful group that covered another continent and Taixia Country. The powers on the back of these major banks have privity with each other..."

"That's right!"

Touching his jaw, Zhang Tie said, "If Taixia Country is regarded as a brilliant big house, Xuanyuan Bank stands on one side; Pangu Bank stands on the other side. Although they dislike each other, they don't fight for the sake of the furniture and antiques inside the house; Eastern Bank stands in the middle as a buffer and a yes man. The major clans in Taixia Country do business with

Xuanyuan Bank and Pangu Bank at the same time. When disciples of major clans of Taixia Country serve as officials in the imperial court, they learn skills from the top 6 major sects at the same time. Golden Roc Bank visits the house and has a drink once in a while. Sometimes, it will leave the house. Because Xuanyuan Bank is the nominal boss of this house, Golden Roc Bank joins Gold and Power Law out of respect or as a compromise and exchange. Actually, Golden Roc Bank has more than one foundation; it has a position inside the house; outside the doors, it could also summon wind and call for rain..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian and Mountain Lifting Hermit both smiled. Mountain Lifting Hermit nodded, "What a lively metaphor! As you say, the major powers in Taixia Country are indeed restricting each other. Look here, most of the foreign knights are at the counter of Golden Roc Bank..."

Zhang Tie looked around and found that it was real. Most of the knights in front of the counters of Xuanyuan Bank, Eastern Bank and Pangu Bank were Hua knights; however, most of the people in front of Golden Roc Bank were foreign knights.

'Wait.'

Zhang Tie widely opened his eyes at once.

When Zhang Tie looked at the counter of Golden Roc Bank, he caught sight of 2 people walking out of a tunnel on beside of the counter of Golden Roc Bank, one fat, one thin. The fat one was like a huge bear. When they walked, they looked around in gibberish. The thin guy looked glassy-eyed.

Although it was not cold in Xuanyuan Hill, the 2 people were wearing bear-hide coats which looked eye-catching and improper.

They were old Dali from Wild Bear Tribe and Elder Gulas from Huge Bear Tribe...

Chapter 1131: Familiar Ones from Ice and Snow Wilderness

"Gulas, have you seen that? The price of a set of alchemist's jewelry made of eternal stone is 4.5 million gold coins. It's the cheapest alchemist item made of eternal stone. Although our wild bear tribe's golden sea buckthorn beer has a good market, we could only make over 2 million gold coins a year. Those items are even priced by element crystals; instead of gold. Oh my prophet the great pontiff, how could these guys be so rich? I'm thrilled; if only I could rob here..."

When old Dali spoke, he licked his lips. At the same time, he looked around the lobby stealthily like a thief. His rude eye light contained a bit desire for pillage while being driven by curiosity and prospect. However, old Dali just thought about this as it was the nature that he had formed in Ice and Snow Wilderness. He could not change it no matter where he was. Whenever he saw something good, he would like to occupy it by force without spending a penny. Even though it was in Xuanyuan Hill, old wild bear Dali still had an impulse to do that; however, the old wild bear didn't dare put it into practice. Because a black iron knight was too common here. Even in this lobby, he could also sense many qis of earth knights. There was an earth knight behind each bank counter. Old wild bear Dali was shocked too much by such a scene.

It was the first time for Elder Gulas and Dali the head of wild bear tribe to be invited to attend the Treasures Meeting held by Gold and Power Law in Xuanyuan Hill by airship. The first stop of the airship was in Yingzhou City, the capital city of Yingzhou Province. Elder Gulas and head Dali were shocked by the prosperity and large population in Yingzhou City, a class-A city. They even treated Yingzhou City as Xuanyuan Hill. After being told that Yingzhou City was just a common class-A immortal city in Taixia Country and there were over 100 class-A cities in Taixia

Country, even old wild bear Dali started to be meticulous.

One province in Taixia Country could surpass the entire Blackson Humans Corridor in wealth and overall strength. Therefore, Ice and Snow Wilderness which was in one corner of Blackson Humans Corridor might only equal to a prefecture of Taixia Country in population and overall strength.

Previously, Ice and Snow Wilderness was not qualified to receive the invitation of Golden Roc Bank. As it was the first time for Ice and Snow Wilderness to appear on the client list of Golden Roc Bank in the form of the regime of the Sacred Iceland Kingdom, Golden Roc Bank sent two invitation cards to Ice and Snow Wilderness. After a hot negotiation inside Saint Peterburg, Elder Gulas and old wild bear Dali were finally selected to come to Taixia Country as the political chancellor of the Sacred Iceland Kingdom and head of the Association of Elders and Wild Bear Corps by airship respectively. Of course, the two people were dignified in the Sacred Iceland Kingdom; however, after coming to Taixia Country; especially Xuanyuan Hill, their identities in the Sacred Iceland Kingdom became nothing. They were just "Commoners" here.

Old wild bear Dali was meticulous; not until he came to Xuanyuan Hill and saw the "paradise-like place" in the human world did he have a lot of weird thoughts. It seemed to be a strange psychological phenomenon. When one person was constantly stimulated, some absurd nature deep in his mind which was always buried would be exposed.

Yesterday, the old wild bear was thinking about carrying his offsprings to Xuanyuan Hill for a "good life". However, after taking a round in Treasures Complex, he became much more ambitious.

Compared to old wild bear Dali, Elder Gulas of the huge bear tribe was more like a sober military chancellor of the country facing the prosperity of Taixia Country and Xuanyuan Hill.

"Have you heard that, just now, a knight-level prince of a major country in a subcontinent wanted to sexually harass a Hua woman; finally, he was kicked to death by an earth knight!" Elder Gulas threw a glance at old wild bear Dali as he said coldly as the chilly wind in the ice field in the north of Ice and Snow Wilderness, "If you died here, I believe that your sons who are waiting for succeeding your throne must be very happy. Of course, they might have a fierce battle. They would strive to look after those women that you married last year. I will also be responsible for taking your ashes back!"

Old wild bear Dali glared at Gulas, "Can't you say something nice?"

"After robbing here, if wild bear tribe and I are not involved and your sons could have a chance to take over your throne, it's already the best expectation!" Elder Gulas said as icily as before. After hearing Gulas's words, old wild bear Dali muttered something and finally became silent. Across Ice and Snow Wilderness, only the elders of the huge bear tribe and the elders and heads of the other tribes dared talk with old bear Dali in this way.

When the two people came to the window of Golden Roc Bank, Elder Gulas directly passed a secret metal key which was marked with the number of a safe of Golden Roc Bank into the window. After taking the key, the beautiful Hua girl inserted it into a metal slot in front of her. After a short while, someone else had arrived with a senior metal case of medicaments. He then passed the case to Elder Gulas over the counter. After taking that metal case, Elder Gulas directly turned into another tunnel beside the counter of Golden Roc Bank with old wild bear Dali.

After passing through that tunnel, a garden and a cloister, they came to the front of a 6-storey Hua pavilion. There was a wood in front of that building.

That pavilion covered over 10,000 square meters. In front of that pavilion, there was a stele which was marked with Medicinal

Powder Pavilion .

Before entering this building, everyone could sniff the rich medicinal smell from inside the building. After entering it, they found it was like a huge drugstore. There were many compartments and counters in the entire building. Like a senior shopping mall, it was bustling everywhere inside. Many people were looking at the items being sold here. Like that outside, those who wandered inside this building were knights. Additionally, the items being sold here were much more senior than most of the medicinal powders in the Gold and Power Market. Of course, the items here were priced higher. In the Medicinal Powder Pavilion , professional appraisers were waiting for serving guests at any time, which was not free.

Compared to most of the people inside the building, Dali and Elder Gulas in bear hide looked like old farmers selling herbal medicine in the downtown coming from rural areas. The two people looked pretty "rustic", which formed a sharp contrast with the senior case of medicaments, causing them to become pretty eye-catching.

The two people came upstairs to the 2nd floor of the Medicinal Powder Pavilion and stopped behind a counter in the east of the 2nd floor. Elder Gulas then opened the case and put the items into the crystal counter carefully. After that, they just waited there for customers.

Two Hua knights soon came to the front of the counter and asked about Elder Gulas. Elder Gulas could speak Hua language fluently. Through a short communication, the two Hua knights realized that they were selling a medicament which could allowfighters below knight level to improve their battle strength rapidly with an extremely low effect. The two Hua knights were interested in it pretty much; however, after inquiring about the price, the two Hua knights shook their heads and left.

The price of one vial of medicament was 1 earth-element crystal.

It was definitely a high price for a vial of medicament.

In a few minutes, a few batches of people had arrived to inquire about the price of this medicament; however, none of them would like to buy them. Besides being highly priced, they were not even available for knights. Therefore, very few people were interested in it.

Such a situation had lasted for consecutive 3 days.

Watching the last black-skinned knight with Moxican hairstyle leaving after an inquiry, old wild bear Dali finally couldn't stand to say, "Gulas, whether our price is a bit excessive? If we cannot even sell one vial of medicament, we will be here in vain!"

"Source of berserk energy is the specialty of the huge bear tribe, also the only thing that we could sell in this scene. It's not a common medicament, but a treasure that could allow a fighter to turn into a bear-killing fighter. The other medicaments that could improve one's battle strength greatly in a short period couldn't match the effect of our source of berserk energy or have great side effects. Very few of the other medicaments could match our source of berserk energy. We've made a great decision to exchange these source of berserk energy for earth-element crystals; this price was fixed by some elders of the huge bear tribe and Sarlin the Pontiff through negotiation. An earth-element crystal might be precious for us; however, in Taixia Country, if we meet someone who favors them, urgently need them and would like to exchange earth-element crystals for them constantly, it would be worthwhile even if we failed 10 times..." Elder Gulas said decisively.

"Is that the will of His Majesty Tsar?" Old wild bear Dali suddenly asked while his eyes turned sharp, "His Majesty Tsar has left Ice and Snow Wilderness for 5 years. Besides those old guys in your huge bear tribe, nobody could contact His Majesty. Can you tell me the whereabouts of His Majesty Tsar? I always feel that you old guys are cheating me with something. Additionally, you left the hotel on the night two days ago and didn't come back until

daybreak. You don't smoke; however, when you came back that night, I smelt a low-quality flavor of tobacco from your mouth. I wonder where have you been that night. Don't think that I'm an idiot. Wild bears are most sensitive."

Old wild bear Dali indeed had a very terrifying instinct.

Elder Gulas faintly frowned; closely after that, he relieved his frown, "This is the confidentiality of our Sacred Iceland Kingdom!"

"Even I couldn't know the secret? Actually, I'm his father-in-law. The child between him and Sabrina should call me grandpa!" Old wild bear whispered while widely opening his eyes and gritting his teeth. Whatever, there was nobody here for the time being. Even if someone heard their talk, nobody would care about that in this place of Xuanyuan Hill.

"You don't need to ask me about that!" Elder Gulas said in a calm way.

"Why?" Old wild bear asked.

"Without the consent of Sarlin the Pontiff and Elder Toles, I have no right to tell you any news about His Majesty!"

Old wild bear glared at Elder Gulas. Elder Gulas just looked straight into his eyes without feeling shameless. After looking at each other for about 10 seconds, old wild bear Dali suddenly let out a sigh as he lowered his eye light, "Well, I was just worried about the safety of Sabrina and her child. I know that His Majesty has a lot of secrets. It might not be good if these secrets were exposed to the public. You only need to tell me whether His Majesty is alive or not so that I could comfort Sabrina and her kid when they ask me about that?"

After throwing two glances at the old wild bear, Elder Gulas said, "Of course, His Majesty is still alive. Nobody in this world could do any harm to him. However, he met a trouble and couldn't return to Ice and Snow Wilderness for the time being!"

"It's good as long as His Majesty is alive!" Old wild bear looked around before suddenly lowering his voice in a secret way, "His Majesty should have Hua bloodline besides those in the Ice and Snow Wilderness, right?"

After hearing that, Elder Gulas instantly threw a sharp glance at old wild bear Dali.

"Don't look at me in that way. Sabrina's kid has black pupils; the children of those women in Spencer Clan have black pupils. The kid of that woman in Saint Petersburg also has black pupils. Black pupils have already become the symbolic pupils of the ancient god. However, actually, I'm always thinking that the black pupil is the most evident feature of Hua people. If His Majesty Tsar has the bloodline of Hua people, of course, he could leave such a hereditary feature on his descendants!" Sometimes, old wild bear Dali looked rude; however, he was actually pretty smart.

"I don't know what you are talking about!" Gulas warned old wild bear by throwing a sharp glance at him. Closely after that, he suddenly turned around and saw 2 men and 1 woman approaching them after going upstairs, "We've got a business..."

Old wild bear Dali also turned around before taking in a deep breath, "Hush...2 male earth knights and 1 female black iron knight..."

It was Zhang Tie, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Bai Suxian who were walking towards them...

Chapter 1132: A Trade

"Treasures Complex is like a high-profile super large shopping mall. Nominally, the Medicinal Powder Pavilion sells medicinal powders during the period of Treasures Meeting. Those who could come to Treasures Complex are all knights or from major clans. Therefore, the medicinal powders here are much more advanced than those outside. In my memory, someone once sold a silver secret item-level medicinal powder in the Medicinal Powder Pavilion of Treasures Complex in a Treasures Meeting..."

Mountain Lifting Hermit was much more talkative than before. He might be too thrilled after meeting Zhang Tie once again or finally found a good confidant. After entering the Treasures Complex, Mountain Lifting Hermit simply became a kind-hearted guide. He would explain it to Zhang Tie as long as he paid attention to something.

Like what Donder told him before. In this world, actually few people were born to be short-spoken. Most of the people who looked short-spoken had not met that one whom could make them open their mouth without any concern. When a person talked about the industries that he was interested in or when he was completely relaxed, he might be talkative. Zhang Tie felt that Mountain Lifting Hermit might be such a person.

To be honest, Mountain Lifting Hermit was a kind-hearted lovely old man. Although so many years had passed, Mountain Lifting Hermit still kept it in mind that Zhang Tie had saved his life in the hieron's ruins. When Mountain Lifting Hermit encountered Zhang Tie; especially after the communication with Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian in the Heavens Seal Hotel, in which process Zhang Tie exposed his secret to Mountain Lifting Hermit and Mountain Lifting Hermit determined to join Iron-Dragon Sect, the two people's relationship became closer. Therefore, after coming to the Treasures Complex, Mountain Lifting Hermit couldn't stand to be

talkative.

Of course, the layout inside the Medicinal Powder Pavilion couldn't be matched by common places outside. Even though Zhang Tie didn't know about buildings, he could also feel that everything inside and outside this Medicinal Powder Pavilion was made by masters. Although Zhang Tie knew that this Medicinal Powder Pavilion was just a senior shopping mall, he still couldn't help exploring the rockeries, brooks, flowers, grasses and trees here. Those medicinal powders in the stores aroused his interest in exploring treasures inexhaustibly.

Zhang Tie could sniff faint, special fragrance of medicinal powders and medicaments from so many open booths here.

Although Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and Mountain Lifting Hermit followed Elder Gulas and that old wild bear here, Zhang Tie still pretended to look at the other stalls first. He even bought some vials of rare super recovery medicament, longlasting night-viewing medicament and an item called vigor pill before coming to the stall of Gulas and Dali on the 2nd floor slowly.

As all the medicinal powders and medicaments here were priced by element crystals, those vials of medicaments and pills cost Zhang Tie more than 60 earth-elements crystals.

Mountain Lifting Hermit and Bai Suxian didn't know what Zhang Tie was thinking about. After taking a round here for a short while, they also gained something.

Bai Suxian was very interested in those stalls. In her eyes, those people who sold medicaments and pills here were not for money, but for entertainment like how children played games.

"If only we could also produce some medicaments and sell them here!" Bai Suxian said with flickering eyes.

"Why?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Don't you feel it's very interesting and entertaining here?" Bai

Suxian asked while blinking her eyes.

'Interesting?' Zhang Tie revealed a faint, bitter smile before shaking his head. This was the difference between a youth who grew up in Blackhot City and a princess of a lord in Taixia Country. When Zhang Tie saw these stalls, he would think about the profits of these medicaments and the great power and organizing ability that were required to gather these resources. However, Bai Suxian only felt that it was interesting. Whereas, it was not Bai Suxian's fault. The living environments between Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were greatly different from each other. Gradually, they would have different opinions about the same affair. Bai Suxian had never been worried about gold coins since she was young; as for Bai Suxian, money was like fresh air that could be freely supplied; how could she understand the world outlook of a person who grudged eating a bowl of rice brew in order to save a few copper coins for his family?

The fruit of plunder that he gifted his elder brother previously could enable him to be a pharmacist, not to mention producing medicament. However, only some of his elder brother's medicaments could be sold here. Because the medicaments and pills that were sold here were basically produced by pharmacists above green robe. Additionally, the medicaments here were not cheap. It would be simple if they were priced in gold coins; however, these medicaments were priced in element crystals. No knight would ever complain about having too many element crystals; even Zhang Tie was not qualified to be a magnate here.

"If Iron-Dragon Sect wants to develop, we have to have a high-level pharmacist!" Mountain Lifting Hermit looked at these medicaments with a solemn look as he provided a sincere suggestion to Zhang Tie as a grand elder of Iron-Dragon Sect, "Besides pharmacist, other senior professionals such as rune instruments master are also necessary for a sect to become outstanding. Although we have to pay or exchange for many

things, if a sect was not able to train various professionals and talents, it would face a limit in development!"

"Hmm, I see. As we've just established the Iron-Dragon Sect, we have to do it step by step. I believe that we will have these talents in the future!" Zhang Tie said confidently as he nodded.

After sensing Zhang Tie's confidence, Mountain Lifting threw a profound glance at Zhang Tie silently. Of course, Mountain Lifting Hermit treated Zhang Tie's confidence as a vigorous spirit of a young man. However, he didn't know that Zhang Tie had the two unrivaled sharp weapons that could make Iron-Dragon Sect unprecedentedly bright. Super liquor and the bloody sacrifice furnace were both unique in Taixia Country. Super liquor could make Iron-Dragon Sect extremely rich and influential across Taixia Country; a bloody sacrifice furnace would be pursued by people in a queue. With the two sharp weapons in hand, he would never lack senior professionals. Watching these medicaments being priced in element crystals, Zhang Tie was even thinking about pricing the use of bloody sacrifice furnace in element crystals too.

'According to the level of the one who needs a bloody sacrifice, a demon or a bloody figure would cost them one element crystal; a demon knight would cost them at least 100 element crystals. Those who are on good terms with me could enjoy 20% off, hehehe...'

When Zhang Tie imagined the prospect of his sect, he revealed a smile. As long as those who needed a bloody sacrifice felt that it was worthwhile, the price would not be determined by him. The bloody sacrifice furnace could even help knights recover their chakra through the bloody sacrifice, who else across Taixia Country could have such a treasure?

Zhang Tie even felt that he had not fully tapped the functions of bloody sacrifice furnace in the Earth-elements Realm. Now that bloody sacrifice furnace was effective to knights, would it be effective to those common fighters below knight level who didn't

need to recover their wounds or breakthrough their bottlenecks? Evidently, it was impossible. In the final analysis, the effect of bloody sacrifice was a transfer of life energy, which would not disappear out of any reason. As long as one received the energy from the demon or a bloody figure through the bloody sacrifice, he would change for sure; unless that one was dead, who couldn't bear the blessing and baptism of this life energy.

When in the hieron's ruins, Zhang Tie had not imagined about the effect of bloody sacrifice furnace for common fighters. After coming back this time, Zhang Tie would like to test the effect of bloody sacrifice for fighters below knight level. If he didn't know all the effects of his trump card, it would be a laughingstock.

The 3 people just wandered leisurely and soon came to the front of the stall of Elder Gulas and old wild bear Dali.

Gulas and Dali didn't hawk. Knights were evidently different than pedlars in this scene. Actually, these stalls in the Medicinal Powder Pavilion could be completely managed by the professional stewards of Treasures Complex. As the owner of these medicaments and pills, as long as they fixed the prices of these medicaments and pills in advance and paid for the commission, they would set themselves free from the counters. Zhang Tie found that only a few knights or senior pharmacists were standing behind counters. Those knights and senior pharmacists who stood behind the counters expected to exchange their medicaments and pills for some rare element crystals or had other purposes such as exchanging their goods for some items so as to meet some condition or establish a long-term trade and cooperation relationship.

From a perspective, each session of Treasures Meeting served as a venue for human knights and senior professionals to cooperate with each other. After each session of Treasures Meeting, the relationship between major clans, countries and sects which had knights and senior professionals across the continents would

change to a certain degree, which contained opportunities and surging dark forces...

At the sight of the brilliance in the eyes of Gulas and Dali and the facial expressions of the two old guys after they exchanged a glance with each other, Zhang Tie knew that Gulas and Dali probably came here for establishing a relationship with people on behalf of Ice and Snow Wilderness or the Sacred Iceland Kingdom...

Chapter 1133: Knocking at the Door of Allies

Elder Gulas and old wild bear Dali were unrivaled knights in Ice and Snow Wilderness. After coming to Taixia Country, especially in the Treasures Complex of Xuanyuan Hill, even though they looked silent and faintly genial, Zhang Tie could easily find that they were restrained and meticulous.

Although Zhang Tie didn't know why the two people came here, given their looks; especially the bear-hide coats on them, Zhang Tie felt a bit familiar and poignant as if he saw his poor relatives from hometown in a prosperous city.

In Xuanyuan Hill, 999 of 1,000 people might not know where was the Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Compared to Taixia Country, Sacred Iceland Kingdome was too small and poor that people could not even find it on the map. According to Zhang Tie's knowledge, the changing territory of remote small countries in Waii Subcontinent would not be considered in the update of the official map of Taixia Country; otherwise, the official map of Taixia Country would be updated more than 365 times.

The official map published by Taixia Country would usually be updated only once per three years. If Taixia Country officially admitted establishing diplomatic relations with the Sacred Iceland Kingdom, 3 years later, the full name of Sacred Iceland Kingdom would appear in the Ice and Snow Wilderness in the north of Waii Subcontinent and the nearby waters. If the Sacred Iceland Kingdom didn't establish diplomatic relations with Taixia Country officially, the name of Sacred Kingdom Kingdom would never appear on the official map of Taixia Country.

At least when Zhang Tie browsed the official map of Taixia Country last time, he didn't see the name of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Last time, the ice field in the north of Waii Subcontinent was still called Ice and Snow Wilderness; that waters were called Ewentra Waters. On the former official map of Taixia Country,

this region was gray, which indicated that there was not a single human civilization which was officially admitted by Taixia Country although it was a human habitation.

Under the gaze of the two people, Zhang Tie felt complex as he walked towards them with a curious look.

Seeing Zhang Tie walking towards that stall, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Bai Suxian also followed him over there. Compared to Zhang Tie who knew the background of the two people, Bai Suxian started to become curious about the items that they sold only after throwing a glance at their weird costumes.

"What's this?" Bai Suxian had opened her mouth at the sight of the row of the source of berserk energy behind the crystal counter before Zhang Tie asked.

Zhang Tie had seen the source of berserk energy when he was in Ice and Snow Wilderness; actually, it was like red jelly which was a bit hard. Being neither liquid nor solid, it was a substance which was similar to the colloid. Being a bit brighter than jelly, it looked like ruby or garnet. It was hard to say whether it was a pill or a medicament.

Compared to the source of berserk energy being put in an animal-hide bag or a lead box that Zhang Tie saw in Ice and Snow Wilderness previously, these source of berserk energy being in the counter looked much better. They had been packaged delicately. There was a golden pattern of a huge bear on the simple source of berserk energy; it was closely put in a square crystal box; additionally, there was a larger box made of pure gold outside the square crystal box. The entire package of a source of berserk energy would cost less than 20 gold coins. In this way, the source of berserk energy raised its level at once.

Pessimistically, besides the piece of god's star that was hidden in the huge bear tribe, the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness might only present the source of berserk energy which was formed by the

ability of god's star in Treasures Complex.

Bai Suxian dressed up pretty well today. After peeping at the jewelry on Bai Suxian's hands and neck, Elder Gulas and old wild bear Dali exchanged a glance with each other out of privity. Closely after that, stodgy Gulas revealed a faint smile.

"This is a source of berserk energy. It's a super powerful medicament which could allow common fighters below knight to go berserk constantly!" Elder Gulas said genially. Old wild bear Dali was still stealthily glancing at the space-teleportation finger ring of Bai Suxian. Closely after that, he forcefully swallowed his saliva. The entire wild bear tribe might not afford that finger ring of Bai Suxian.

The moment Zhang Tie heard Elder Gulas's words, he had figured out why Gulas would come to Taixia Country. Because in the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness, Elder Gulas could speak Hua language best and could read Hua characters. Besides Sarlin the Pontiff, Elder Gulas' accomplishment in Hua language and characters could rank top 3 among all the elders across Ice and Snow Wilderness. Perhaps, only the clan head of Spencer Clan could match Elder Gulas in Hua language. Sarlin the Pontiff was the central character of Sacred Iceland Kingdom; especially when Zhang Tie was not in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Sarlin the Pontiff would not leave Saint Peterburg or the hieron.

After seeing old wild bear Dali's shameless demeanor, Elder Gulas silently kicked him from below the table. After being kicked, the old wild bear moved his eyes away from Bai Suxian's finger ring like how a wild bear saw honey. After that, he pretended to cough twice as he looked at Elder Gulas. As Dali didn't speak Hua language, he was confused about the content of the talk between Elder Gulas and Bai Suxian.

Elder Gulas slightly moved his lips as he translated Bai Suxian's question for Dali in a secret way.

Elder Gulas's trivial movement didn't escape from Zhang Tie's eyes. After hearing that this item had nothing to do with women and couldn't make her more beautiful, Bai Suxian immediately lost her interest in the source of berserk energy. All the medicaments and pills that Bai Suxian had bought could make her more beautiful and younger more or less.

Before awkward silence appeared, Zhang Tie had revealed a big smile as if he was very interested in the source of berserk energy, "Can you show me one vial of the source of berserk energy?"

Elder Gulas threw a glance at Zhang Tie. Closely after that, he took out a vial of berserk energy and put it onto Zhang Tie's hand. Given Zhang Tie's identity as an earth knight and the security measures of Treasures Complex, Elder Gulas was not worried that Zhang Tie would do something illegal.

Although it was not Zhang Tie's first time to see the source of berserk energy, he still pretended to see it for the first time. Without opening the package, Zhang Tie directly released his knight's consciousness and pretended to explore the source of berserk energy spiritually.

"This thing...is a bit weird!" Zhang Tie slightly frowned on purpose. Closely after that, he directly passed the source of berserk energy to Mountain Lifting Hermit as he said, "Elder brother, take a look. I feel something inside the source of berserk energy could respond to the four elements!"

The source of berserk energy was mainly made of a strange substance formed by the 4 elements in the elements realm which were extracted by the Gold's Star. The source of berserk energy was formed out of the void. As Zhang Tie knew this secret, he said it on purpose.

Elder Gulas just translated Zhang Tie's words for the old wild bear Dali by moving his mouth silently.

"Hmm, it's indeed a bit different than common medicaments!"

Mountain Lifting Hermit said after taking the source of berserk energy from Zhang Tie. Closely after that, he gave it back to Zhang Tie. As a lone ranger, Mountain Lifting Hermit lacked his interest in goods which were only available to fighters below knight too. Is a berserk ant different than a common ant for an earth knight? Of course not. If so, this good would be useless for an earth knight.

Holding the source of berserk energy, Zhang Tie asked Gulas, "I've seen common medicaments which could improve one's battle strength. Can you tell me about the largest difference between this source of berserk energy and common medicaments which could improve one's battle strength?"

"Common medicaments which could improve one's battle strength is disposable. One vial of those medicaments could only help a fighter go berserk once; additionally, they have a lot of side effects. By contrast, our source of berserk energy is eternal. As long as you have a proper physical condition and could activate the strength of the source of berserk energy, you could go berserk at any time until you promote to a knight. Additionally, our source of berserk energy has a trivial side effect!" Elder Gulas said confidently.

"What do you mean by having a proper physical condition?"

Elder Gulas looked Zhang Tie's sturdy figure up and down with an appreciative eye light, "If the user could have a sturdy figure like yours, even if they only have 70% of your physical strength, they could basically activate and digest the strength brought by the source of berserk energy after promoting to LV 6!"

"Is it available to commoners?"

"No, if average people or weak people use our source of berserk energy, it's almost equal to injuring themselves. Their body couldn't bear the impact of the source of berserk energy at all. Only those strong guys could bear the impact caused by the source of berserk energy!"

Picky customers probably buy the goods. Elder Gulas replied Zhang Tie's question very patiently. When Elder Gulas talked with Zhang Tie, old wild bear Dali just listened to it on one side like an idiot.

"Interesting!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he stroked his jaw and said, "I've not heard about the source of berserk energy before?"

"It's the specialty of our Sacred Iceland Kingdom. It's made by our pontiff with a secret method. Because the holy war breaks out, we determine to present it so as to make a bit contribution to humans in the holy war!" Elder Gulas said heroically.

Zhang Tie knew that Elder Gulas didn't tell him the truth. Because of the source of berserk energy, there were strong berserk fighters in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Huge bear tribe didn't provide the source of berserk energy for outsiders except for those Slav tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness previously. Even though Zhang Tie became Tsar, he had not thought about occupying God's Star and the source of berserk energy. He still handed the right of disposal of the God's Star and the source of berserk energy to the elders of the huge bear tribe. The reason that Ice and Snow Wilderness would like to sell this good was definitely not as heroic and simple as was told by Elder Gulas.

Pitifully, Zhang Tie had not contacted Sarlin the Pontiff for a long Time; he was really impulsive to ask Sarlin the Pontiff by the remote-sensing crystal.

"How much?" Zhang Tie inquired.

"One earth-element crystal for one vial!"

The price made Zhang Tie speechless. Zhang Tie was clear about the price of this good in Ice and Snow Wilderness very well. An earth-element crystal might not afford one truck of source of berserk energy; however, it would definitely be more valuable than a box of the source of berserk energy. However, in this place, the

price of this good could rise by many times after being packed delicately.

"It's a bit expensive. No matter how a fighter below knight; especially a low-level fighter below LV 9 went berserk, his life would not be more valuable than an element crystal." Zhang Tie said mercilessly. But it was real. In the eyes of most knights, a common fighter's life would really not be more valuable than an element crystal. Although Zhang Tie's words sounded cold, he was still interested in this vial of the source of berserk energy very much. Zhang Tie just held that source of berserk energy as he added, "Additionally, this vial of the source of berserk energy is meaningless. It should be equipped for a corps of low-level fighters below knight so as to exert its utmost effect!"

Zhang Tie was bargaining.

However, after hearing Zhang Tie's words, Elder Gulas' eyes sparkled while his face turned solemn too, "This humble man is Gulas, the political chancellor of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. This one is an important elder of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. May I know your name, your excellency?"

After hearing that Elder Gulas was asking about his name, Zhang Tie felt absurd and complex. However, he had to answer with a solemn look, "I'm Cui Li, the owner of Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory and the master of Iron-Dragon Sect."

After hearing that Zhang Tie was both an owner of a bounty territory and a master of a sect, Elder Gulas's face turned solemn too; especially the identity of the master of a sect shocked Elder Gulas very much. According to Elder Gulas' knowledge, those who could be a master of a sect were really powerful ones and had close relationships with major clans in Taixia Country. Such a powerful force was urgently needed by the Sacred Iceland Kingdom. "It's the retail price. If master Cui needs a large number of vials of the source of berserk energy, we can further negotiate about the price..."

When Elder Gulas said it, he looked around here as if he wanted to say it was not a proper place for a negotiation.

"Where do you live?" Zhang Tie asked straightforwardly.

Elder Gulas directly gave Zhang Tie a name card made of pure gold which was marked with their address. Zhang Tie found that they lived in a grand hotel of Xuanyuan Hill.

"This good..." Zhang Tie weighed the vial of the source of berserk energy.

Elder Gulas directly took out another vial of the source of berserk energy from inside the counter and passed it onto Zhang Tie's hand as he said generously, "Master Cui, you can take the two vials of the source of berserk energy for free. You can have someone try the effect of the two vials of the source of berserk energy. If master Cui feels it proper, you could find us in that address. We live there during the period of the Treasures Meeting!"

"Sure, thanks!" Zhang Tie directly teleported the two vials of the source of berserk energy and that name card into his portable space-teleportation equipment.

After knowing that Zhang Tie had a space-teleportation equipment, Gulas and Dali raised their eyebrows with astonishment once again.

Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and Mountain Lifting Hermit then bade a farewell to Gulas and Dali.

Not until the three people went away did old wild bear Dali hurriedly ask Gulas in a secret way, "Who's he, why did you behave so generously? What did you say just now?"

"This man is Cui Li, an owner of a bounty territory in Taixia Country and a master of a sect. He's very interested in our source of berserk energy. We could be friends with him!" Gulas said with looming eye light as he watched the direction where Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and Mountain Lifting Hermit were heading for.

"Are all the knights in Taixia Country that rich? An earth knight and a black iron knight both carry a space-teleportation equipment?" Old wild bear Dali let out a sigh.

"The 3 people are not common knights in Taixia Country!"

"How? Do you know them?"

"Have you forgotten about that news that we heard in the Treasures Complex just now? A prince from a subcontinent was kicked to death by an earth knight at the gate of Gold and Power Market!"

"They are?" Old wild bear Dali widely opened his mouth. He was really shocked by that news just now. As a black iron knight, when he heard that another black iron knight from a subcontinent was kicked to death by a powerful earth knight in Taixia Country being not far from him in a split second, old wild bear Dali felt a bit gloomy more or less. He also sensed the strong stress caused by Taixia Country, the axis country of humans. Old wild bear Dali had not imagined that he could meet that powerful man in the Treasures Complex so early.

"Probably!"

"I remember that the female was a..."

"A princess of a lord in Taixia Country. The sphere of influence of the princess' clan is equal to the size of many Blackson Humans Corridor!"

...

In order to not arouse others' suspicions, Zhang Tie just expressed that he was interested in the source of berserk energy before leaving Gulas and Dali. However, holding the two vials of the familiar yet strange source of berserk energy, Zhang Tie slightly felt a bit frustrated, 'It seems that the Sacred Iceland Kingdom might have encountered some trouble; otherwise, Gulas and Dali would not seek for allies in Taixia Country...'

Gulas and Dali could only use the source of berserk energy to knock at the door of the allies in Taixia Country.

'What happened to Ice and Snow Wilderness?'

Zhang Tie became a bit absent-minded when he thought about Ice and Snow Wilderness...

Chapter 1134: Returning to Lord Guangnan's Manor

When Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian returned to Lord Guangnan's Manor in Xuanyuan Hill, it was already dark.

After one days' travel, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian had supper outside together with Mountain Lifting Hermit. After supper, Zhang Tie gave Mountain Lifting Hermit a remote-sensing finger ring that he brought from the Earth-elements Realm before returning to Lord Guangnan's Manor with Bai Suxian.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian didn't see the piece of God's Star that they had been expecting for in the Treasures Complex. In this Treasures Meeting, the piece of God's Star was a very attractive bait. As they didn't see it in the Treasures Complex, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian were a bit disappointed although they didn't determine to get such a piece of God's Star.

Of course, they were not the only ones who were disappointed. In the Treasures Complex, many excited knights were disappointed as they had not seen the piece of God's Star.

According to the explanation of the Treasures Complex, the piece of God's Star would be displayed in the public today in terms of the auction. Pitifully, this piece of God's Star had been bought by a mysterious figure in a small-range authentication meeting ahead of the auction. Therefore, the seller canceled off the auction of the piece of God's Star.

The identities of the seller and the buyer, the transaction price or trading conditions and the functions of that piece of God's Star had become secrets according to the requests of the seller and the buyer.

Bai Suxian was a bit angry about it. By contrast, Zhang Tie was a bit calmer. This result was exemplary. The better the good was,

the more people would like it and the possibility of it to appear in the public would be less. The explanation of Gold and Power Market was very logical.

In Xuanyuan Hill, of course, powerful ones didn't need to buy something in an auction for the sake of safety. It might be abnormal if this good was sold in terms of the auction. What was sold in terms of the auction could be directly priced in gold coins or element crystals; however, a piece of God's Star could not be simply measured in gold coins or element crystals. The terms of interchange might be involved with some secrets of both parties; therefore, they could only make transaction privately. Gold and Power Law declared the news that a piece of God's Star would be sold in the Treasures Meeting so as to attract people and increase the influence of the Treasures Meeting. By attracting some more powerful buyers, the seller could also raise the value of the piece of God's Star by proposing more favorable conditions in the negotiation.

All the people who came here for the piece of God's Star were used by someone unconsciously.

After thinking through this point, Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile. In this world, there were many smart ones. Even if you knew that you were used by them, you couldn't complain about it.

Honestly, Zhang Tie was very curious about the functions of the piece of God's Star.

The piece of God's Star in Ice and Snow Wilderness could directly form the source of berserk energy from the elements realm. Zhang Tie really wondered about the function of this piece of God's Star in Gold and Power Market.

Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and Mountain Lifting Hermit kept talking about God's Star at supper. According to the old bird knight Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Tie knew that each of the other 6 sects had at least a piece of God's Star besides that in Gold and

Power Law. Given these pieces of God's Star, they had one common function, namely, forming the crystals of one element from the elements realm. With one piece of God's Star, knights could form a chakra much faster than their peers; additionally, they didn't need to worry about the lack of element crystals forever.

As for a sect or a knight, a piece of God's Star was like a treasury that could provide element crystals constantly. Although this treasury could not be open to everyone, If a sect had a piece of God's Star, it would have an exceptional advantage for cultivating knights.

The more knights a sect had, the more precious a piece of God's Star that could constantly form crystals of one element would be for the sect. Perhaps, this explained why the major sects in Taixia Country were so powerful.

When he heard this news, Zhang Tie's heart pounded for a short while. He thought, 'If I have a piece of God's Star which could constantly gather water elements for me, with the assistance of my purgatory samsara and my powerful multi-tasking ability, I might promote to a shadow knight much faster.'

However, Zhang Tie just thought about it. After traveling in the Gold and Power Market, he had not even seen the so-called piece of God's Star at all, not to mention those in the other 6 major sects. If he went to the location of a major sect and requested to take a look at their piece of God's Star, he might be driven out of there by them while being regarded as a lunatic.

From this event, Zhang Tie realized that although he was a bit famous in the Earth-elements Realm and Youzhou Province; he was just a fresh bird in Xuanyuan Hill. Even Bai Suxian who had Lord Guangnan's Mansion on her back was nothing in many people's eyes. Otherwise, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian should have been invited to attend the small-range authentication meeting about that piece of God's Star. The conflict between them and Gold and Power Law just happened this morning. Before this morning,

who else could predict that he would almost fight a master-level figure in Gold and Power Law at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market.

Bai Suxian's complaint was mainly caused by being despised.

On the way back, Zhang Tie even comforted Bai Suxian for a short while.

Honestly, if Bai Suxian's dad Lord Guangnan was in Xuanyuan Hill, he might be qualified to attend the small-range authentication meeting about that piece of God's Star given his overall strength and identity. Even though Bai Suxian was a princess, in the eyes of those people in Gold and Power Law, she could not even match an earth knight like Mountain Lifting Hermit.

'Who on the earth bought that piece of God's Star?' Zhang Tie was thinking about this on the way back. After making a prediction by pinching his fingers, Zhang Tie realized that there were at least 20 figures who were qualified to buy that piece of God's Star, including the three top chancellors and 9 ministers and the top 7 sects in Taixia Country. These magnates might not complain about having too many pieces of God's Star. Besides them, some big figures from top major clans might also be potential purchasers.

Besides being a bit unpleasant due to the matter of the piece of God's Star, Zhang Tie had actually widened his horizon.

Zhang Tie's recognition and horizon about treasures had reached a new realm after visiting those goods in the Medicinal Powder Pavilion, Rune Instruments Pavilion, Alchemist's Items Pavilion, Instruments Pavilion, Secret Items Pavilion and Jades Pavilion. All the goods in these pavilions were of top quality. Almost all the goods in the Secret Items Pavilion were bronze secret items and silver secret items. Even those goods in the Rune Instruments Pavilion, Alchemist's Items Pavilion and Instruments Pavilion had at least broken through black iron effect and could be available to

knights.

After leisurely wandering in the Treasures Complex for about 4 hours, they had not even looked at all the goods in those pavilions of the Treasures Complex seriously. They didn't even have time to visit the Jades Pavilion.

When they entered the Secret Items Pavilion, they started to realize that they didn't have enough money.

In the Secret Items Pavilion, even though Bai Suxian couldn't afford any good at her will. Mountain Lifting Hermit targeted a space-teleportation item in the Secret Items Pavilion. It was a simple and classic plate being worn on one's neck, which contained 18 cubic meters of storage. Mountain Lifting Hermit took a brochure of this space-teleportation item and prepared to attend the bidding of this space-teleportation item after 3 days.

The bottom price of this space-teleportation item was 800 earth-elements crystals. Given Mountain Lifting Hermit's look, Zhang Tie estimated that he might not have too many earth-elements crystals than this bottom price, not to mention that the transaction price which might be a few times higher than its bottom price.

Zhang Tie had some earth-elements crystals and didn't lack space-teleportation items. However, he couldn't directly gift these items to Mountain Lifting Hermit. As an earth knight, Mountain Lifting Hermit had his self-esteem. He would never accept Zhang Tie's favor out of no reason. If Zhang Tie directly proposed to gift them to Mountain Lifting Hermit, Mountain Lifting Hermit might think that Zhang Tie despised him.

Seeing Mountain Lifting Hermit's longing eye light towards that common space-teleportation item, Zhang Tie could only plan to deal with it before the auction. He could lend some earth-element crystals to Mountain Lifting Hermit so that the latter could buy that space-teleportation item in the auction. After all, they had

appointed to meet each other a few days later.

After coming to the Gold and Power Market, Zhang Tie killed a b*stard and made a head-on confrontation with Han people in the public for the first time; additionally, he encountered Mountain Lifting Hermit, Elder Gulas and old wild bear Dali. What a stimulative day!

When they returned to the Lord Guangnan's Manor in Xuanyuan Hill, they could already see stars in the sky. After worrying about Ice and Snow Wilderness and sensing the locations of the two tracing feathers, Zhang Tie felt complex at once. Therefore, he felt a bit fatigued...

Chapter 1135: Train of Thoughts

"What's the matter? Are you tired?"

After sensing that Zhang Tie was a bit fatigued, Bai Suxian who had just got off the vehicle in the manor asked him out of concern.

When Bai Suxian stopped her footsteps, all the other maids and female servants stopped their footsteps too as they just waited aside quietly.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "It's fine, I was just thinking about something uninteresting. I will have a rest tonight!" As an earth knight, how could Zhang Tie feel tired physically; he was just mentally fatigued.

Bai Suxian nodded as she knew that Zhang Tie just wanted to be alone for a short period. Now that Zhang Tie had said that, of course, she would not fool around with Zhang Tie tonight like how they did last night. She also knew about their other purpose of Zhang Tie in Xuanyuan Hill. Although Zhang Tie looked relaxed these days, he was destined to be restless inside because of the stress and enemies that he was facing.

...

After talking with Bai Suxian for a short while and watching Bai Suxian walking towards her residence followed by a lot of maids, Zhang Tie took in a deep breath before walking towards his own residence.

His top enemy still assumed a high position in the emperor's imperial city safe and sound; however, it seemed that something bad happened to Ice and Snow Wilderness which he always treated as his firmest rear end. As a result, Elder Gulas and old wild bear Dali had to seek for allies and foreign aids with the source of beserk energy. After traveling in Xuanyuan Hill for a few days, Zhang Tie gradually understood about this human center; however, he also

had two fights in an explicable way and stirred up a lot of people. Heavens Holding Pavilion was a tricky power. Although Zhang Tie was justified, he had already stirred up Heavens Holding Pavilion. If Gold and Power Law was excluded, he had already stirred up two major sects in Taixia Country, namely, Taiyi Fantasy Sect and Heavens Holding Pavilion. Before the old enemies were cleaned, the new ones had come. Additionally, the most reassured place in Zhang Tie's heart met something bad. As a result, a lot of people whom Zhang Tie was concerned about were involved in it. Therefore, Zhang Tie had a train of thoughts at once.

"Did you kill people outside today?" Uncle Zhong asked in front of Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie had to stop his footsteps.

Although Uncle Zhong looked calm, the two vertical wrinkles in his forehead as sharp as blade carried a faint killing intent. Needless to say, Zhang Tie estimated that most of the people across Xuanyuan Hill might have known what happened at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market today. Of course, those in the manor knew that it was Bai Suxian who was sexually harassed. Therefore, it was inconvenient for Uncle Zhong to ask the princess about that; instead, he could only verify it from Zhang Tie.

"I've already killed that b*stard on the spot. Su Xian was not agitated; she was just disgusted for a short while!" Zhang Tie told Uncle Zhong.

Uncle Zhong nodded as he said in another tone, "I've already contacted the Lord Guangnan's Mansion. You don't need to worry about this event anymore. Lord will assign someone to deal with this event. Right in this afternoon, the one who was responsible for dealing with this event had already set off by airboat at the order of Lord!"

After hearing Uncle Zhong's words, Zhang Tie knew that what happened to Bai Suxian today had not come to an end. Now that someone dared sexually harass the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion, even though that b*stard was killed by Zhang Tie on the

spot, Lord Guangnan would make a further response to it. Although that damned prince had been killed, he had an elder knight on his side who was still alive. Additionally, who made him so audacious? Without reaching a satisfactory result, Lord Guangnan's Mansion would never give up.

"What's the plan of Lord Guangnan's Mansion?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"It's just a small country in a subcontinent. It's said that some more people of that small country are still in Xuanyuan Hill. After the chief justice delivered the order to forbid anyone of that small country to enter Xuanyuan Hill, I'm afraid that those people would never come back anymore. After dealing with these guys, it depends on Lord Guangnan whether Taixia Country would assign someone to the subcontinent..." Uncle Zhong revealed a faint smile which felt a bit merciless in Zhang Tie's eyes.

'Is this the style of a lord's mansion and major clan in Taixia Country?' Zhang Tie stood in silent tribute for those people of that small country in Taixia Country although he knew that those sons of b*tches deserved the death. 'Before those sons of b*tches wanted to sexually harass Bai Suxian, they might not have imagined that such a simple evil thought could lead to such a severe outcome. Perhaps, this is why Bai Suxian was not too angry about that and didn't mention about it too much later on. I'm afraid that Bai Suxian has long known about the outcome of these b*stards. Additionally, what happened today was different than that tomorrow. The event tomorrow was more like a conflict and oral quarrel between Bai Suxian and her peers. However, what happened today had been involved with the dignity of the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion.

"Han Clan of Gold and Power Law might be involved with those people!" Zhang Tie reminded Uncle Zhong. Although there were so many people surnamed Han and so many major Han Clans in the world, speaking of the Han Clan of Gold and Power Law, of course,

Uncle Zhong knew which one Zhang Tie referred to.

"Never mind. The master of Gold and Power Law has been serving as a minister of Taixia Country for less than 100 years; however, Lord Guangnan's Mansion has existed in the south border of Taixia Country for over 400 years. The history of Lord Guangnan's Mansion ranks first among the major clans in Taixia Country!" Uncle Zhong replied with a smile which carried arrogance rather than merciless killing intent, "Even if Lord Guangnan wants to prevent earth knights from leaving Taixia Country, nobody dares stop him, not to mention some common barbarians."

"That's right!" Zhang Tie nodded. Now that Lord Guangnan's Mansion had determined to deal with it, it was none of Zhang Tie's business anymore.

"Oh, Lord said that he wanted to meet you when you're free!" Uncle Zhong lowered his voice as he approached his head to Zhang Tie a bit as if he was whispering to Zhang Tie, "Lord has already known what happened yesterday and today. I was told by someone on Lord's side that Lord is very happy and spoke highly of your deeds. If Heavens Holding Pavilion dared find you trouble, Lord would definitely stand on your side..."

After fighting people twice for Bai Suxian and stirring up Heavens Holding Pavilion, Zhang Tie had not imagined that Bai Suxian's dad, also his would-be father-in-law, could speak highly of him, 'Is that a loss may turn out to be a gain?' Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile as he rubbed his face by his fingers for a short while after hearing Uncle Zhong's words.

Sleeping with her daughter's ladybro; assigning someone to carry out a bloody revenge as long as his daughter was upset by some barbarians; speaking highly of Zhang Tie's violent means. After combining with the above three events, Zhang Tie gradually figured out the temperament of Bai Suxian's dad. Bai Suxian's dad might be a weirdo among the Lords in Taixia Country. However,

this bizarre father-in-law didn't call him to see him straightforwardly; instead, he just requested Zhang Tie to see him whenever the latter was free. Given Zhang Tie's temperament, Lord Guangnan might have known that Zhang Tie didn't stay with Bai Suxian because of her identity as a princess.

"Did my disciples come back today?"

"Not yet. I've assigned someone to follow them up. They will be fine!"

After hearing Uncle Zhong's reply, Zhang Tie became completely reassured, 'I'm afraid that my disciples have been hyper in Xuanyuan Hill these days. Why not? A team of youngsters who had just established their friendship and emotions through survival training came to Xuanyuan Hill for the first time with a great handful of gold notes in Liu Xing's hand, it was impossible for them to be not hyper. It's more like a super deluxe tour group.'

...

'I wonder how Bai Suxian told about the process that we got acquainted with each other to her dad.' Zhang Tie thought about this question when he returned to his own room after leaving Uncle Zhong.

After closing the door from inside, nobody would disturb him anymore. After entering meditation for a short while in the room and carding the train of thoughts, Zhang Tie took out a remote-sensing crystal from his space-teleportation equipment and started to contact Sarlin the Pontiff who was in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

It had been too long since he contacted Sarlin the Pontiff by this remote-sensing crystal last time.

Compared to the remote-sensing crystals in Taixia Country and the Earth-elements Realm, this piece of remote-sensing crystal that Zhang Tie brought from Ice and Snow Wilderness was a bit coarser and larger. The more advanced a remote-sensing crystal was, the

smaller it would be in size. Those remote-sensing crystals that Zhan Tie gained in Earth-elements Realm were all integrated on a very small finger ring. The remote-sensing crystals on the finger rings of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace were very small too. The finger ring of Guan Elder even integrated with more than one remote-sensing crystal. This remote-sensing crystal that Zhang Tie brought from the huge bear tribe of Ice and Snow Wilderness was almost as large as a thumb.

Holding the coarse remote-sensing crystal in hand, Zhang Tie stroked it in a reminiscent way. Closely after that, he contacted with Sarlin the Pontiff by injecting his spiritual energy into it.

After sending the first signal for less than half a minute, Zhang Tie had received the response.

After confirming the opposite identities using the jargon and signal codes that they had appointed with each other in advance, Sarlin the Pontiff was very excited. Zhang Tie could even sense the thrilling spiritual wave from the other side through the remote-sensing crystal.

Zhang Tie didn't say that he had met Gulas and Dali in Xuanyuan Hill; instead, he asked about the overall situation facing Ice and Snow Wilderness straightforwardly.

——How's Ice and Snow Wilderness?

Even being the tsar of Sacred Iceland Kingdom, Zhang Tie still used to call it Ice and Snow Wilderness.

——All is well!

'All is well?' Zhang Tie faintly frowned.

——Didn't you meet any problem?

——Not yet for the time being.

——What do you mean?

——We've received the intelligence from detectives and the

businessmen who did business between Ewentra Archipelago and Western Continent, the Sacred Light Empire on Western Continent might take actions against the Sacred Iceland Kingdom to revenge that Your Majesty killed their scepter priest a few years ago...

Chapter 1136: Powerful Sacred Light Empire

If not being reminded by Sarlin the Pontiff, Zhang Tie had almost forgotten that he had killed such a figure in Ice and Snow Wilderness when he had just promoted to a knight.

'The scepter priest of Sacred Light Empire on Western Continent? As a knight with a huge empire on Western Continent on his back, such a role was definitely dignified at that time. With such a dignity, this guy almost made trouble in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

However, such a person was nothing in Zhang Tie's eyes today. Zhang Tie had killed dozens of knights of demons or three-eye association these years, which included 6 earth knights. By contrast, that d**chebag he killed on Western Continent didn't leave a deep impression in his mind.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that what happened many years ago fermented today.

Zhang Tie was not afraid of Sacred Light Empire on Western Continent. Although Sacred Light Empire was nothing for Taixia Country, it was an extremely terrifying giant for Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Zhang Tie still remembered some information about Sacred Light Empire. Being unrivaled in the eastern region of Western Continent, this country was under the rule of Sacred Light Church. It integrated his regime with religion. Sacred Light Empire pursued invasion and had a very powerful trend for expansion. With over 10 billion people, its territory was almost equal to 5 times that of Blackson Humans Corridor; namely, it might be equal to the area of 5-6 provinces in Taixia Country. Sacred Light Empire was one of the most powerful empires on Western Continent.

Previously, an ambitious scepter priest of Sacred Light Empire almost caused Ice and Snow Wilderness to split up. Today, with

the reason of revenging for the late specter priest of Sacred Light Empire, this country was going on an expedition towards the Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Those important elders in Ice and Snow Wilderness might have been sleepless.

'Sarlin the Pontiff knows my real identity; he also knows that I don't live well in Taixia Country; perhaps he has already known that my order for arrest has just been canceled off. So what? Because Sarlin the Pontiff also knows that I have terrifying enemies in Taixia Country such as the Gobbling Party.'

'This is the most helpless action and the way of survival for Sacred Iceland Kingdom.'

'Facing such a giant who exposes its fangs, Sarlin the Pontiff and the other elders in Ice and Snow Wilderness think that I the tsar, also the supreme ruler of Sacred Iceland Kingdom couldn't even protect myself. Even if I returned to Ice and Snow Wilderness, I would not help them a lot. A black iron knight couldn't reverse the overall situation facing Sacred Iceland Kingdom no matter how powerful he is.'

After thinking through this, Zhang Tie finally understood why he could meet Elder Gulas and old wild bear Dali in Xuanyuan Hill.

Zhang Tie felt being pretty guilty because it was him who killed that scepter priest; however, it was the entire Sacred Iceland Kingdom which was going to bear this severe consequence.

'However, there's one point that Sarlin the Pontiff and the other elders in Ice and Snow Wilderness could not imagine, I've already promoted to an earth knight in only a few years!'

When he thought about the above things, Zhang Tie gradually got hang of the problem and overall situation facing Ice and Snow Wilderness. Therefore, Zhang Tie became silent for a short while.

——Your Majesty, don't feel guilty about that. You killed the scepter priest of Sacred Light Empire for all the Slavs in Ice and

Snow Wilderness instead of yourself. Without Your Majesty's efforts, once Sacred Light Church rooted in Ice and Snow Wilderness, all the Slavs would deteriorate into slaves and livestock of Sacred Light Church. Facing the coming revenge and stress from Sacred Light Empire, I've already told Gulas and Dali to seek for allies and foreign aids in Taixia Country. The entire Ancient God Church across Sacred Iceland Kingdom might be able to resist them. No matter what happens, Your Majesty is always the hope for all of us.

Because Zhang Tie became silent for a short while, Sarlin the Pontiff thought that Zhang Tie felt guilty about that. Therefore, Sarlin the Pontiff started to comfort Zhang Tie through the coarse remote-sensing crystal. According to Sarlin the Pontiff, even though Zhang Tie couldn't return to Sacred Iceland Kingdom for the time being, they would also work out a method to respond to this crisis. Although Sarlin the Pontiff didn't express it explicitly, Zhang Tie could feel that Sarlin the Pontiff expected him to not return to Ice and Snow Wilderness without ensuring to defeat Sacred Light Empire in case of involving himself into the crisis.

——We could die; however, Your Majesty has to survive!

This was what Sarlin the Pontiff meant.

Zhang Tie's eyes turned wet. In this room, he silently dropped off his tears. It had been such a long time since he dropped off tears.

After coming to Taixia Country for 4 or 5 years, Zhang Tie had experienced too many life or death situations. When he was framed by this culprit in Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie didn't cry. When he was wanted by Taixia Country, he didn't cry; when he was disdained and sworn by the people across the world, he didn't cry; when he faced the great battle formation composed of tens of thousands of demon knights in the Earth-elements Realm, he didn't cry; however, Sarlin the Pontiff's one sentence made Zhang Tie drop off his tears silently.

After experiencing the hardships in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie became increasingly stronger. Any powerful enemy or chagrin would not make Zhang Tie drop off one tear; however, the decisive protection of his trusted ones at the critical moment made Zhang Tie embarrassed.

In the tears, Zhang Tie recovered his composure as he continued to contact Sarlin the Pontiff by the remote-sensing crystal so as to further confirm the current situation facing Ice and Snow Wilderness.

——How's the current situation facing Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago?

——Everything is normal. The entire Sacred Iceland Kingdom is flourishing. More and more outsiders are migrating in. With the dignity and power of Your Majesty, Ancient God Church has completely rooted in the country and won numerous believers. Wild bear tribe and fire bear tribe also intend to build cities. Besides Saint Peterburg and Eskil City, Ice and Snow Wilderness would have the 3rd city and the 4th city soon. All the children of Your Majesty are very healthy; additionally, being blessed by the Ancient God, they have become the sons of Ancient God. In case of wide-range panic, only some important elders across Ice and Snow Wilderness know the intelligence about the Sacred Light Empire...

Compared to the customary appellation of Zhang Tie, Sarlin the Pontiff used to call Zhang Tie's foundation and force in Waii Subcontinent as Sacred Iceland Kingdom. After hearing that his children were blessed by the Ancient God, Zhang Tie became a bit thrilled. Of course, Zhang Tie knew what "they were blessed by the Ancient God" meant. They must be born with a leakless body and the ancestral bloodlines that Zhang Tie had awakened.

In a split second, Zhang Tie even wanted to directly fly towards Ice and Snow Wilderness and looked at those people whom he was concerned about.

However, it was just an impulsion. After taking in a deep breath, Zhang Tie had recovered his composure. As for Zhang Tie, he couldn't just drop everything here in Taixia Country regardless of the outcome.

——Have you confirmed the intelligence about the Sacred Light Empire?

——We've confirmed it through many channels.

——Is there any chance for negotiation?

——Golden Roc Bank has a well-connected network and power on Western Continent; Sacred Light Empire is also a client of Golden Roc Bank. After receiving the intelligence, some important elders have already negotiated about it and known the attitude of Sacred Light Empire through Golden Roc Bank. If there's a possibility for compromise, Sacred Iceland Kingdom could stand it by paying some money or something else; however, Golden Roc Bank told us that Sacred Light Empire didn't agree with compromise decisively.

Sarlin the Pontiff's message was very detailed and complete. Between countries, there were neither enemies nor friends. Sacred Iceland Kingdom was far away from Sacred Light Empire. They didn't have any direct conflict of interest; additionally, their overall strength was not on the same level. If an ambitious scepter priest was killed by the Sacred Iceland Kingdom, this conflict might be reconciled at some cost; pitifully, Sacred Light Empire didn't think so.

Zhang Tie felt a bit disappointed as he continued——Does it mean that Sacred Light Empire just take revenge as an excuse?

——Indeed an excuse. If they wanted to revenge for that late scepter priest, Sacred Light Empire would not wait until now. The reason that they waited till now was that someone found that Sacred Iceland Kingdom's becoming more and more profitable. A few years ago, Ice and Snow Wilderness had been able to attract

the greedy attention of a scepter priest of Sacred Light Empire; now, Sacred Iceland Kingdom has been qualified to attract more hungry wolves.

——How's the overall strength of Sacred Light Empire? How's their high-level battle force?

——Sacred Light Empire is one of the seven biggest countries on Western Continent. The pope who rules Sacred Light Empire is a heavenly knight. It's said that he had the greatest possibility to promote to a sage-level knight on the Western Continent. Under the rule of the pope, there are 3 sacred light major priests who are shadow knights and are responsible for three major parishes across Sacred Light Empire. Under the rule of the 3 sacred light major priests, there are almost 40 throne major priests who are earth knights. Under the rule of throne major priests, there are over 500 scepter priests who are earth knights.

Such a battle strength was indeed overwhelming in front of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. No wonder that Sacred Light Empire could become one of the powerful countries on Western Continent. After hearing that, Zhang Tie knew that Sarlin the Pontiff and the other major elders in Ice and Snow Wilderness had already learned about the overall situation of Sacred Light Empire pretty well. After hearing such a sharp contrast in battle strength between two countries, Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes at once...

Chapter 1137: Ready for the Fight

A heavenly knight, 3 shadow knights, over 40 earth knights and over 500 black iron knights. Such a battle strength indeed made people feel awe-stricken. Such a battle strength was similar to that of a common military region in Taixia Country. However, after thinking about the high-end battle strength of Sacred Light Empire, Zhang Tie was not afraid of it even though he felt a bit stress from Sacred Light Empire because he knew that the Entire Sacred Light Empire would not put all of their battle strength on the remote place of Blackson Humans Corridor.

'How much battle strength did the demon general mobilize to launch a strike towards the entire Blackson Humans Corridor? How much battle strength would Sacred Light Empire mobilize to attack a small area of Blackhot Humans Corridor? In Blackhot City, even earth knights are rarely seen. Black iron knights would be unrivaled over there. An earth knight could make everybody breathless over there.' Zhang Tie gradually recovered his composure when he realized this point.

According to the intelligence about the Sacred Iceland Kingdom, there wasn't any earth knight in that country. Only some important elders were knights. Additionally, the important elders from all the tribes of Ice and Snow Wilderness didn't unite with each other very well. Even Zhang Tie himself showed up as a black iron knight a few years ago. Nobody across the Sacred Iceland Kingdom knew that Zhang Tie had already promoted to an earth knight, not to mention the Sacred Light Empire.

When Zhang Tie thought about this, he narrowed his eyes and shot out a faint, shrewd light like fine needles.

However, this was just Zhang Tie's guess; he needed to verify it.

——Do you know the military strength that Sacred Light Empire intend to mobilize towards us?

Revenge was just an excuse. Profit was what Sacred Light Empire actually pursued for. If they only wanted to revenge, they could assign a team of powerful knights there. However, if they wanted to plunder enough profit, the knights would definitely be followed by an army. If not, even if those knights carried portable space-teleportation items, how many goods could they take away from the Sacred Iceland Kingdom? Did they want to be exiled to the Ice and Snow Wilderness from the prosperous Western Continent? Those major priests in Sacred Light Empire pursued land, power, population even the glory of disseminating religious doctrines. They were not bandits and common thieves who would leave right away after a robbery. Additionally, their army and those low-level priests could help them control the entire Sacred Iceland Kingdom and maximize their interest. It was not hard to guess this point.

——It's said that Sacred Light Empire's one fleet and one Sacred Light expeditionary army of about 200,000 people had already been ready for it in the largest harbor in the east of Sacred Light Empire!

'A fleet and an expeditionary army of about 200,000 people?' Zhang Tie sneered. If there wasn't any high-level knight, Zhang Tie could exterminate all of them before they approached the waters of Ewentra Archipelago only by sending one command. However, if these people just followed the high-level battle strength of Sacred Light Empire to accept the military exploits, they could gradually digest the Sacred Iceland Kingdom only by controlling major cities, harbors, mines, railways and trading markets across Ice and Snow Wilderness. Historically, there were many examples that hundreds of thousands of people could conquer a country which had dozens of times more population than them, let alone these guys who excelled at brainwashing and bewildering people. Of course, all these were based on premise that they had enough high-level battle strength to conquer or digest the knight over Ice and Snow Wilderness.

——How many knights do Sacred Light Empire mobilize?

Zhang Tie cared about this question most. Without the support of knights, the so-called expeditionary army was just a joke.

——According to our intelligence, it was those throne major priests in the east parish of Sacred Light Empire who want to devour the Sacred Iceland Kingdom in the excuse of revenging for the scepter major priest of Sacred Light Empire. After they proposed the plan, it's said that the sacred light major priest in the chair of the eastern parish of Sacred Light Empire had already agreed with it. However, the major priests in the eastern parish are still negotiating the selection of candidates who are responsible for leading the expeditionary army. The final plan might be that one or two throne major priests would lead some scepter priests to go on a punitive expedition for Sacred Iceland Kingdom, followed by a fleet and an expeditionary army. They want to sweep over the Sacred Iceland Kingdom like how a lion fights a rabbit.

Sarlin the Pontiff explained it very solemnly even heavily through the remote-sensing crystal. As for the few black iron knights of those tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness, such a strength was indeed overwhelming. They only needed to dispatch a qualified throne major priest, an earth knight who had reached above 5-change realm to crush the weak counter-force in Ice and Snow Wilderness. After receiving such an intelligence, Sarlin the Pontiff and those important elders in Ice and Snow Wilderness started to be intense and flurried.

'One or two earth knights and some black iron knights?'

However, such a battle strength was nothing for Zhang Tie.

After blinking his eyes for a few times, Zhang Tie became relaxed all over at once. Like how he had imagined, although Sacred Light Empire was powerful, they had already treated the Sacred Iceland Kingdom seriously enough with such a military strength. Even so, they were actually making a fuss. However, this bit of battle

strength was just a piece of cake for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's experience in Taixia Country was indeed bumpy; however, Zhang Tie could gradually despise common earth knights. Only after a few years, who could imagine that Zhang Tie could make such a fast progress in the battle strength?

——What's our plan?

——After negotiating with Elder Gulas and the others elders, we've determined to seek some powerful allies in Taixia Country using the source of berserk energy. The best possible result is that the Sacred Light Empire could retreat when they find that we have some allies. By then, we will reach an armistice with them. If the source of berserk energy didn't work, we would use the piece of God's Star of the huge bear tribe. If the piece of God's Star didn't work, we would fight them to death. Our Slavs would never be slaves and squeezed. Elder Gulas and Dali have already reached Xuanyuan Hill of Taixia Country. There's a grand meeting over there. Our source of berserk energy might be able to attract the attention of some big figures on the Eastern Continent.

In order to respond to the coming army of Sacred Light Empire, Sarlin the Pontiff had made three countermeasures: first, the source of berserk energy; second, the piece of God's Star; third, fight them to death.

Sacred Light Empire was really powerful. Facing such an opponent, even Elder Gulas and the other elders of Ice and Snow Wilderness chose to find allies who would like to support Ice and Snow Wilderness for the source of berserk energy, they preferred to not fight Sacred Light Empire by force; instead, they preferred to threaten the opponent and reach an armistice with the opponent. This was not sadness but helplessness. Because there was such a sharp contrast between the two parties on battle strength. The three sacred light major priests of Sacred Light Empire were like three unshakable mountains in front of Ice and Snow Wilderness, not to mention that there was a heavenly knight

behind the three mountains.

Sarlin the Pontiff was worried about the expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire. However, after hearing the configuration and population of the expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire, Zhang Tie had made a comprehensive plan to respond to them in a short while.

——Whether any airboat will attend this action of Sacred Light Empire or not?

After considering it for a while, Zhang Tie asked another question. This question was very important. Because airboat had a strong maneuverability, if some knights of Sacred Light Empire went to Ice and Snow Wilderness by airboat, Zhang Tie had to change his counter-attack plan towards the expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire greatly.

——Across the entire Sacred Light Empire, there are only 4 airboats, which respectively belongs to the pope of Sacred Light Church and the three sacred light major priests. On the Western Continent, only top knights could have private airboats. There were fewer airboats on Western Continent than that in Taixia Country. All the airboats on the Western Continent are provided by Taixia Country. Additionally, when Taixia Country sold these airboats to those big figures on Western Continent, they had reached a very strict agreement, namely, these big figures and countries which had airboats on Western Continent were forbidden to put airboats in use of battles between humans. This intelligence was provided by Golden Roc Bank. According to the appointment between some countries on Western Continent and Taixia Country, as long as Taixia Country found that they put airboats in use of battles between humans, Taixia Country would interfere with the battle and confiscate their airboats by force.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the airboats provided by Taixia Country should follow this regulation. Because of this regulation, everything had become simple. Now that airboats were so rare on

Western Continent, perhaps some top figures in Sacred Light Empire didn't think that the so-called Sacred Iceland Kingdom was as expensive as one airboat; of course, they would not put their airboat in use of such a punitive expedition.

——Given your information, those knights of Sacred Light Empire would come here together with their fleet.

——Yes.

——How long will it take their fleet to arrive at Ewentra Archipelago from Sacred Light Empire?

——The fleet and expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire had already moved to the navy base on Morninglight Island in the easternmost part of Sacred Light Empire 2 months ago. As long as the major priests arrived, the fleet and expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire would set off. It would only take them about 1 month from the navy base on Morninglight Island to the waters of Ewentra Archipelago.

——Well, I see. My situation is not as perilous as that a few years ago. However, I still have some things to deal with in Taixia Country. You could have a try using the source of berserk energy. Hopefully, you could find some allies for us in Taixia Country. However, don't expose the information about using the piece of God's Star for the time being. I will pay attention to it. From now on, you need to notice me all the information about the action of the expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire timely.

——Yes, Your Majesty!

——The waters in the periphery of Ewentra Archipelago is the graveyard of this expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire. Without my consent, none of the major priests of Sacred Light Empire is allowed to step onto any inch of land of Sacred Iceland Kingdom.

Zhang Tie sent the last words decisively...

Chapter 1138: Being Hit by an Apple

After ending the communication with Sarlin the Pontiff through remote-sensing crystal, Zhang Tie didn't put away that remote-sensing crystal; instead he took off all the finger rings which he used to contact his elder brother, Guan Clan, Bai Suxian, Mountain Lifting Hermit, his disciples, Filton, Cecilia and Bolam and connected all of them onto the same necklace which was once used to hang the remote-sensing crystal being used to contact Sarlin the Pontiff. After that, Zhang Tie put on the necklace and hid the finger rings together with the remote-sensing crystal which was used to contact Sarlin the Pontiff under his clothes.

That necklace was made of mithril alloy. Being grey, it was not that eye-catching. However, it carried a sense of coarse beauty. After putting it on, Zhang Tie felt especially chilly. Additionally, this necklace was very firm which could not be pulled apart by over 1,000 kg's strength. Of course, it could bear some light finger rings with remote-sensing crystals, although it looked a bit strange.

Not until then did Zhang Tie finally understand why a major clan or sect would set up a professional agency for remote-sensing communications and had reliable ones pass the information. 'I've already carried so many remote-sensing crystals now; I'm afraid that I will get more in the future. Remote-sensing crystals could not receive any information in the space-teleportation item. In case of leaking some important information, they could have people contact the one being involved timely. However, if he hung out all the finger rings with remote-sensing crystals, he would be mistaken as pedlars who sold finger rings and necklaces on the street.

However, he only had less than 10 finger rings with remote-sensing crystals; if he connected them by a necklace and hid the necklace under his clothes, it would not be eye-catching or

influence his daily schedule.

After knowing the critical situation facing Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie dared not put his remote-sensing crystals in portable space-teleportation space or Castle of Black Iron anymore. If Zhang Tie didn't meet Elder Gulas and old wild bear Dali in Xuanyuan Hill, Ice and Snow Wilderness might face a great catastrophe. The moment he thought about the severe consequence, Zhang Tie would be afraid of it.

Because Zhang Tie only turned on one crystal fluorite lamp on the wall, the room still looked a bit dim; however, the greater part of the outline of Zhang Tie's face could be seen in the shadow.

After putting away all the remote-sensing crystals, Zhang Tie slightly frowned his eyebrows and started to pace in his room. With his movements, the shadowy region on his face constantly changed. As a result, Zhang Tie's face turned lively. When he frowned, he looked a bit more solemn. Zhang Tie was considering one question—Whether Han Clan of Gold and Power Law is on the back of the expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire or not?

Sarlin the Pontiff didn't know who was going to kill Zhang Tie; however, Zhang Tie was clear that the one was not only the finance minister and the master of Gold and Power Law but also the remnant of Bloody Soul Temple and the archbishop of Heavens Holding Church which scourged Taixia Country.

'My identity in Ice and Snow Wilderness is not a secret for that man at all. If a power in Taixia Country breaks out a conflict with Ice and Snow Wilderness out of no reason, of course, I have adequate cause to doubt that the inside of Gold and Power Law has leaked my secret. However, this is not a good news for that culprit. Because it might expose some secrets. I would also focus on the inside and the senior management of Gold and Power Law. I would even directly doubt him. Because only a very few people among Gold and Power Law know my identity in Ice and Snow Wilderness.'

If the Sacred Light Empire on Western Continent launched a punitive expedition towards Ice and Snow Wilderness with the excuse of revenging for that late scepter priest, who could imagine that it was involved with the finance minister of Taixia Country and the master of Gold and Power Law?

It was the best way to force me to show up by dispatching an expeditionary army from Sacred Light Empire towards Ice and Snow Wilderness.

'I might be thinking too much about it. But even if Han Clan is not on their back, Sacred Light Empire also have an adequate cause to dispatch an expeditionary army towards Ice and Snow Wilderness at this moment.' Because Zhang Tie had experienced too much, he contacted all the events unconsciously.

However, no matter whether Han Clan was on the back of Sacred Light Empire or not, this event reminded Zhang Tie that it was of great urgency to deal with the animosity between him and Han Clan. As long as the expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire set off the military harbor, Zhang Tie had to spare sufficient time to arrive at Ice and Snow Wilderness in case of emergencies.

Actually, Zhang Tie had got a solution to deal with Han Clan on the same day since he came to Xuanyuan Hill. It was simple, direct, violent and useful. As long as he put it into effect, the entire Xuanyuan Hill would be involved. Zhang Tie still stayed in Xuanyuan Hill because he had a more effective method which could hit two birds with one stone. Of course, it was good for him to deal with Han Clan in the simplest and directest way; however, it would be better if he could cause a heavy loss to the Gobbling Party which always hung over the heads of Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang family.

If he executed this plan, he had to get hang of the schedules of the finance minister and the master of the royal prince of the Gobbling Party. The moment he launched a strike, he had to be overwhelming so that the two people could be trapped. No

loophole was allowed.

It sounded a bit crazy for him to completely get hang of the schedules of a shadow knight and a heavenly knight in the emperor's imperial city where commoners were forbidden in with strict defense facilities, Even though Lord Guangnan's manor in Xuanyuan Hill had relationship in Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie had not thought about involving Bai Clan into this plan from the beginning. According to the situation that Zhang Tie understood these days, he could at most monitor one person; of course, he would not feel reassured by having others to do that. If they made an error in the process, it would cause a severe consequence for sure, not to mention that the opponents would become alert. Therefore, Zhang Tie abandoned all the fluky thoughts.

After weighing the advantages and disadvantages of various thoughts and strolling around the room for a short while, Zhang Tie's frown had been completely relieved; instead, he revealed a resolute look.

'12 days. If I couldn't seize the best opportunity within 12 days, I would accept the earliest plan, namely, overthrowing Han Clan in the directest way by involving the entire Xuanyuan Hill into it.'

The moment he made up his mind, Zhang Tie immediately became reassured as he let out a long sigh.

If a person was always concerned about gains and losses, he would be agonizing; however, as long as he made the simplest decision, he would feel relaxed at once. After making up his decision, the messy train of thoughts was cut off, leaving the most important one.

'No plan is perfect. Even if there was a perfect plan, if not being executed well, it would not bring one a pleasant result. It's normal for one to find loopholes in his plan when executing it. The more complex the plan was, the more loopholes there would be. Like parts of a machine, the more parts a machine had, the easier it

would face problems. If I could not hit two birds with one stone in Xuanyuan Hill, I will at least hit one bird with one stone. As long as I knock out this bird of Han Clan, the Gobbling Party has to consider about the severe consequence if they want to stir up me and Huaiyuan Palace in the future.'

He set 12 days as a limit because the small tree could only produce 4 more trouble-reappearance fruits. In the study of the trouble-reappearance situation, all the invitation cards would be sent at least 3 days in advance. The 4 trouble-reappearance situations could help Zhang Tie grasp the schedules of the master of Gold and Power Law in 12 days.

Zhang Tie felt that it was pretty worthwhile using the 4 remaining trouble-reappearance fruits which might be consumed in some minor scenes unconsciously to make a bet for the plan of hitting two birds with one stone in Xuanyuan Hill.

Soon after he made up his decision, Zhang Tie had received a signal from a remote-sensing crystal in a finger ring on his neck.

It was from Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie's elder brother.

——Are you alright today? I've heard about the event at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market the moment I arrived at Xuanyuan Hill!

Zhang Tie had not imagined that his elder brother had also arrived at Xuanyuan Hill.

——Elder brother, have you already arrived at Xuanyuan Hill?

——Hmm, I've just got off the airboat. This Treasures Meeting is a good opportunity for us to expand the market of our all-purpose medicament across Taixia Country. The moment I entered the residence of Jinwu Business Group in Gold and Power Market, I've already been told about this event by my subordinate. This event has been spread over Gold and Power Market; therefore, I'm a bit worried about you!

——Elder brother, don't worry. It's just a trivial matter. It's already passed. I'm living in the manor of Lord Guangnan in Xuanyuan Hill.

——Jinwu Business Group has some relationship and ability in Xuanyuan Hill. If you need us to do something, just let me know.

——Alright.

It was a concise communication. Zhang Tie didn't even need to take off that necklace. As long as the finger ring touched his skin, he could use it.

Zhang Tie didn't tell his elder brother about the real identities of the finance minister. If his elder brother didn't know about it, he would not be alert and inimical towards Gold and Power Law. Zhang Yang's relaxed look would be the best anesthetic in some people's eyes.

After contacting his elder brother, Zhang Tie became completely relaxed. After strolling in the room for a short while, Zhang Tie sensed the location of the two tracing feathers. Although the two tracing feathers had already left Xuanyuan Hill, they were just over 500 miles away from here above the Euphonic sound lake in the northeast of Xuanyuan Hill.

Zhang Tie's heart suddenly pounded as he thought, 'Do I need to take a look over there silently?'

The Arlkey Empire on the Crescent Subcontinent might not be small or far away from Taixia Country.

'The round trip is about 1,000 miles. If Zhang Tie used his incarnation, it would waste him too much time. The little beetle moves too slowly; the thunder hawk is too eye-catching. There are too many knight-level powerhouses in Xuanyuan Hill. If I used thunder hawk, it might bring him some trouble. If only I could fly in Xuanyuan Hill...'

When Zhang Tie was considering about it, he suddenly caught

sight of a silver light stand in the room. Closely after that, a light flashed across his mind, causing him stunned at once.

Only sage-level knights, airships and birds could fly in Xuanyuan Hill. Common knights couldn't fly in Xuanyuan Hill. This was what Zhang Tie was told on the first day when he came to Xuanyuan Hill. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie had tried it himself and found it was true. The entire Xuanyuan Hill was covered in a powerful force field, which made all the knights below sage-level lose their flight ability.

If not catch sight of that metal light stand and think about the flight, Zhang Tie might not have imagined about such a possibility. The light that flashed across his mind reminded him of a pattern that he had never tried before.

It felt a bit crazy. Zhang Tie had not imagined about it before. However, the moment this whim occurred to his mind, Zhang Tie became stunned like being struck by a lightning bolt.

'Knights below sage-level and airboats couldn't fly. Only birds, sage-level knights and airships could fly. Could divine dominator fly?'

'Of course, divine dominator couldn't fly; however, what about the goods that are under the control of divine dominator? How about having something carry me in the air?'

If in another time and place, Zhang Tie would almost not think about this question. However, at this moment, this thought surged in Zhang Tie's mind, causing him to get increasingly thrilled...

During thousands of years before the Catastrophe, numerous people had been hit by fruits from trees onto their heads; however, only one person who was hit by an apple on his head over 400 years before the Catastrophe discovered the law of gravity.

People used to ignore many familiar things and didn't feel like figuring out the laws. Zhang Tie knew that he had also made such

a mistake unconsciously. Because he could fly, after becoming a divine dominator, he had not considered that he could fly with the ability of divine dominator. Although he wanted to hide his trump card as a divine dominator unconsciously; nobody could tell him how to develop on the road of divine dominator. What was more, Zhang Tie treated himself as a commoner who would be hit by apples from the tree by accident. Therefore, he didn't think too much about the laws; however, once he figured out the laws, he found that many things were just so-so...

'Can I fly with the ability of divine dominator in Xuanyuan Hill?'

Under Zhang Tie's gaze, that metal light stand in the room immediately flew off the table silently like a feather being blown off by wind and suspended in front of Zhang Tie.

Holding the handle of the light stand by one hand, Zhang Tie gradually rose up with the metal light stand and suspended in the air like a sage-level knight...

Chapter 1139: The Father and the Son of Han Clan

When Zhang Tie slowly left the room of Lord Guangnan's Manor in Xuanyuan Hill, Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong were chatting and drinking tea leisurely before that calligraphy "The Best" in the study of the finance minister's mansion in the emperor's imperial city.

As the finance minister of Taixia Country who ruled economy of such a huge country and the master of God and Power Law, many people thought that the finance minister's mansion must be resplendent and magnificent such as paving the ground with gold bricks and lighting it up with bright pearls. Actually, besides the location of the finance minister's mansion which was a bit special in the emperor's imperial city, the entire financial minister's mansion was nothing different than those major clans' mansions in different provinces across Taixia Country. Some nouveau riches' manors in provinces were even much more impressive than this one.

Given the look of the mansion, many rich people might not imagine that it was the residence of a minister of Taixia Country whose basic annual salary was over 30 million gold coins a year.

On the table of the study, a curl of smoke was rising from the spout of a small bronze snuff bottle which looked like an animal's mouth. No crystal fluorite lamp was used in the study. Rich rustic magnates would especially despise those red burning candles on candlesticks.

Of course, those who would despise those things in the residence must have not seen the world. If the steward of Baisheng Building, the largest pawnshop in Gold and Power Market, came here, his face would definitely blush due to excitement only by sniffing it instead of using his eyes.

Because the incense in the snuff bottle was the most precious gold-treasuring incense in the world.

Gold-treasuring incense didn't come from the ground, but from a special place in the Earth-elements Realm. After far-ancient mutated whales in the water died, their fat, if being preserved well for hundreds of millions of years in water, might produce a bit ingredient of gold-treasuring incense like the fossil.

Gold-treasuring incense could refresh one's mind. Its effect could never be matched by common incense. Because it could really "refresh one's mind". As long as one sniffed the fragrance of gold-treasuring incense, his spiritual energy would gradually increase. Besides refreshing one's mind and making people sober, it could also relieve many negative influences and subconsciously negative implications of spiritual secret methods such as hypnotism that could decelerate one's brain nerve function and normal thinking.

In the imperial court of Taixia Country, gold-treasuring incense was the necessity in Extreme-Purple Imperial Palace whenever Emperor Xuanyuan held the morning assembly.

Its name was related to its price.

One gram of gold-treasuring incense was worth tens of thousands of gold coins.

In this small study which looked common, the gold-treasuring incense that was burned in each minute would afford a patch of land as large as that of the finance minister's mansion in another place outside Xuanyuan Hill across Taixia Country together with a lot of female servants and maids.

The burning candles in the study were unusual element candles. Many people might have not even heard about element candles at all.

The so-called wealth and rank should not be filling the entire palace with golds and jades but from insipid life. The real time-

honored major clans in Taixia Country pursued planting pear trees in the courtyards under the looming moonlight and willow trees on the banks of ponds in the breeze. The rich style on the Western Continent and other subcontinents which people couldn't stand to pave the ground with gold bricks being carved with floral patterns would be despised by real major clans in Taixia Country. Besides very few occasions, few major clans in Taixia Country favored such a style.

The night wind blew over the lotus pond outside the study. When ripples arose in the pond, the candlelight in the study also shook for a short while. In the shaking candlelight, the shadows of the two people who were chatting and drinking tea water in the study were reflected onto the snow-white wall of the study, twisting and quivering in a bit weird way.

Han Yuanhong had been here for over 10 minutes, during which period, the gold-treasuring incense being consumed could afford 10 such manors outside Xuanyuan Hill. How amazing it was! However, neither of the two people in the study cared about it as if they were just dried straws instead of gold-treasuring incense inside the bronze snuff bottle.

"...You mean what happened at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market was not especially targeting at Han Clan!"

The one who spoke was Han Zhengfang, the finance minister of Taixia Country. When he spoke, he was having a mouth of tea water with a calm look. Whether it was because of his habit or discretion, the father and the son were talking in a secret way in the study. It seemed that the two people were chatting in the study with open windows; actually, even though a knight was standing outside the door of the study, he could not hear what they were talking about at all.

"I've already asked about Lanster seriously today. He's the witness and the only one who survived the fight. According to his honest report, it was indeed a coincidence for them to meet the

princess of Lord Guangnan outside the Qian Gate. Because it was too crowded outside the Qian Gate, they saw Cui Li and Bai Suxian getting off the vehicle and walking towards the Qian Gate. The one who provoked Bai Suxian in words was a bodyguard of Srices. Outside the Qian Gate, Srices and one of his bodyguard wanted to make some small collision purposefully so as to sexually harass Bai Suxian when they found that Bai Suxian was beautiful and it was crowded over there." Han Yuanhong looked pretty mannered in front of his dad, which looked pretty different than the flamboyant look at the Qian Gate in the daytime. When he spoke, he slightly lowered his eye light and looked at the teacup in front of him as if it was going to bloom. Han Yuanhong added, "It's the people from Arlkey Empire provoked her first; however, they had not imagined that they were provoking a knight who was accompanied by a more terrifying earth knight. According to Lanster, before Cui Li started a counterattack, none of them could sense the earth knight's qi. Additionally, they felt that Bai Suxian was just a common female. Therefore, Srices became audacious..."

"It's fine as long as it's not a trap. Those barbarians were just seeking for death. As long as an earth knight learns some secret methods, it's not difficult for him to hide his qi. Similarly, it's not strange for a princess of Taixia Country to carry two alchemist's equipment that could hide her qi. It's those barbarians' fault. They were blind. Don't care about this event anymore. Now that it is involved with the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion, according to my understanding of Lord Guangnan, those alive ones from Arlkey Empire might not be able to leave Taixia Country anymore. I'm afraid that Lord Guangan has already assigned killers to deal with those barbarians!" The finance minister revealed a faint sneer.

"Do we need to send these guys of Arlkey Empire away from Taixia Country?"

"No need. They're just blind trivial roles. They're seeking for

death. It would be silly for us to confront with Lord Guangan's Mansion only for these trivial people. Additionally, we might incur troubles and reproaches. Now that the Supreme Court of Taixia Country has already been in the investigation of this event, we should stand on the side of Taixia Country; therefore, you could assist the killers to accomplish this task smoothly when in need. Am I clear?"

"Clear!" The batch of people of Arlkey Empire being driven away from Xuanyuan Hill and that old knight who survived today were destined to die through the talk of the father and the son. The VIPs yesterday were thrown out like pye dogs climbing out of a cesspit, including a knight. The father and the son of Han Clan didn't feel it was pitiful at all; neither did they feel that they were doing anything wrong.

"Although these barbarians are destined to die, Lord Guangnan's Mansion's fury might reach Crescent Subcontinent. Although we pretend to stand on the side of Lord Guangnan; we have to keep Arlkey Empire as an exchange. If Lord Guangnan's Mansion overthrew the royal households of Arlkey Empire, the trades between us and the royal households of Arlkey Empire might be discovered. The great number of high-quality crystals in the trades would remind people of the bloody sea. The Supreme Court of Taixia Country is not seeking for all the clues concerning bloody sea across the world like wild wolves which had sniffed the bloody smell. It's not good for us to attract these wild wolves to Crescent Subcontinent!"

"I was a bit too rude today. I came to deal with it too early. This might remind them of something..." Han Yuanhong said it in a guilty look.

"It's not your fault. Given the intelligence, Cui Li is indeed not a common earth knight. Bai Suxian's background also makes us scruple, not to mention the participation of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country..." Han Zhengfang had another mouthful of tea

water before saying, "As long as Cui Li leaves Xuanyuan Hill, mobilize all the means of Gold and Power Law to keep a close watch on him. Now that this guy could promote to an earth knight from a black iron knight in only a few years, he must have some secrets or have gained some great secret items. I'm interested in his secret methods and secret items..."

"Dad, you mean Cui Li has grasped the Purgatory Samsara?" Han Yuanhong's eyes sparkled.

"If this guy had grasped the Purgatory Samsara, he could not have passed Guan Qianchong's interrogation. Now that he had passed Guan Qianchong's interrogation and was rewarded with the bounty land, it means that he didn't grasp Purgatory Samsara..."

Chapter 1140: A Vicious Trick

Only the legendary God was almighty. Han Zhengfang was not a God; therefore, he would make mistakes such as thinking that Cui Li didn't grasp the Purgatory Samsara based on his knowledge and experience. If Cui Li grasped this secret method, Han Zhengfang believed that Cui Li would never pass the interrogation of Guan Qianchong. Guan Qianchong was not a simple personality. Guan Qianchong might have already known the secret method that Cui Li used to promote to an earth knight in the hieron's ruins rapidly; how could Guan Qianchong and Du Guyi promise the reward to a person who was related to the alchemist's demon and let him return to the earth's surface safe and sound? Guan Clan assigned two people to contact Cui Li in Lord Guangnan's manor in Xuanyuan Hill, which indicated that Gan Qianchong believed in Cui Li.

Given the intelligence, Cui Li was very tricky. However, Han Zhengfang had seen too many earth knights like Cui Li. Based on his power, influence and relationship with bright forces and dark forces, he believed that he would get the secrets methods or secret items from this earth knight sooner or later as long as he had people keep a close watch on Cui Li. Every knight was interested in the secret methods or items which could help one to form chakra rapidly.

Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong didn't know that Cui Li and Zhang Tie were the same, not to mention that Zhang Tie had already known the secrets of Han Clan and was going to uproot Han Clan in Xuanyuan Hill. Otherwise, the two people would never be so calm.

People were screwing the tiger while the tiger was also screwing the people.

"We have to hold the sense of propriety about the event of Arlkey Empire. Don't act on an impulse. Put Cui Li and Bai Suxian on one

side first. Every coin has two sides. Lord Guangnan's Mansion could become our assistant on this event. Facing the stress of Lord Guangnan's Mansion, Arlkey Empire would be under our control easily!" Han Zhengfang told Han Yuanhong.

"I see..." Han Yuanhong nodded. As long as they had Arlkey Empire realize that Lord Guangnan would exterminate their empire in the blink of an eye without the help of Han Clan, Arlkey Empire would follow their orders.

The others might feel excited ruling an empire on a subcontinent; however, Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong would not feel any sense of achievement and excitement from these "trivial thing". They just guided the royal households of Arlkey Empire to follow the trend. As for Taixia Country, Arlkey Empire was like a small shrimp beside a huge whale. Even if they ate it, their appetite would not be satisfied. They always focused on more valuable things in Taixia Country.

Watching Han Zhengfang picking up his teacup once again, Han Yuanhong finally remembered an important thing that he was here to tell Han Zhengfang.

"Oh, dad, Yuantu has not come back yet. I've not even received his message through remote-sensing crystal..."

"Yuantu has not come back?" Han Zhengfang slightly frowned. At the same time, he attempted to contact another son by injecting his spiritual energy into a finger ring which was inlaid with a remote-sensing crystal. However, he received no response either, "Did Yuantu go to Pingsha Valley?"

"Yes, I saw Yuantu's airboat fly over Longxi Prefecture. According to the schedule, Yuantu should have arrived at Xuanyuan Hill, but he didn't!"

"Where's Yuantu's airboat?"

"According to my subordinate, after Yuantu's airboat suspended

in Longxi Prefecture for a short while, it turned around and left Zhongzhou Province. However, he didn't come to Xuanyuan Hill!" Han Yuanhong revealed a bitter smile after throwing a glance at Han Zhengfang. After that, he continued, "Yuantu manages his subordinates strictly. Except for him, nobody else on his side was allowed to carry any remote-sensing crystal. Wen Haoyun and Xiao Longfei are on his side. If they carry remote-sensing crystal, we could ask them; however, they don't. Neither could we contact Yuantu; therefore, I don't know where is Yuantu!"

Han Zhengfang faintly frowned. His eldest son was blaming Han Yuantu rather than worrying about his safety. Although the two brothers usually joined hands to help Han Zhengfang do something, one in the public, the other in the dark, the two brothers, they were actually competing with each other. The reason was simple. If Han Zhengfang made a success in overthrowing the regime of Taixia Country, the better one of his sons would inherit his throne. In this situation, the so-called brotherhood would be replaced by merciless profits.

This was what Han Zhengfang tried to create. His two sons had very high talents since young. They were both great in intelligence and insight. He wanted to have his two sons catch up with each other in this manner. Of course, his undertaking would finally be inherited by the better one. Han Yuantu was a bit more docile than Han Yuanhong. A few years ago, Han Yuanhong arranged a mole on Han Yantu's side. The mole carried a remote-sensing crystal and sent Han Yuantu's information and schedule to Han Yuanhong from time to time. Later on, Han Yuantu discovered it and quarreled with Han Yuanhong in front of Han Zhengfang. Han Zhengfang finally ended this quarrel by criticizing Han Yuanhong and letting him apologize to Han Yuantu. From then on, besides the remote-sensing crystal that Han Yuantu delivered to, he didn't allow any subordinate to carry other remote-sensing crystals on his side, even knights who accomplished tasks together with him; otherwise, he would punish them severely the moment he

discovered that.

When Han Yuanhong talked about this event, of course, he wanted to explain what he did previously; actually, he wanted to express that his brother was too narrow-minded.

One son disappeared especially at this critical moment; it was reasonable for him to worry about that. After being silent for two seconds, Han Zhengfang slightly became still as he asked, "Is there any abnormal action in the troops of the top 4 armies?"

"My subordinates are keeping a close watch on the corps of the top 4 armies within the 9 immortal provinces in Taixia Country. These days, besides receiving commands to coordinate with local forces to wipe out bloody figures across the country and take control of the local situations, there's no abnormal action of the top 4 armies within the 9 immortal provinces!"

"What about the three top chancellors? Where are they?"

"The three top chancellors are inspecting across the country. Today, the national defense minister has arrived at Huizhou Province; the premier has arrived at Yizhou Province; the engineering minister has arrived at the Gobbling Province..."

After hearing that the top 4 armies didn't have any abnormal action within the 9 immortal provinces and the top 3 chancellors who were still making an inspection across the country according to the schedule, Han Zhengfang became reassured at once. At least it indicated that the event didn't deteriorate.

"Is there any woman on Yuantu's side?"

Father always knew his son well. Han Zhengfang hit the point at once.

"It's said that it's a princess from a subcontinent!"

'Well.' Han Zhengfang knew Han Yuantu's "eccentricities" and "hobbies". Because of these "eccentricities" and "hobbies", Han Yuantu lost contact with Han Zhengfang for half a year one time.

Finally, Han Zhengfang had to dispatch people to find him out of concern and was told that his son built a wine pool in a place and made love with hundreds of beauties nakedly for half a year around the clock, regardless of winter or summer...There's another time when Han Yuantu got a new "collection", he locked himself for 1 month in a small room, during which period, he made a carving on the "collection"...

Han Yuantu had similar deeds more than 2 times; therefore, when he was told that his son was missing once again, Han Zhengfang didn't become nervous anymore.

"After a few days, if we could still not contact him, dispatch people to find him. Lately, tell Gold and Power Law to pay attention to the location of Yuantu's airboat!"

"I see, dad!"

"Additionally, keep a close watch on Huaiyuan Palace too. If Zhang Tie returns to Huaiyuan Palace, let me know immediately!"

"Do we need to..."

"That brat has some ability. The tragedy in Fuhai City is known across the country and brought him a good reputation. The event in Zhongzhou Province had not been appeased. If Zhang Tie returns to Huaiyuan Palace, we don't need to kill him for the time being. It's not good for him to die in Taixia Country at this moment. I've already dug a grave for him in Waii Subcontinent. I don't believe that the Sacred Light Empire on the Western Continent couldn't deal with such a trivial black iron knight. If he didn't seek for death in Waii Subcontinent, when Sacred Light Empire exterminate those innocent barbarians in Ice and Now Wilderness and send his women and children onto the column of stigma and expose his another identity to the public, I want to see whether this sentimental man could still be sentimental or not. If he died at that time, nobody would sympathize him anymore. All the aftermaths by then would be minimized..." Han Zhengfang's

eyes turned pretty merciless when he talked about Zhang Tie.

"Yup!"

Han Yuanhong admired his father's trick very much. What a fatal method! As long as Zhang Tie dared come back, he was destined to die no matter whether he would return to Ice and Snow Wilderness. He could choose to die fast with a bit reputation or die a bit slowly with a bad reputation.

The talk between the father and the son almost came to an end. After saying something minor, Han Yuanhong bade a farewell to his father and left this study before the gold-treasure incense was burning out.

Since the beginning, the father and the son both thought that Cui Li and Zhang Tie were different people. They could never imagine that they were talking about the same person in the study.

Nobody could be almighty, including Emperor Xuanyuan, not to mention others...

Han Yuanhong left the finance minister's mansion by car with the same icy expression. Actually, he was sneering inside, 'Young brother, you're behaving weirdly on purpose so as to lower my vigilance about you, right? Taixia Country is large enough. Once our father succeeds, after this holy war, as long as you make a compromise on your initiative, I will not treat you too mercilessly...but you've played such tricks too many times, don't you feel bored?'

When Han Yuanhong sneered his young brother inside, he recalled one face. Although the person of this face was still alive, he was already dead in Han Yuanhong's eyes. Nobody who dared to stir up Han Clan and Han Yuanhong could have a good result. When Han Yuanhong remembered this person who made him very embarrassed at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market, he gritted his teeth, 'Let's see, I will deal with you when I'm free. How could an earth knight be so insolent in front of me?'

"Take me to the airport!" Han Yuanhong told the driver. Closely after that, the vehicle sped up in a split second on the main road of the emperor's imperial city...

If Cui Li was destined to die in Han Yuanhong's eyes, those people from Arlkey Empire had already died in his eyes. However, these guys were still useful before death. Han Yuanhong had to end up this event himself.

Within the finance minister's mansion, Han Zhengfang was standing on one side of the lotus pond outside the study and looking up at the two bright moons. Unconsciously, he felt a bit fretful...

Chapter 1141: Lose at Sunrise but Gain at Sunset

The moonlight could not penetrate through the roof and the thick partition and walls of the room. Under the same moonlight, Zhang Tie turned into a curl of moonlight in his room...

Previously, Zhang Tie heard a proverb, which had existed before the Catastrophe until now. When in the 7th Male Middle School in Blackhot City, his teacher of natural history always told them about this proverb. To a certain extent, this proverb was close to the truth and was relevant to the most indestructible physical law in the world.

——One could not lift himself up by grabbing his own hair no matter how strong he was.

When he flew off in the room, this proverb flashed through his mind. Zhang Tie didn't know about his current situation. However, the reality indicated that he could also fly off by sabers and swords besides having them fly.

Flying off by physical strength was utterly different than flying off by spiritual strength. The former could not break the simplest physical rule; undoubtedly, the latter had to depend on a senior rule. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't pay attention to the relationship between him and that proverb too much; instead, he soon accepted it and immersed in it.

If people saw Zhang Tie flying in a room by a metal light stand, they would feel it was pretty hilarious. In the beginning, Zhang Tie was a bit embarrassed; however, he soon adapted to it. As a powerful earth knight who had a powerful knight's consciousness, he could control his own body in an unimaginable way. If he liked, he could even control the reflection and activation modes of specific neurons.

Besides being an earth knight, Zhang Tie was also a divine dominator. A divine dominator could also control an object in an unimaginable spiritual way. For instance, there were 200 needle eyes in over 10 m in the room, 100 on different heights on each side. Zhang Tie could have one needle penetrate through all the needle eyes for 100 times in 1 second.

As an earth knight, Zhang Tie could control his own body; as a divine dominator, he could control objects. After combining with the two abilities, Zhang Tie turned into a curl of moonlight in the room with that metal light stand in his hand.

Zhang Tie's residence was large. The parlor covered over 300 square meters. However, when it came to flight, this residence became a bit small. However, in the same room where even sparrows could not flap its wings for free, Zhang Tie had an unprecedented flight experience which was utterly different than flying by chakra.

Zhang Tie turned into a curl of moonlight, arousing a wind in the room.

In this small room, Zhang Tie gradually sped up. He would alter his flight direction for dozens of times per second; otherwise, he would hit the wall, furniture or other furnishings. Zhang Tie really had a happy flight. Additionally, he moved more and more flexibly like a loach which swam as fast as a lightning bolt in the room.

He kept flying in this way for about 1 hour. All in a split second, the wind grew stronger, blowing away the curtains and causing flowers in the vase on the table to waver east and west; even the vase was going to fall down; additionally, a piece of newspaper was blown off in a split second...In less than half a second, the wind had stopped; the windows had fallen down; the flowers had stopped wavering; the vase returned to its original place, spraying some water on the table; the newspaper fell onto the ground; the moonlight disappeared, leaving the scenery outside the windows.

Like having not moved at all, Zhang Tie stood on the original place steadily.

With that metal light stand in hand, Zhang Tie looked pretty hilarious and funny; however, Zhang Tie's face turned pretty red due to the excitement. If not in Xuanyuan Hill but in Lord Guangnan's Manor, Zhang Tie might have sprung up and roared due to ecstasy. In a split second just now, Zhang Tie sensed the same barrier that he sensed in the sky when he flew at the fastest speed a few days ago——sound barrier.

A few days ago, this sound barrier was like a shackle that fastened him and a high mountain in front of him. However, just now, Zhang Tie felt the same sound barrier had become a thin paper which would be broken easily by only a poke. He failed to break through the sound barrier in the vast sky; however, he broke through it in such a small room. If he told others about it, nobody would believe in that. However, it was true.

Just now, considering the possible sonic boom if he broke through such a thin paper, Zhang Tie stopped immediately.

Being extremely excited and delighted, Zhang Tie forcefully patted his head.

"Stupid. How could you not think about putting the ability of divine dominator in flight after becoming a divine dominator for so many years? Why not earlier..." Zhang Tie muttered. Even so, his delight still spurted out like spring water, enabling all of his cells to bathe the trivial currents caused by this delight and excitement.

With the ability of divine dominator, he could easily break through the sound barrier in flight. What a surprise! It was like a huge pie that fell off the sky. As a result, Zhang Tie almost passed out. He felt regretful lacking the corresponding secret method about flight in his "King Roc Sutra". However, this loophole was fixed by the ability of divine dominator. Lose at sunrise but gain at

sunset. Zhang Tie felt the delicate arrangement of God.

After being thrilled and having a bee in his head for a while, Zhang Tie remembered that metal light stand in his hand. He looked pretty hilarious. After looking at the metal light stand, he ran his spiritual energy and had the metal light stand flew off his hand and land on its original place. If a metal light stand could help him fly freely, not to mention a weapon. He could even design a set of special clothes to adapt to such a flight mode...

However, it was not the right moment for him to study it.

Zhang Tie glanced at the table clock in the parlor and found it was almost 12 pm. Zhang Tie then sensed the locations of the two tracing feathers in his mind and found that they had not changed too much. After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie walked to one window of the parlor and watched outside. Closely after that, he opened the window as he triggered a rune hiding effect for himself.

The moment he triggered the rune hiding effect, Zhang Tie's figure had gradually turned blurry in the dark and shadow. From all visual angles, Zhang Tie's body had completely integrated with the surrounding environment. When the moonlight cast in and the breeze blew away the curtain, it didn't even leave any shadow of Zhang Tie's body on the floor. If someone entered the room at this moment, he would definitely not notice that Zhang Tie was standing beside the window because the qi of Zhang Tie had been completely hidden. This was the powerful effect of the hiding rune.

Zhang Tie flew out of the room through the window like a dandelion being blown off by the night wind. After flying over the courtyard, the lawn, the rooms of some servants in Lord Guangnan's Manor, Zhang Tie came to the high wall of the manor in a split second. During this process, Zhang Tie encountered two teams of guards patrolling in the manor. The closest team of guards didn't see Zhang Tie when they passed by him from 3 m

away.

Before Zhang Tie fully grasped the flight ability as a divine dominator, Zhang Tie was thinking about flying out of the high wall directly. However, grasping it, Zhang Tie was not worried about using this flight ability right away.

There were so many powerhouses in Xuanyuan Hill; additionally, there was a secret treasure in the emperor's imperial city as the entire Xuanyuan Hill was still covered by a powerful yet bizarre energy field. Zhang Tie didn't know whether there were special alchemists or rune equipment in Xuanyuan Hill which could find someone flying over there. Zhang Tie didn't feel it was worthwhile to expose his trump card which had not been fully grasped in order to investigate the situations of some small figures. Therefore, Zhang Tie determined to go there on foot. Actually, with the effect of Kuafu bloodline, his moving ability on foot could almost match his flight ability.

Zhang Tie could move over 100 m by one step as fast as a lightning bolt. After being affected by the hiding rune and rapid moving rune. Zhang Tie was like a curl of night wind that blew over Xuanyuan Hill. After a short while, he had left Xuanyuan Hill and arrived at one side of a shimmering lake.

Zhang Tie passed by those reeds near the lakeside on the tips of those reeds and dove into the lake like a small stone...

"Who..." With a muffled sound from the reeds, a man with half-open clothes exposed his head out of the reeds with sparkling eyes. After looking around and finding nobody in the surroundings, he buried his head in the reed once again.

"Is there anyone?" A ringing woman's sound and the sound of putting on skirt drifted from the reeds.

"Nobody. My knight's consciousness just sensed something nearby just now. It might be a fish jumping out of the water. Don't worry, continue..."

"Disgusting, we need to change the place..." The woman said in a coquettish way.

"Sleeping on the ground and facing the sky of Xuanyuan Hill are especially interesting. What a rare opportunity..." The man said with a smile.

The dissolute lovers in the reeds were two knights whom Zhang Tie had seen next to Fang Xinyi that day...

Chapter 1142: Detecting Euphonicmusic Lake in the Evening

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could see two familiar faces in the reeds of Euphonicmusic Lake in the northeast of Xuanyuan Hill tonight.

Several days ago, the good-looking female knight on the side of Fang Xinyi was a quiet and gentle person. However, her bright big eyes kept glancing at Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian. When Zhang Tie flew over the tips of reeds, he caught sight of the snow-white, plump skin in the reeds, which was really a bit stunning. The male knight in the reeds was also quiet when Yue Peng and the other man satirized Zhang Tie that day.

Unimaginably, two quiet people could be interested in making love crazily in the reeds. Men could really not be judged by their looks!

However, they fell in love with each other voluntarily and made love in such a hidden place; instead of in the public when they would be blamed for bewildering people with dissolute behaviors. Therefore, they were not offending public decency. It was already implicit enough for knights. As the conflict between Zhang Tie and Heavens Holding Pavilion had passed, Zhang Tie didn't mean to give vent to his anger on some irrelevant people. Therefore, after throwing a glimpse at them, Zhang Tie didn't separate the pair of mandarin ducks; instead, like having not seen them, Zhang Tie silently dove into the water and swam towards the locations of the two tracing feathers based on his knight's consciousness.

Of course, Euphonicmusic Lake could not match the sea in size. However, this lake was about 200 m in depth where big ships were available to pass through. Over 100 m below the water level, Zhang Tie sped up greatly.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the water, it was like how a

dragon returned to the ocean. Even if he faced a shadow knight at this moment, he would not be afraid of that shadow knight even without using his ability as a divine dominator.

The protective battle qi turned into an extremely thin film over Zhang Tie's body. When water flew over Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie was not wet at all. Like a big fish and a yaksha in water, he moved towards afar as fast as a lightning bolt, leaving a fine ripple in the deep water...

...

Soon after Zhang Tie entered the water, an airboat had flown over in the same direction as that of Zhang Tie in the water...

...

A deluxe cruiser longer than 70 m stopped in the center of Euphonicmusic Lake. Such cruisers could be seen everywhere in Euphonicmusic Lake. Many people who were qualified to live in Xuanyuan Hill would buy a cruiser. It was as easy as blinking one's eyes. After leaving Xuanyuan Hill, those rich and powerful ones could relax themselves on the loose cruisers. Because Xuanyuan Hill had many strict regulations, many chose to relax themselves by traveling on Fairy Lake, Heavenlyharp Lake and Euphonicmusic Lake, not to mention the dissolute industry in gaily-painted pleasure-boats.

As it was deep night, the loose pulleys and gaily-painted pleasure-boats on the Euphonicmusic Lake became quiet. Besides the lamplight on the ships in the far, the loose pulleys and gaily-painted pleasure-boats on the lake maintained about 1 mile's distance from each other, unless they were integrating with each other originally. Otherwise, no irrelevant ships would be close to each other at this moment.

The arrival of an airboat didn't arouse any exclamation on the Euphonicmusic Lake in the evening. It might not be easy to see an airboat in other places; however, in Xuanyuan Hill, as there were

too many dignitaries, it was too normal for picking up major figures between Euphonicmusic Lake and Xuanyuan Hill by airboat. Therefore, nobody would join the fun like rustics who made a fuss.

Additionally, as the airboat arrived in the deep night, although it didn't hide its movement, the owner of the airboat must have been low-key enough. None of those people who could take airboats were simple characters. If someone approached it, he might have troubles.

As the airboat slowly descended and reached a few meters above the lake, one gaily-painted pleasure-ship and two cruisers stayed far away from it consciously.

There were too many smart people in this world.

Han Yuanhong directly went downstairs onto the deck of the deluxe cruiser by the winding stair which was stretched out of the airboat. When he arrived, all the people on the loose pulley were waiting for him respectfully, including those unfortunate guys of Arlkey Empire who were exiled out of Xuanyuan Hill. However, these guys didn't look as pleasant as Zhang Tie saw over 10 hours ago; instead, they all looked flurried, including the only alive old knight of Arlkey Empire who accompanied the prince of Arlkey Empire here.

As their prince had been killed in Xuanyuan Hill, even if they could survive back to Arlkey Empire, they would definitely not face a good result. Only one knight on the side of the prince survived; those who were not on the spot when the prince was killed absolutely suffered a disaster unconsciously. Not until they were driven out of Xuanyuan Hill like pye dogs under the monitoring of the officials of Taixia Country, they still didn't know what happened.

Under the moonlight, the Euphonicmusic Lake looked very beautiful; however, Han Yuanhong didn't feel like appreciating the

beautiful scenery under the moonlight over the Euphonicmusic Lake. After landing on the deck of the cruiser, he glanced around all the people who were waiting for him respectfully. Closely after that, he focused on the only alive knight of Arlkey Empire among the prince's retinue silently. After throwing a glance at him, Han Yuanhong entered the cabin.

All those who waited for Han Yuanhong on the deck entered the cabin, too; however, only that gloomy yet flurried knight of Arlkey Empire was qualified to enter the same room with Han Yuanhong.

"The one who killed Srices Prince at the Qian Gate today is Cui Li, the master of Iron-Dragon Sect in Youzhou Province of Taixia Country. This man is very tricky and vicious. He doesn't care about the outcome of his deeds at all. According to our intelligence, this guy has killed over 10 black iron demon knights and earth demon knights in the Earth-elements Realm. Common earth knights could not defeat him. The woman on his side is the only daughter of Lord Guangnan, also the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion. Although this woman is just a black iron knight, his father's power is very terrifying. Even Gold and Power Law is afraid of him!" Han Yuanhong said solemnly with a worried look.

After hearing Han Yuanhong's words, that knight of Arlkey Empire's face turned gloomier at once. Facing the earth knight who could kick his prince to death and the well-known Lord Guangnan in Taixia Country, this black iron knight asked in a flurried way, "What...what should we do now?"

"For the sake of your safety, I will arrange you to leave out of here tonight. As Fire Dragon Hermit is now in Xuanyuan Hill, we could prevent him from leaving; however, we could not stop Lord Guangnan doing anything." Han Yuanhong said before asking with a concerned look, "Do you carry the remote-sensing crystal which is used to contact Arlkey Empire?"

The flurried knight nodded.

"You'd better contact Arlkey Empire so that they could make preparations for the possible dangers. Lord Guangnan is narrow-minded. As you've offended his daughter, who knows how he's going to revenge you..."

Chapter 1143: Abundant Achievements

3 hours later, it grew darker. On the side of a willow wood near the bank of Euphonicmusic Lake, the water moved automatically without the effect of wind. Closely after that, Zhang Tie exposed his head and gradually walked out of the lake step by step; however, there was not even a drop of water on his body. He directly walked to the grassland by the lakeside.

Zhang Tie went ashore in another place when he returned in case of disturbing that pair of mandarin ducks. He was not a peepaholic pervert. He preferred to detour such an embarrassing thing unless he encountered it by accident. It would be boring if he went back to see that when he could have avoided that. Only kids did that out of curiosity; however, Zhang Tie was not a kid anymore.

The place where he went ashore was about 15 miles away from where he entered the water. It was also an unpopulated place.

Standing on the lakeside, Zhang Tie watched the lake.

Just now, when Han Yuanhong talked with the only alive knight of Arlkey Empire among the prince's retinue, Zhang Tie was lying on a bonsai in the room in the incarnation of a little beetle. Zhang Tie arrived a few minutes earlier than Han Yuanhong. He stayed in the water being not far from the cruiser; instead, he had a little beetle land on the cruiser ahead of Han Yuanhong. Zhang Tie didn't know that Han Yuanhong would arrive tonight. Now that Han Yuanhong arrived, Zhang Tie just had the little beetle listen to Han Yuanhong's words.

'It seems that Han Yuanhong has already figured out the backgrounds of me and Bai Suxian after departing from them at the Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market for less than 1 day.' Zhang Tie was not shocked by it. What really shocked Zhang Tie was that when Han Yuanhong told those flurried guys from Arlkey Empire about the power and possible revenge of Lord Guangnan, he didn't

immediately send those flurried guys back to Crescent Subcontinent by airboat; instead, he just made an arrangement which sounded a bit useful——let those flurried guys disguise themselves before leaving the neighborhood of Euphonicmusic Lake overnight. After shifting to the airship on the next morning, they would fly all the way towards Daizhou Province. After that, they would go back to Crescent Subcontinent by airboat arranged by Gold and Power Law.

Those flurried guys appreciated Han Yuanhong pretty much. The moment Han Yuanhong left, that deluxe cruiser had turned around and moved towards a wharf in the distance.

At that moment, Zhang Tie didn't think through the reason. Not until Han Yuanhong left did he figure it out that those flurried guys of Arlkey Empire might not be able to leave Xuanyuan Hill for the rest of their lives. The stress from Lord Guangnan's Mansion and the death of these guys could help Han Clan take control of Arlkey Empire more conveniently.

'What a good trick! Those flurried guys still appreciate Han Yunhong after being betrayed by him.'

Zhang Tie didn't sympathize those flurried guys of Arlkey Empire as they were not worth his sympathy either. Zhang Tie didn't care whether they were alive or not. However, when he figured out that Han Yuanhong directly dropped those guys to the killer from Lord Guangnan's Mansion like abandoned sons, Zhang Tie had given up the thought of receiving some intelligence from those guys using a secret method. The reason was simple. If there was some secret trade between Han Clan and Arlkey Empire and those guys knew something critical, Han Yuanhong would never abandon them in case they exposed something critical to Lord Guangnan.

Now that Han Yuanhong didn't fear that these people could expose the secrets, it indicated that these guys were not valuable. Perhaps, their only value was to verify the power of Lord Guangnan's Mansion and help Han Clan reach their target.

Even if prying for intelligence, nobody dared say that they could receive important intelligence each time, including sage-level knights. Zhang Tie came out tonight as he felt that Arlkey Empire might have a benefit-based relationship. He wanted to discover some clues. Although he did not receive any important intelligence or message, he was not disappointed, because he received something more or less.

First, Zhang Tie knew that Han Yuanhong had paid attention to him. If possible, the master of Gold and Power Law would definitely screw him. However, Zhang Tie would not spare such an opportunity to Han Clan. In Zhang Tie's opinion, Han Clan's heyday in Xuanyuan Hill would come to an end in 12 days at most, during which period, as long as Zhang Tie didn't leave Xuanyuan Hill, Gold and Power Law could not do any harm to Zhang Tie. 12 days later, Han Clan's influence in Gold and Power Law would be cleared completely for sure. By then, Gold and Power Law would not threaten Zhang Tie's safety anymore.

Second, through those flurried guys of Arlkey Empire, Zhang Tie understood about this major country in Crescent Subcontinent. Arlkey Empire was indeed a major country in Crescent Subcontinent. It covered over 530 square miles in total with less than 200 million population. They had an earth knight among the royal households. The goddamn prince who was kicked to death by Zhang Tie was a rare "cultivation talent" of this country. The royal households of Arlkey Empire were as happy as larks about having such a person in their country. Because this guy was born with an outstanding talent and sufficient cultivation resources and had royal households on his back, he could promote to black iron knight before the age of 40. Perhaps, he had been used to be arrogant in his country, when he came to Xuanyuan Hill, with Gold and Power Law and Han Clan on his back, he didn't know how to be reserved. Therefore, he was finally killed by Zhang Tie's one kick...

Besides that earth knight in the royal households of Arlkey Empire, Arlkey Empire couldn't pose any threat to Zhang Tie at all; however, a common earth knight was nothing serious in Zhang Tie's eyes...

After Han Yuanhong left, the little beetle was not interested in those unfortunate guys anymore; therefore, he left the deluxe cruiser too.

After leaving the deluxe cruiser, the little beetle entered Castle of Black Iron in water.

After killing those people and knights on Han Clan's airboat, Zhang Tie had not entered Castle of Black Iron for a long time. Of course, he had not taken those fruits on the small tree. As he was free for the time being, he intended to digest those new fruits.

Most of the fruits on the small tree were fruits of judgment. After taking those fruits of judgment, all of Zhang Tie immortal rune skills had reached master realm except for his mirror body separation skill.

Besides those fruits of judgment, the fruit of brilliance contained all the spiritual energy of Han Yuantu and Wen Haoyun who was wanted across Taixia Country by the Supreme Court. As a result, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy surged greatly.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether those b*stards that he killed on the airboat had done too many evil things or not. After all, his achievement was completely out of his imagination. The more powerful the people were and the more evil things they did, the more abundant the reward of the fruit of judgment would be. This was the rule that the small tree followed to produce fruits of judgment. This time, he really gained a bit more fruits of judgment than before. The spiritual energy in that fruit of brilliance was also much greater than the total spiritual energy of one common earth knight and one common black iron knight. It was almost three times that of Old Monster Qi. Therefore, Zhang Tie realized that

maybe the two guys; especially the most goddamn d**chebag had made a greater achievement in the cultivation of spiritual energy through special means. Zhang Tie really benefited a lot from them.

After taking so many fruits, Zhang Tie's overall strength surged greatly once again.

After taking the fruits, Zhang Tie took a look at that earth knight whose limbs had been chopped off in Castle of Black Iron.

The earth knight who went to pick up the puppet parent worms in Pingsha Valley together with Wen Haoyun was chopped off limbs by Zhang Tie in the blink of an eye in Han Yuantu's airboat; closely after that, the bit of water chakra that the earth knight had formed was broken into pieces by Zhang Tie using Purgatory Samsara Method, causing him to pass out at once. With the recycling principle, Zhang Tie teleported him into Castle of Black Iron and prepared to offer a bloody sacrifice with him. After coming back to Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie knew that the earth knight was called Xiao Longfei.

When Xiao Longfei was in Castle of Black Iron, he was looked after pretty well by Heller and the three servants of Zhang Tie. When Zhang Tie saw him once again, he was sitting on a wheelchair while his face looked a bit florid.

Zhang Tie was very puzzled about the good treatment received by this guy in Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, he asked Heller about the reason.

"Castle Lord, do you want to offer a bloody sacrifice with him?" Heller asked Zhang Tie.

"Of course!" Zhang Tie replied immediately.

"Castle Lord, don't forget that he's an earth knight!" Heller watched Zhang Tie before adding solemnly, "A human earth knight!"

Zhang Tie frowned, 'Does Heller mean that I have no principle?

However, I always stick to my principles.' Zhang Tie replied, "Generally, I would not offer a bloody sacrifice with humans. If it's a private animosity, I prefer to kill him rather than offering a bloody sacrifice with him. It's my bottom line. However, now that this guy surrendered to Heavens Reaching Church and cooperated with demons, he's just a lump of sh*t among humans who could not even match dogs and pigs. If I offer a bloody sacrifice with him, I will not bear any mental burden!"

Heller revealed a smile, "Castle Lord, it seems that you've misunderstood me. I'm not blaming Castle Lord for not having any principle. I mean even though Castle Lord refines his water chakra, he's still an earth knight whose battle strength is almost as same as those who have just promoted to an earth knight. He's just crippled and can't move anymore; however, he could still stand in the sunlight. If Castle Lord could have him serve you, it would be more valuable than killing him. Castle Lord actually lacks powerful assistants outside..."

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie became stunned...

Chapter 1144: Head Clan

"Ahh, Childe Cui, what happened to you?"

On the next early morning, when Zhang Tie finished feeding birds with a basin of wheat which had been soaked in water overnight and came back from the manor of Lord Guangnan in Xuanyuan Hill, he met Uncle Zhong. At the sight of Zhang Tie, Uncle Zhong was amazed.

Zhang Tie's look remained unchanged; however, his qi and temperament had improved a lot after taking that fruit of brilliance which contained too much spiritual energy, grasping the flight ability as a divine dominator, plus promoting his immortal rune skills to higher levels.

As a knight, Uncle Zhong had very sharp knight's consciousness. Additionally, Uncle Zhong could see Zhang Tie these days; of course, he could sense the great change of Zhang Tie. Over one night, Uncle Zhong had sensed that Zhang Tie's eye light grew more profound with brighter skin as if a vigorous light of life was flowing inside his body; additionally, Zhang Tie's qi as a whole grew steadier like a mountain. Furthermore, an invisible strength was surging silently in the calmness. Any knight could sense that invisible stress as long as they approached Zhang Tie.

Uncle Zhong didn't know what happened to Zhang Tie; however, he was sure that Zhang Tie had experienced a great change last night. Therefore, he became amazed, 'Did Childe Cui grasp a secret method overnight? It's too fast!'

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he relieved Uncle Zhong's doubt in one sentence, "Last night, I broke through a bottleneck on cultivation. Uncle Zhong really has a good insight!"

Zhang Tie's words were partly true. Besides Zhang Tie himself, nobody would know the details.

After hearing that Zhang Tie had broken through a bottleneck on cultivation, Uncle Zhong revealed a facial expression as if he was saying, "I see". Although Uncle Zhong still wondered what bottleneck, after being broken through, could lead to such a great change, he wouldn't ask about the details as the bottlenecks of secret methods that knights cultivated were one of the largest secrets of knights. They would not even tell their relatives and disciples about that, not to mention outsiders.

"Childe Cui, you're really a talent. Lately, Miss told me that Child Cui had reached the supreme situation that could integrate weather with your fist position. Childe Cui, I've not imagined that you could break through your bottleneck once again only after coming to Xuanyuan Hill for a few days. Given your age, Childe Cui would definitely promote to a heavenly knight sooner or later. I really feel happy for you, congratulations!" Uncle Zhong praised Zhang Tie sincerely.

"Hoho, I'm just too lucky, I'm just too lucky!" Zhang Tie said modestly as he touched his bald head.

As a knight, of course, Uncle Zhong knew how difficult it was for a knight to break through a realm. When Zhang Tie came to Xuanyuan Hill at the beginning, Uncle Zhong showed respect to Zhang Tie given the relationship between Bai Suxian and him; as he gradually understood Zhang Tie, this diligent and loyal old man of Lord Guangnan's Mansion sincerely respected Zhang Tie now. 'He's really a nice son-in-law. He's qualified to match Miss. No wonder Miss could behave so tamefully in front of him. He could promote to an earth knight at such a young age; win an airboat from Feng Yexiao, one of the top grand elders of Taiyi Fantasy Sect and be rewarded with a bounty land in Earth-elements Realm. It's said that he's even younger than Miss. Given his current performance, he's destined to promote to a shadow knight in the near future. It's reasonable for him to promote to a heavenly knight sooner or later.'

'How many heavenly knights are there in Taixia Country? A heavenly knight could keep a top major clan in Taixia Country safe. Childe Cui must have a limitless potential. Miss really has a good insight.'

"Aww, Childe Cui, I've had people figure out what you wanted to know yesterday..." Uncle Zhong said as he took out a card and gave it to Zhang Tie, "Here's the address of Immortal Farming Pavilion..."

After taking the delicate card, Zhang Tie threw a glance at it before saying, "It's also in Gold and Power Market?"

"Gold and Power Market is one of the most prosperous residences in Xuanyuan Hill. Numerous companies gather here, including Immortal Farming Pavilion. Childe Cui's requirement could only be met by Immortal Farming Pavilion besides the seed bank of the Agricultural Department. If we were in the south border of Taixia Country, Lord Guangnan could have people collect all the seeds for you; however, the quantity of plants in the south border of Taixia Country is limited and can't meet Childe Cui's requirement. Additionally, the seed bank of the Agricultural department is not open to the public. By contrast, it would be easier for us to get sufficient seeds from Immortal Farming Pavilion as long as we could afford it!"

"What's the background of Immortal Farming Pavilion?"

"The reliance of Immortal Farming Pavilion is Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace in Taixia Country. Herbal Medicine Palace is a top clan in Taixia Country, also the widely accepted head clan of people surnamed Jiang across Taixia Country. Many disciples of Jiang Clan have awakened the ancestral bloodlines of Immortal Farming Clan. They are born to have an affinity with plants. Jiang Clan is also doing various businesses about plants. 20% of the total medicines in big pharmaceutical factories, drug stores and Taixia Pharmacists Union come from Jiang Clan. Almost 1/3 of the seeds in the 6 warehouses of Class A cities across Taixia Country come

from Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace..."

After hearing Uncle Zhong's words, Zhang Tie took in a deep breath, '20% of the total medicines in big pharmaceutical factories, drug stores and Taixia Pharmacists Union come from Jiang Clan. Almost 1/3 of the seeds in the 6 warehouses of Class A cities across Taixia Country come from Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace. What a business! It might be so-so in a small country or a subcontinent; however, it is in Taixia Country which contains so many Class A cities. Any demand would be astronomical. If a clan could account such a high percentage in such a huge market, it must have a great power.'

The so-called head clan referred to the top clan of a family name. For instance, Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace was the head clan widely accepted by people surnamed Jiang. It indicated that all the clans surnamed Jiang across Taixia Country would follow the order of Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace; namely, Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace was the representative of all the people surnamed Jiang across Taixia Country. Sometimes, what the head clan of people surnamed Jiang expressed could represent the opinion of all the people surnamed Jiang across Taixia Country. If Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace held large-scale campaigns such as sacrificial rites in shrines, all the influential figures across Taixia Country surnamed Jiang would arrive. The Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace could enjoy the blessing of all the people surnamed Jiang across Taixia Country. Any head clan would definitely have a great position and influence.

Theoretically, the number of head clans across Taixia Country should be equal to that of family names. Actually, not each family name across Taixia Country could have a head clan. A head clan had to meet the following three conditions; first, someone in this clan should awaken the most powerful and typical heavenly-level even Immortal-level ancestral bloodline of their own ancestors and could reappear the glory of their ancestors; additionally, this

bloodline could be inherited generation by generation in the same clan; second, this clan should have an overwhelming influence and power among all the other clans of the same family name; if a lonely person or someone in a small family awakened the most powerful and typical ancestral bloodline, of course, their clan could not become a head clan; third, the clan should win the identification of those major clans and those influential figures who shared the same family name with them. Only after meeting the above three conditions could a clan become a head clan. It would take a clan dozens of years' hard efforts to become a head clan.

The first condition explained why many major clans across Taixia Country such as Huaiyuan Palace would value bloodline inheritance so much. Because ancestral bloodlines were the core of the cohesiveness and influence of a clan and stairs through which a clan could reach a higher position.

Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace was the head clan of people surnamed Jiang across Taixia Country. However, there was not a head clan for people surnamed Zhang across Taixia Country. It didn't mean that Zhang Clan in Taixia Country couldn't match Jiang Clan in influence and position. As a major family name in Taixia Country, people surnamed Zhang definitely outnumbered people surnamed Jiang across Taixia Country. Actually, Zhang Clans had the greatest population in Taixia Country. Top Zhang Clans also accounted for a greater percentage than other clans among the top clans in Taixia Country, such as Tianlu Palace, Guanying Palace and Bairen Palace. Any top Zhang Clan could match Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace. Because there were too many major Zhang Clans across Taixia Country, it was hard for them to select a head clan.

If Tianlu Palace wanted to be the head clan of people surnamed Zhang, Guanying Palace and Bairen Palace would not agree for sure. Similarly, if Guanying Palace or Bairen Palace wanted to be

the head clan, Tianlu Palace would not agree either. None of them could overwhelm the other two; therefore, people surnamed Zhang Tie didn't have a head clan. However, it wasn't an exaggeration to say that the reputation of the head clan was almost the ultimate target of those top Zhang Clans in Taixia Country.

——Without grasping an emperor-level secret cultivation method, a major clan would never become the royal households of Taixia Country. However, if a major clan, especially a major clan of a major family name could become a head clan, they would be able to influence hundreds of millions of people of the same family name across Taixia Country; enjoy the reverence of people of the same family name across Taixia Country and make their ancestors illustrious and their descendants honorable. They would definitely be on the equal footing with the royal households of Taixia Country as the most prestigious ones. Although they were not imperial clans, they could definitely match imperial clans.

Chapter 1145: Immortal Farming Pavilion

"Is this Immortal Farming Pavilion?"

2 hours later, walking with Zhang Tie on a street of Gold and Power Market, Bai Suxian turned around and watched the Immortal Farming Pavilion with full of curiosity in his eyes.

The street was not the main road of Gold and Power Market. It was a bit reluctant to call it a street; precisely, it was more like a slightly spacious lane.

Compared to the bustling people on the other streets of Gold and Power Market, this place was relatively quieter. Although this street was not wide, because vehicles and mounts were forbidden in Gold and Power Market, even the minister of justice of Taixia Country had to walk in Gold and Power Market; therefore, it was not noisy here.

"This is Immortal Farming Pavilion, the only Immortal Farming Pavilion in Gold and Power Market!" The 11 years old boy who led Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian here said firmly; at the same time, he looked straight into Zhang Tie's eyes as if he was afraid that they would repudiate a debt.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he flicked a gold coin at this boy, "Thanks for your hard work!"

"Thanks, childe, if you two have other needs, just find me, little six at the Dui Gate of Gold and Power Market. If you want to go other places today, I will serve you for free!" The boy revealed a big smile as he took Zhang Tie's gold coin and put it in a pocket under his coat. Closely after that, he bowed towards Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian and slid away as nimbly as a monkey.

Treasures Meeting was the grand meeting of knights, rich businessmen and many children from common clans. Many kids had already poured into Gold and Power Market and gathered at

those entrances of Gold and Power Market. Gold and Power Market was as large as a small city. If outsiders couldn't find a place, they could fetch a kid casually who would be very pleased to lead them to the destination. During the period of Treasures Meeting, those who visited Gold and Power Market were not commoners; they were all generous in expenditure. Gold coins were nothing different than copper coins in their eyes. Like Zhang Tie, they would spend 1 gold coin as a tip casually, which would surprise these kids a lot.

After what happened yesterday, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian didn't enter Qian Gate today; instead, they got off the vehicle at the Dui Gate. At the sight of their brilliant clothes and unusual looks, a lot of kids ran towards them immediately and wanted to be their guide. This boy called little six was smarter as he directly called Bai Suxian sister. Being satisfied by this appellation, Bai Suxian immediately selected this boy as their guide.

Zhang Tie was also watching the Immortal Farming Pavilion. At least from its look, Zhang Tie couldn't identify that it was the residence of Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace. Besides being tranquil, it looked more like a courtyard of a common family. However, the three words "Immortal Farming Pavilion" looked a bit interesting as they were not inscribed on the top of the gate, but on a huge rock at the gate. The huge rock was in the shadow. Alongside that huge rock, there was a small artificial rockery while water was flowing down the rockery. The huge rock was covered with thick green mosses which formed three words "Immortal Farming Pavilion".

People came and went. It seemed that this place still didn't lack business although being located in such a remote place. 'Good wine needs no bush.'

"Let's take a look inside!" Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian with a smile. Bai Suxian nodded tamely as she followed Zhang Tie in.

The moment they entered the gate, Zhang Tie had caught sight of

the colorful peony powders, pink, red, purple, yellow, green, black and white. It was really dazzling. Smelling the fragrance of the peony and watching the peonies in full blossom in the garden, Zhang Tie became a bit amazed. 'According to my knowledge, peony always blooms in May or June; however, it's already November. How could these peonies bloom in this season while there's not a greenhouse? Jiang Clan is really something!'

"I was told that one ancestral bloodline of Immortal Farming Clan that Jiang Clan awakened was called Flower Gentleman. After awakening this bloodline, they could allow flowers to bloom whenever they want. This peony blooms must be the meritorious service of Flower Gentleman of Jiang Clan. It's the best live advertisement that could display Jiang Clan's power..."

Bai Suxian's words entered Zhang Tie's ears in a secret way. Zhang Tie blinked his eyes as he asked Bai Suxian, "Is there such an ancestral bloodline?"

"The one who manages the imperial garden of the emperor's imperial city in Xuanyuan Hill is a member of Jiang Clan. When a member of the Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace manages the imperial garden, whenever Emperor Xuanyuan visited the garden, Jiang Clan would allow various flowers in the imperial garden to bloom in an order. Even Emperor Xuanyuan had praised the beautiful blooms in the imperial garden. Don't you know that?"

Zhang Tie indeed didn't know about that. However, Bai Suxian's words reminded Zhang Tie of the scene when he arrived at Ice and Snow Wilderness for the second time and allowed all the golden sea buckthorns to bloom over Ice and Snow Wilderness for the sake of propaganda. Of course, the scene shocked those Slavs and believers of Ancient God Church too much; however, Steward Guan Xiyi of Golden Roc Bank on his side was not amazed by that too much; neither did he treat Peter as a God. At that time, Zhang Tie even thought that Steward Guan Xiyi just pretended to be calm or didn't believe in God. Given Bai Suxian's words, Zhang Tie

realized that Guan Xiyi must have already owned all the marvelous phenomena through which Peter had awakened some ancestral bloodlines such as Flower Gentleman. Therefore, Guan Xiyi looked that calm.

Bai Suxian's words relieved a puzzle that had existed in Zhang Tie's mind a few years ago.

After they talked for a short while, a young woman in green clothes had walked towards them in a lightsome way with a smile, "Hi, may I help you?"

"Hmm, I want to do some business with Jiang Clan. Buy some seeds!" Zhang Tie replied frankly.

The woman in green clothes glanced at Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian before nodding, "Please follow me!"

Under the guidance of that woman in green clothes, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian entered a relatively independent yet tranquil room on the side of the peony garden. After making a cup of tea for Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian respectively and telling them that a steward would come here to negotiate with them about the details after a short while and confirmed that they didn't have any other demand, the young woman left in a lightsome way.

After the woman left, the room was filled with the fragrance of tea water. Zhang Tie sniffed and had a sip before finding that they were served with the top-quality wild spring tea water.

Speaking of the value, the two cups of tea water in front of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian was far more valuable than 1 gold coin that Zhang Tie gave to the boy just now. The woman in green clothes had sharp eyes. She could identify that Bai Suxian was a knight. Now that Bai Suxian behaved tamely in front of Zhang Tie, the woman realized that Zhang Tie was definitely not a commoner and it would not be a small business; neither would they come here to drink tea for free; therefore, she brought Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian here.

The woman was not very beautiful; however, she behaved in a good manner when she received Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian. Although being smart, she didn't display it; therefore, Zhang Tie felt pretty comfortable as he sighed with emotion inside, 'That's what a top clan should be! Given its look, the entire Immortal Farming Pavilion has nothing to do with magnificence; however, the peony garden and the two cups of wild spring tea water felt rich and dignified in simple life like what a real major clan should be! It seemed that all the major clans in Taixia Country liked this style. Those who wanted to show that they were rich were all nouveau riches.

It was not a big room; however, it was arranged in a plain and elegant way. The only decoration on the wall was a clear and beautiful calligraphic work of the poem "Common Flowers will wither".

——

Common flowers and grasses will wither sooner or later, only the beautiful peony still blooms in this morning;

The scarlet flowers being covered with dew slightly incline like having drunk too much sweet alcohol, leaving their beautiful looks to the late spring;

I appreciate it until sunset while the warm spring wind wavers the leaves constantly;

The rich fragrance of peony blooms enters the room from the window as if it is having a blind date with the people lying on the bed silently.

When Zhang Tie was having tea water and tasting the realm of the poem "Common flowers will wither", a spirited old man entered the room. After sitting squarely in front of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian, he revealed a genial smile, "This humble old man is Jiang Yu, one steward of Immortal Farming Pavilion, I was told that you wanted to buy some plant seeds from Immortal Farming

Pavilion?"

"Yes, I want to buy some plant seeds!" Zhang Tie replied.

"May I know what kind of plant seeds do you want and how many do you want, childe?" The old man asked.

"Do you have all the seeds that I want?"

Jiang Yu picked up his teacup and had a sip before saying, "We could provide you all the seeds as long as you could name or draw them..."

The so-called arrogant demeanor didn't mean that you had to squint at someone or sneer at him. Like what this old man did, having a sip of tea water before telling you that we could provide you with all the seeds that you could name or draw. This was the real arrogant demeanor.

"I want a plant seeds bank which contains all the plant seeds that you could provide!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile. He didn't feel disgusted about the arrogance of Jiang Clan; instead, he appreciated it very much. The more arrogant Jiang Clan was, the more possible would this business be made. That was what Zhang Tie wanted.

Jiang Yu didn't feel amazed by Zhang Tie's words. Zhang Tie was not the first one who proposed such a requirement to Herbal Medicine Pavilion. Because more and more major clans across Taixia Country would like to store seeds in the past one year, Jiang Clan's business was growing better. Overall, this might not a good omen; however, it was just a business; now that the customers arrived, it was not reasonable for them to refuse the customers. Who could predict what would happen in the future?

"Do you want all the plant seeds except for grain seeds?"

"Yes, all of them!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Jiang Yu became slightly spirited as he straightened up his body a bit more and said, "Jiang

Clan could provide you 513,697 plant seeds, 125,471 among which come from the Earth-elements Realm, 39,817 among which were aquatic plant seeds from freshwater and salt water. These plant seeds cover all the categories of plants that humans have discovered till now. It's only 192 special plant seeds less than the seeds bank of the Finance Ministry of Taixia Country..."

Chapter 1146: The Business

After staying in the Immortal Farming Pavilion for less than half an hour, Zhang Tie had already closed this deal. After paying for half of the total expenditure as the down payment and signing a contract with Immortal Farming Pavilion, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian left.

The contract value of this seeds bank was 3.1 million gold coins, which included the freight. After a month, Herbal Medicine Palace would transport these plant seeds to Xuantian City of Iron-Dragon Sect. These plant seeds didn't include over 90 extremely rare ones such as fiery-flame lotus seed, golden glossy ganoderma seed and dragon-digesting grass seed and mutated ones.

After finishing this task, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside. Previously, Zhang Tie constantly teleported plant seeds into Castle of Black Iron. However, there were only tens of thousands of kinds of plant seeds in Castle of Black Iron, which was far less than that provided by Immortal Farming Pavilion. The plant seeds provided by Immortal Farming Pavilion even included those from other continents, subcontinents and Earth-elements Realm, besides those in Taixia Country.

Of course, these plant seeds would be teleported into Castle of Black Iron. As he was in Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie prepared to complement the plant seeds in Castle of Black Iron so as to make biological resources in Castle of Black Iron plentiful.

Zhang Tie had already got a plan. He would fill Castle of Black Iron with the most fundamental plant resources at first; after that, he would gradually fill animal resources into Castle of Black Iron according to the pass order of food chain. When he was free, he would expand the land area in Castle of Black Iron by hundreds of times, even thousands of times. After such a series of operations, the ecosphere in Castle of Black Iron would be completely consistent with that of the outside. Such an ecosphere would be

more vigorous and suitable for human habitation.

In this holy war, even major sects like Taiyi Fantasy Sect which had powerful sage-level knights had made the worst preparation. After knowing this information, even though Zhang Tie was confident about humans, he didn't feel that he could match Taiyi Fantasy Sect in power. Therefore, it was necessary for him to leave a room for maneuver. Zhang Tie used these plant seeds to manage his room for maneuver. As many major clans and sects were expanding their plant seeds banks, it was not special for Zhang Tie to expand his seeds bank as the owner of Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory and the master of Iron-Dragon Sect.

"Immortal Farming Pavilion is really good at making money. Over 3 million gold coins could only afford over 500,000 kinds of plant seeds. 6 gold coins for one kind of plant seed on average. If I fetch someone casually outside Immortal Farming Pavilion and pay him 10 gold coins, he could at least give me hundreds of plant seeds near Xuanyuan Hill. In the south border of Taixia Country, many plant seeds are almost free. With one gold coin, you could have people collect hundreds of plant seeds for you."

Even Bai Suxian who didn't care about money also knew that Zhang Tie had spent too much on seeds. To be honest, these plant seeds weren't worth so much. Although over 3 million gold coins were nothing for Zhang Tie, it was an astronomical wealth for commoners. In Taixia Country, if a common family could have a deposit of thousands of gold coins in the bank, it was already a well-off family, not to mention over 3 million gold coins. Even commoners could collect these plant seeds.

Zhang Tie shook his head with a smile, "You can not do accounts in this way. If these seeds are sold one by one, they are not even worth 100,000 gold coins; however, after gathering all of them, their value skyrocketed. Over 3 million gold coins are not the value of those seeds, but the value of the ability of Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace which integrates with these plant seeds resources.

Besides Jiang Clan, any individual or clan might have to spend far more than 3 million gold coins and longer time for such a complete seeds bank from continents, subcontinents, underground space even Earth-elements Realm. Jiang Clan has realized the value of their integrating ability; therefore, they price the complete seeds bank so high!"

"Are you angry about that?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie when they walked out of Immortal Farming Pavilion and entered the wide lane.

"Nothing to be angry about. I just admire their integrating ability. They deserve that price!" Zhang Tie replied straightforwardly; meanwhile, he made a hand gesture and said, "There were two most profitable businesses in the world: first, monopoly. As you're the only seller, you could make profits all the way. Nobody else could imitate you; second, take Jiang Clan as an instance, they integrate with many common resources for sale. The first business depends on the monopoly qualification on exclusive goods or rights; the second business depends on insight and integrating ability. These seeds are just there. Everybody could do such a business; however, only Jiang Clan across the world could integrate over 500,000 kinds of plant seeds. Therefore, they deserve that price!"

"After listening to you, even I start to admire Jiang Clan of Herbal Medicine Palace. However, how do you understand business so well?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie as she grabbed Zhang Tie's arm.

Zhang Tie blinked his eyes, "Have you forgotten about my job when I was young?"

Bai Suxian immediately remembered that Zhang Tie once served as a salesman in a grocery when in Blackhot City through Zhang Tie's article in the forum of Mountain of Brilliance.

The two people then burst out into laughter at the same time.

"Where are we going?"

"Is there any place that sells secret methods in Gold and Power Market?"

"How could people sell secret methods in the public?"

"I mean incomplete ones such as Robust Ox Skill and Heavenly Blue Technique ."

"Besides those who couldn't promote to a knight, anyone who might promote to a knight would not cultivate such secret methods. What do you want them for?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie with a curious look.

"Do you remember Xu Yian in Xuajia Village?" Zhang Tie mentioned the small village that he and Bai Suxian once saved at the critical moment from bloody figures.

"Yes, I do!" Bai Suxian nodded.

"Xu Yian said that he cultivated Heavenly Blue Technique . The complete version of Heavenly Blue Technique is count-level Heavenly God Sutra . It even contains a complete Heavenly God's Saber Skill . Although being limited to cultivation level, Xu Yian couldn't play the full effect of Heavenly God's Saber Skill . However, the count-level battle skill is also powerful enough. I was thinking that now that there is a corresponding battle skill being attached to Heavenly Blue Technique , there should also be complete secret skills being attached to other secret methods!"

"Secret methods which contain corresponding battle skills are at least on count-level. Even baron-level and viscount-level secret methods are not matched with corresponding battle skills. However, if the cultivators of these battle skills don't promote to a knight, they couldn't even exert 1/10 of the maximal power of these battle skills as they could not coordinate these battle skills with the corresponding surging points and the ability of their chakras of the corresponding secret methods. Do you really want to learn these

battle skills?"

"Stones in other mountains could be used to refine jades!" Zhang Tie turned solemn, "After the battle with Nangong Sheng, I've got a lot of insights. If I could learn from other battle skills and secret methods on other levels, I might make further progress in my cultivation base."

"I see!" Bai Suxian revealed a serious look, "I've not been to such a place. However, I remember that there's a store called Semi-jade Pavilion in Gold and Power Market which especially sells incomplete secret methods. It's even a bit well-known!"

Zhang Tie tried to recover his composure as he said calmly, "That's great, let's take a look over there!"

...

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian strolled in Gold and Power Market as they asked passers-by about the location of that Semi-jade Pavilion. After 1 hour, they finally came to the front store of Semi-jade Pavilion.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian knew that they were followed by some "tails". However, they didn't care about that.

Compared to the tranquil Immortal Farming Pavilion, Semi-jade Pavilion looked utterly different. The 3-storey front store, the shiny obsidian floor and the two rows of sturdy armored mighty guardians made it look like a court's residence.

"What do you see?" Zhang Tie asked Bai Suxian with a smile.

"It seems that this place rips off people, too!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he could basically confirm that most of the customers in Semi-jade Pavilion didn't have a strong battle strength and background. Because they had no cultivation resource or chance, they came here to select a cultivation method although they could not promote to a knight anymore. Therefore, the arrangement in Semi-jade Pavilion was superficial. Customers

could understand the value of the arrangement at the sight of it. Customers here might not understand the value of peony blooms and top-quality wild spring tea water in Immortal Farming Pavilion. Therefore, Bai Suxian's comment was spot on.

The two people then entered the resplendent and magnificent Semi-jade Pavilion...

At the sight of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian entering Semi-jade Pavilion, a "tail" after them kept a close watch on the gate of Semi-jade Pavilion as he pressed one hand onto the other wrist, where there was a remote-sensing crystal...

...

"Master, Cui Li and Bai Suxian have just entered Semi-jade Pavilion. I've also figured out their deal with Immortal Farming Pavilion. Cui Li bought a lot of plant seeds from Jiang Clan. The trade volume is 3.1 million gold coins..."

After Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian entered Semi-jade Pavilion for less than 1 minute, the guy with a long face and sparse beard whom Zhang Tie slapped twice yesterday was reporting Han Yuanhong about the traces of Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian. Since Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian entered Gold and Power Market, Han Yuanhong's subordinates had been keeping a close watch on them.

After hearing the report, Han Yuanhong revealed a sneer as he mocked, "Seeds bank? This Cui Li is really patriotic. Does he still think that he is the provincial governor of Youzhou Province? Although I could not interfere with the deal between them and Jiang Clan, didn't they ask who was the boss of Semi-jade Pavilion before they entered that store? Han Sui, go to Semi-jade Pavilion; I think you already know what to do..."

Chapter 1147: Abandoning One Thought

Semi-jade Pavilion sold over 200 dazzling secret books including dos, methods, techniques, flows and skills. It was said to have the most kinds of incomplete secret books across Taixia Country. Looking at so many secret books on the brochure, Zhang Tie felt dazzled. Fortunately, he had not seen the virtual objects of these secret books. He only needed to select what he wanted from the brochure.

'What a Gold and Power Market!' Zhang Tie sighed with emotion when he read the introductions, 'Perhaps only Xuanyuan Hill could have such a great store!'

According to the introduction, the secret books here were for sale; actually, it meant that the buyer could accept enlightenment only once. The buyer could not impart the secret method that he bought here to the others. If one really wanted to buy an incomplete secret method from here, the price would be pretty high.

Zhang Tie remembered that the Robust Ox Skill that he bought in the black market of Selnes Theater of Operations only cost him 10,000 gold coins; however, the same incomplete secret method in Semi-jade Pavilion would cost him 120,000 gold coins. The enlightenment fee for one time of Robust Ox Skill would be 1,200 gold coins. As for commoners, both 120,000 gold coins and 1,200 gold coins were not small figures. Even the value of this kind of secret method dropped greatly in the life or death situation facing Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie still felt that the incomplete secret methods in Semi-jade Pavilion were a bit expensive.

Of course, Zhang Tie would buy the entire incomplete secret method. As an earth knight, if he accepted others' enlightenment here, it would be a joke and ruin his reputation to a certain degree.

Incomplete secret skills were the cheapest ones in this store. The prices of incomplete secret dos, methods, techniques and flows would rise by times one level after another. Even the cheapest secret flows would be priced at 300,000 gold coins; enlightenment for one time would also reach 3,000 gold coins. The price of enlightenment was 1/100 of that of the entire incomplete secret method.

After skimming over the prices of these secret books, Zhang Tie realized why Confucianism was treasured so much in Taixia Country. Because a commoner could barely learn any senior secret books or battle skills without a mater. The prices of these secret books would make people from common clans breathless.

Those major clans and sects would not favor these secret books. Because these secret books could not help people promote to knights. However, although Taixia Country was so big with such a large population, there were only very few knights. Those clans and sects with knights would be at least local magnates. Below these magnates, there were still huge demands for secret books on different levels. Not everyone was thinking about promoting to a knight. This also explained why these secret books could exist.

Like commodities, sutras were top luxuries. Not everyone could enjoy such top luxuries. Therefore, people with poorer purchasing capabilities would choose similar commodities of different levels below these top luxuries. That explained why dos, methods, techniques, flows and skills existed in the market.

Those joining Fire-Dragon Sect could have a chance to learn Fire-Dragon Sutra ; however, youngsters living in small villages such as Xujia Village might only learn a bit Heavenly Blue Technique . Those major clans and sects which owned secret sutras could also control the dissemination of their own secret sutras through enlightenment in case that outsiders learned them. Of course, disciples in major sects could learn secret books which could help them promote to knights; however, would every soldier in the

army learn secret books that could help them promote to knights? Of course not. In the army, the simplest secret books that could help most of the soldiers promote to LV 9 or LV 10 were the best.

Besides armies, rural areas, towns, small cities or sparsely populated clans also required secret books on different levels. Anyone who could get hang of secret techniques or flows would be qualified to enroll apprentices and thrive their clans.

In Semi-jade Pavilion, even secret flows were divided into different ranks. The more complete the secret book and its attached battle skills were and the more surging points it would ignite, the expensive it would be.

If Zhang Tie didn't have the special imitation ability of "King Roc Sutra", he would definitely ignore such secret books like Bai Suxian. However, with this special ability and the marquis-level Fire Dragon Sutra , Zhang Tie became picky even if he came here especially for those attached complete battle skills of those secret books. Zhang Tie almost ignored all the secret books below marquis because it was meaningless for him.

After sifting those secret books for about 1 hour, Zhang Tie became a bit disappointed. He was too optimistic. Among over 200 secret books in the Semi-jade Pavilion, there was only one incomplete secret book above marquis-level being attached with complete battle skills, namely Shocking God Sutra. This sutra could light 281 surging points. It contained two battle skills, namely "Shocking God Swordsmanship" and "Shocking God Flight Skill". No more senior secret books being attached with complete battle skills could be found in the Semi-jade Pavilion. Although there were duke-level and throne-level secret books, they were severely incomplete. Two secret methods and three secret flows were not even attached with a battle skill.

'What could they be used for? The complete version of Shocking God Sutra is not as advanced as Fire Dragon Sutra . Even if I spend great efforts to recover the complete version of this secret book

and get hang of the Shocking God Flight Skill , would it be more powerful than the Fire Dragon Flowing Light Skill ? Would the Shocking God Swordsmanship surpass the Fire Dragon Burning Heavens Spear Skill ?'

This Shocking God Sutra was useless for Zhang Tie. The other incomplete secret books lacked corresponding battle skills, which Zhang Tie would not be interested in. He had already learned an emperor-level secret sutra; the only regret was that he had not grasped the corresponding battle skills of the emperor-level secret sutra, how could Zhang Tie be interested in these rubbishes?

'I could not always have a good luck. There're not too many duke-level and throne-level incomplete secret books being attached with complete battle skills in this world that could be further developed by me.' Zhang Tie abandoned the thought that occurred to his mind in Xujia Village.

"I will take this one!" Zhang Tie didn't reveal his disappointed feeling; instead, he just pinched his nose as he selected a secret book on the brochure of Semi-jade Pavilion.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't select the Shocking God Sutra; instead, he just chose an inferior count-level Double-moon Flow which included Crescent Hook Skill and Moon Shadow Movements . Zhang Tie chose this secret book because it was much cheaper. He just patched up his lie in front of Bai Suxian. Of course, it was unnecessary for him to spend too much money in vain.

"Childe, are you going to take this Double-moon Flow ?" A steward of Semi-jade Pavilion asked Zhang Tie.

"Yes, I will take this Double-moon Flow !"

After saying that, Zhang Tie even felt a bit pitiful. Thankfully, over 400,000 gold coins were nothing for him. He just took it as an experiment. Even if this experiment failed, at least he would learn that this way didn't work! If he couldn't find any proper secret book in Semi-jade Pavilion of Gold and Power Market, he would

not find it in any other place.

"Alright, Childe, please wait for a short while. I will bring it back!"

The steward stood up and left.

"Why did you choose this one? I think the Shocking God Sutra is better!" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie out of curiosity.

"Big mouthfuls often choke. I bought this incomplete secret book only to learn its attached battle skills. I want to see whether I could have a gnosis from them. I don't know whether this way works or not. I will have a try. If it indeed works, I will buy others back here. It won't take me too much time. If it doesn't work, I will abandon this thought!" Zhang Tie explained with a solemn look.

Bai Suxian nodded.

Not until Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian waited in the reception room for almost 10 minutes when Bai Suxian became a bit impatient, someone else swaggered in the room. It was the guy with a long face and sparse beard whom Zhang Tie slapped twice at the Qian Gate yesterday.

Although this guy's face had been daubed with ointment, it still looked a bit red and swollen.

At the sight of this guy, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian had frowned. However, this guy just watched Zhang Tie like a small man intoxicated by success.

"I'm sorry, Double-moon Flow is running out stock in Semi-moon Pavilion !

The moment Bai Suxian heard that guy's words, her eyebrows had raised as she smashed onto the table and sprung up before roaring, "There was one just now; why it's running out of stock now? Where's the steward? Call him out. If you dare play trick in front of your grandma, this grandma will demolish your goddamn store."

Bai Suxian's fury and tantrum scared that guy one step back. That guy swallowed his saliva forcefully before sneering while stretching out his neck, "I'm the boss of Semi-jade Pavilion. If I say no, it's a no. If you want one, pay me 5 million gold coins..."

"You...it was worth less than 500,000 gold coins just now; how it skyrocketed by 10 times now?" Bai Suxian who had not been ripped off since young raised her hand. Before she slapped that guy's face, Zhang Tie who had been watching with a distant look on one side had already stood up and caught her wrist, "Let's go..."

"But..."

Before Bai Suxian said anything, Zhang Tie had already stridden out of the store by pulling her hand, leaving the guy with long face and sparse beard standing in the original place; opening his mouth, he looked like a clown who had just gone on to the stage; before he started his performance, he found that all the audience had already left; therefore, he became embarrassed...

Chapter 1148: Folding Wings and Lowering Body

Until Zhang Tie pulled Bai Suxian out of the Gate of Semi-jade Pavilion for a short while did he release Bai Suxian's hand.

Bai Suxian was still furious as she shouted, "That son of a bitch is too abominable. Why not give him a lesson?"

"They're waiting for us to fight them!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

"What do you mean?"

"As long as one of us couldn't stand to launch a fight, those guards outside the gate would rush in at once. In the chaos, as long as one of them died there, we might have to die for the dare-to-die fighter raised by others. In Xuanyuan Hill, even knights would face the death penalty after killing a person." Zhang Tie revealed a cold smile.

"I will see whether they dare do that or not!" Bai Suxian shouted out of fury as she almost goggled out her eyes.

"You're the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion, of course, they dare not do that to you. They're aiming at me. I've not imagined that Semi-jade Pavilion is under the direct control of Gold and Power Market. I'm afraid that Han Yuanhong has already known the moment we entered Semi-jade Pavilion. Therefore, he set a fatal trap for me. In others' store, they could price their goods as high as they want. After all, we've not closed the deal yet. If we kill people out of fury because we fail to close the deal, we are not justified; we would even lose our lives for that. That guy has already arrived there half an hour ago. He's not there alone as 10 more people went there together with him. All the guards outside the gate of Semi-jade Pavilion have been changed into his dare-to-die fighters. As long as we started a fight, they would rush in at

once and make it severe. Someone would die for sure. As for those guests who entered the store 20 minutes ago, one of them was a knight. As their witness, he pretended to purchase secret books on our neighboring room!"

Although Zhang Tie was in the reception room, he could sense almost everything in the neighborhood with his knight's consciousness. The moment that guy whom he slapped yesterday entered the room to offend them, Zhang Tie had realized the opponent's arrangement and vicious trick. If he was a hot-blooded or a bit impulsive young man, he would fall into their trap the moment he started a fight.

The small Semi-jade Pavilion contained such a killing intent. They even wanted to screw an earth knight. How many people could bear such a trick? The only thing that was out of Zhang Tie's opponent's imagination was that Zhang Tie who had a pretty bad temper yesterday was actually always good-tempered. Additionally, Zhang Tie was very scrupulous in crisis. He could always identify the trick rapidly. Being silent, Zhang Tie just pulled Bai Suxian away. Therefore, the opponent's following tricks became useless...

Just now, Bai Suxian didn't figure out the trick; therefore, she was furious. After hearing Zhang Tie's analysis, she changed her face at once as she felt chilly inside. Even being a female, Bai Suxian also knew that many heroes who had experienced many great battles were finally screwed by small sinister figures. Actually, what happened just now was very dangerous.

Although being bustling on the street, who could imagine that an earth knight was almost screwed by someone here a few minutes ago? Even the winter sunshine in Xuanyuan Hill could not drive away Bai Suxian's chilliness.

"I will demolish that godd*mn store right now!" Bai Suxian was driven extremely mad.

"Hahaha, if you demolish their store, you have to compensate for that. If you kill someone, you will have trouble. Even if you don't compensate for that, they will ask your dad for the compensation. They're gaining the upper hand. If we're tricked, we will lose!"

"Will we just let them go?"

"We still have time!"

After buying a seeds bank and strolling in Semi-jade Pavilion for a while before encountering such an annoyance, Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie both lost their interest in wandering in Gold and Power Market. Therefore, they directly left there. After considering the strengths of what happened just now for a short while, Zhang Tie found that he didn't need to pay hundreds of thousands of gold coins in vain anymore; additionally, he abandoned the thought of getting some complete senior secret books easily. As for whether he could gain some senior secret books in the future, it depended on his fortune.

...

Soon after Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian left Gold and Power Market, Han Yuanhong had received the information in Treasures Complex. Watching that person kneeling down in front of him with a flurried look, Han Yuanhong even comforted that guy with a long face and sparse beard, "You've already tried your best. But I've not imagined that Cui Li could be so scrupulous and could seek through our trap. It's nothing serious. He's just an earth knight. We've got many chances to deal with him in the future. We still have time!"

...

"We still have time!"

Both Cui Li and Han Yuanhong said the same words in the end.

...

2 days later, in a small special auction...

"The No. 17 space-teleportation equipment, 7,200 earth-element crystals one time, 7,200 earth-element crystals second time, 7,200 earth-element crystals third time...close the deal!"

When the auctioneer knocked onto the metal stand by a small hammer, Mountain Lifting Hermit's face turned completely white...

Sitting close to Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside. Bai Suxian also looked at Mountain Lifting Hermit with a sympathetic expression. The bottom price of that average space-teleportation equipment was only 800 earth-element crystals. Who could imagine that its transaction price could be 9 times more than that of its bottom price? It's far more than its market price in late years and out of Mountain Lifting Hermit's purchasing power.

Previously, Mountain Lifting Hermit had full confidence in getting this space-teleportation equipment. These two days, Mountain Lifting Hermit had sold all of his collections in Gold and Power Market; plus his savings, he accumulated 7,100 earth-element crystals in total. Unexpectedly, he still failed to gain that space-teleportation equipment.

In the beginning, over 10 people joined the competition for this space-teleportation equipment. After some rounds of quotations, when the quotation of this space-teleportation equipment surpassed 4,000 earth-element crystals, most of the people gave it up, except for two people who raised the quotation of this space-teleportation equipment to 5,500 earth-element crystals. When Mountain Lifting Hermit quoted 5,600 earth-element crystals, the two people gave it up. The one who competed with Mountain Lifting Hermit to the end was a person in the front of the auction. When others quoted, that person didn't quote. When Mountain Lifting Hermit quoted alone, that one would definitely add 100 more earth-element crystals on the basis of Mountain Lifting Hermit's quotation.

The final quotation of Mountain Lifting Hermit was 7,100 earth-

element crystals when Zhang Tie found Mountain Lifting Hermit clenching his fists. However, the moment Mountain Lifting Hermit finished his last quotation, the other bidder quoted 7,200 earth-element crystals without any hesitation.

At this moment, Mountain Lifting Hermit refused Zhang Tie's good intention about lending him earth-element crystals. Therefore, he just watched that space-teleportation equipment being taken away by the other bidder after the auctioneer inquired them three times.

Even Bai Suxian felt that Mountain Lifting Hermit was a bit miserable. However, she didn't know how to comfort him; neither did Zhang Tie know how to tell him. Actually, Zhang Tie had many space-teleportation equipment; however, as an earth knight, Mountain Lifting Hermit had his dignity and persistence and could not be easily humiliated.

At this moment, the guy who had been competing with Mountain Lifting Hermit in front of them turned around and revealed a pleasant smile towards the three people as if he had won a battle.

However, Mountain Lifting Hermit loosed his fist at this moment as he forced a smile and said in a hoarse voice, "Let's go!"

Although there were other items to be auctioned, Mountain Lifting Hermit didn't want to stay here anymore.

The three people then left their seats.

When they left the auction hall, passing through a winding corridor and was going to leave the Secret Items Pavilion, Han Yuanhong appeared in front of them with the space-teleportation finger ring that Mountain Lifting Hermit had been bidding for just now in hand. He tossed the finger ring like a toy as he watched Zhang Tie, Mountain Lifting Hermit and Bai Suxian with a commanding look.

"Don't you want to look at it? I'm so sorry. I found this space-

teleportation equipment was delicate and could be used as a gift, I've not imagined that I disrupted your plan. There's some more space-teleportation equipment in the auction, if you lack earth-element crystals, just let me know. As we're all Hua knights, it's my pleasure to give you a favor, hahahahaha..."

Mountain Lifting Hermit who had been reluctant to part with that space-teleportation finger ring threw a deep glance at Han Yuanhong. Without even looking at the item in Han Yuanhong's hand, he directly passed by Han Yuanhong with a glassy-eyed look. Bai Suxian wanted to lose her temper; however, Zhang Tie pulled her away.

Bai Suxian suppressed her anger as she threw a glare at Han Yuanhong. Zhang Tie revealed a smile as if he had not seen such a person in front of him.

Watching the three people passing by with glassy-eyed looks, Han Yuanhong's sneer frozen at once...

...

The three people directly left the Treasures Complex.

"What a bullsh*t place! I will never come here again. It's disgusting..." Bai Suxian said out of fury.

"Elder brother, where are you heading for?" Zhang Tie asked Mountain Lifting Hermit, "If elder brother is free lately, how about returning to Youzhou Province with us in a few days?"

"There's always a way. If it doesn't work here, it doesn't mean that it won't work in other places!" Mountain Lifting Hermit gradually recovered his composure. He even talked to Zhang Tie with a smile, "I prepare to try my fortune in Taiyi City. The largest trading center of secret pearls is located in that city. Knights who come back from Earth-elements Realm would exchange their secret pearls for money over there. With these earth-element crystals, I want to try my fortune by buying some secret pearls

over there. After I get a space-teleportation, I will come for you in Youzhou Province!"

'Is there a place for trading secret pearls in Taixia Country?' Zhang Tie bore the name of Taiyi City deep in mind. The moment he heard this name, Zhang Tie had realized that this city might be related to Taiyi Fantasy Sect.

"Elder brother, when do you prepare to go there?"

Mountain Lifting Hermit looked up at the night being covered with stars as he took in a deep breath and said, "I'd rather choose now than selecting a day..."

...

Half an hour later, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian saw off Mountain Lifting Hermit out of Xuanyuan Hill.

When an eagle was going to launch a strike, it would fold its wings and lower its body; when a fierce beast was going to charge at a prey, it would lower its head and body.

'Could I match a bird or a beast?'

Watching Mountain Lifting Hermit flying towards afar as fast as a lightning bolt, Zhang Tie asked himself as he revealed a faint smile...

9 days left, he could form 3 trouble-reappearance fruits at most...

...

In the next one week, Zhang Tie didn't go to Gold and Power Marke anymore. Each morning, he would feed birds; in the daytime, he would visit the scenic spots in Xuanyuan Hill with Bai Suxian. In the evening, he would cultivate quietly in his room. He didn't meet those nuisances anymore.

He formed one trouble-reappearance fruit per 3 days. Zhang Tie didn't feel pitiful about that; instead, he treated the effect of trouble-reappearance fruits increasingly lighter.

As for Zhang Tie, he only needed to make his utmost efforts to do that.

On November 12th, Zhang Tie's disciples finally came back to the manor of Lord Guangnan in Xuanyuan Hill after having fun for almost 2 weeks in Xuanyuan Hill. All of them were in great delights safe and sound.

On November 13th, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian traveled across Fairy Lake in the daytime. In the evening, Zhang Tie formed a trouble-reappearance fruit at the fastest speed in his cultivation room. Closely after that, he entered the trouble-reappearance situation...

Before entering the new trouble-reappearance situation, Zhang Tie's mind settled as still water as he didn't have any hope for that inside the trouble-reappearance situation anymore...

Chapter 1149: Hard Work Paying Off

How did the last trouble-reappearance fruit taste?

In the trouble-reappearance situation, before Zhang Tie tasted the last trouble-reappearance fruit carefully, the LV 9 demon fighter had already rushed towards him with bloody eyes.

Like how he did in former times, Zhang Tie shot out a battle qi by finger and blew up the demon fighter's legs in a split second, sending its blood and flesh flying in all directions. As a result, his room was contaminated and was filled with a bloody smell.

When the demon fighter fell onto the ground and roared miserably, Zhang Tie leisurely opened his room and went downstairs frankly. After coming to the parlor, he took a treasured sword from a wall before leaving the house.

When Zhang Tie left the house, the LV 9 demon fighter who had lost its legs was still inching towards Zhang Tie by hands with bloody eyes while roaring miserably and gritting its teeth.

It was still windy in the deep night in the manor. Besides that persistent demon knight's miserable roars, it was quiet in the surroundings as before. This Xuanyuan Hill belonged to Zhang Tie himself.

What he saw was almost as same as that in the former 4 times. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't expect that the last trouble-reappearance fruit could bring him any achievement. Zhang Tie had seen through it. If it was the same result as before, he had to use the directest method tomorrow. After all, as long as he could uproot Han Clan's power from Xuanyuan Hill, he would be the winner. Even though he used the directest method, he would not lose a hair.

Although the sword in his hand was for an appreciative purpose, nothing in the Lord Guangnan's Manor in Xuanyuan Hill was

common.

This was a two-handed huge sword, which was 177 cm in length, 112 kg in weight and 15 cm in width. Being affected by LV 3 sharpness rune and firmness rune, it also had the splitting and freezing effects. This sword was definitely a competitive rune weapon, even for knights.

Zhang Tie dropped off the sword while the sword suspended in front of him. Closely after that, Zhang Tie jumped onto the sword. Stepping on the broad sword's body as if stepping on a skating board or a surfing board, he flew off the manor into the sky above Xuanyuan Hill. Almost in a split second, a jarring sonic boom that rocked the entire Xuanyuan Hill sounded above this city where there was only one person...

If someone in Xuanyuan Hill saw Zhang Tie's movement at this moment, they would definitely bow towards him out of worship as they would treat Zhang Tie as a sage-level knight or a legendary immortal.

Over 1,000 m high in the sky, Zhang Tie stood leisurely on a huge sword. The sword broke 3 times that of the sound speed in the blink of an eye as fast as a lightning bolt, arousing constantly shrill sonic booms. Zhang Tie was standing on the huge sword as steady as Mount Tai with hands on his back leisurely, his clothes were swaying in the wind as if he was a poet strolling in a tranquil courtyard while looking up at the moons and thinking about poetry...

These days, Zhang Tie had been folding his wings and lowering his body so as to give a fatal blow to Han Clan at any time. After enjoying with Bai Suxian in the daytime, Zhang Tie would train his flight ability as a divine dominator in the trouble-reappearance situation.

Like a thin window, the flight ability as a divine dominator was soon grasped by Zhang Tie; additionally, Zhang Tie concluded

some flight skills.

This flight mode by stepping on a huge sword was the most pleasant and stylish way for a divine dominator. The benefit of this flight mode was that he could maintain a demeanor of an immortal. This flight mode was most destructive for commons. Its shortcoming was that Zhang Tie would have a great resistance when facing the wind and couldn't reach the maximal flight speed of divine dominator.

The second flight mode was the most secret flight mode. This flight mode required a pair of caligas with steel-plate soles or alloy materials, a metal waistband and two metal wristlets. In flight, he should control the caligas, metal waistband and metal wristlets at the same time for the optimal flight effect. Without the three types of equipment, he could also fly; however, it would not feel as comfortable and flexible as that with the three types of equipment.

As the three equipments were usually worn by people, they would not arise people's suspicion; this flight mode was most mysterious. He could use the three props to accelerate his speed at any time using the ability of divine dominator when in normal flight condition.

The third flight mode had the highest efficiency. He wore a full-body metal armor which even covered his eyes. He manipulated this full-body metal battle armor using the ability of divine dominator. In this flight mode, with the protection of metal battle armor, Zhang Tie could easily reach the maximal flight speed using his ability as a divine dominator without even releasing his protective battle qi.

What was the maximal flight speed under the control of divine dominator?

Through numerous trials these days, Zhang Tie made a precise conclusion, based on his current spiritual energy level and knight's level, he could at most reach 6 times that of the speed of sound,

namely almost 4,700 miles per hour.

This discovery and experience stunned Zhang Tie for quite a while.

A few days ago, he was still thinking about breaking through the speed of sound using knights' flight ability. However, a few days later, he had already broken through the sonic barrier using the ability of divine dominator and reached the flight speed of hypersonic aircraft before the Catastrophe.

With the ability of divine dominator, he could reach 6 times that of the speed of sound. When he attacked with weapons alone using the ability of divine dominator, Zhang Tie himself couldn't identify how fast the weapons moved. It would be far greater than 6 times that of the speed of sound. It was as fast as his consciousness. As long as he caught sight of the target, his attack would arrive as if the speed had broken through the limit of the physical rule.

After studying the sharp difference between the flight speed using the ability of divine dominator and the attacking speed, Zhang Tie found that there might only be one reason, namely, the closer the objects under the control of divine dominator were to his body, the slower they would move. It seemed that there was an invisible line between those objects and his spiritual energy. If the objects were too close to his body, before they reached their maximal speed, they had been pulled back by that invisible line.

6 times that of the speed of sound, namely, about 5,000 miles per hour. Zhang Tie had been satisfied by such a great flight ability very much. Even though this speed might be the maximal manned speed of divine dominator, Zhang Tie was also satisfied with it.

Zhang Tie was not greedy. He had not even seen a person who could break through the speed of sound after he promoted to an earth knight. He could already break through 6 times that of the speed of sound now, of course, he was very satisfied with it. Zhang

Tie didn't know how fast a shadow knight could fly; however, he was sure that even a shadow knight could not reach 6 times that of the speed of sound in the sky.

This speed would bring him a great advantage that could never be matched by commoners. It would even be a wholly new combat pattern for him, a combat mode that only belonged to a divine dominator. The difference between this advantage and knights were like that between powerful horse archers and common infantries. The striking ability and maneuver speed of this flight mode were overwhelming.

3 times that of the speed of sound was almost equal to 0.55 mile per second.

The linear distance between Lord Guangnan's Manor and Finance Minister's Mansion in Xuanyuan Hill was almost 130 miles. As for Zhang Tie, such a distance only took him less than 4 minutes by flying on the huge sword and overlooking the entire Xuanyuan Hill.

Under the control of Zhang Tie, the huge sword dove downwards like a spiritual living being silently and suspended only one stage's height above the floor outside the study near the lotus pond of the Finance Minister's Mansion. Zhang Tie then landed on the ground leisurely.

The door of the study still closed. Zhang Tie pushed in. Closely after that, he threw a glance at the golden folder on the table as usual.

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't think that he could see any hope in the golden folder anymore. He just accomplished today's task like completing a rite.

Zhang Tie walked over there and unfolded the golden folder. An extremely plain and elegant invitation card was put on the top. This invitation card was utterly different than those invitation cards which especially pursued luxury and level; additionally, now

that it could be put on the top, it indicated that it counted most in Han Zhengfang's heart.

Zhang Tie picked up that plain and elegant invitation card and opened it out of curiosity...

There were only two short lines inside the invitation card.

——Between 5 pm to 7 pm on the 15th day of this lunar month, I invite Brother Han to have a drink in Sincerity Garden.

——Meng Shidao.

At the sight of that name, Zhang Tie narrowed his pupils. After a few seconds, he couldn't stand bursting out laughing...

Chapter 1150: The 15th Day of This Lunar Month

On the 15th day of the lunar November of the 903rd year of Black Iron Calendar, although people living in Xuanyuan Hill didn't feel it was anything special, none of them could imagine that this day symbolized that Taixia Country was involved in the 3rd holy war between humans and demons in an all-round manner in the eyes of people dozens of years later.

Although the holy war had started so many years ago, the battle flames and smokes in subcontinents had not extended Taixia Country on the Eastern Continent. Besides the disappearance of Emperor Xuanyuan and the riots of the remnants of Heavens Reaching Church which were annoying, commoners' lives were not affected by the 3rd holy war during the past years.

The 15th day of lunar November was an unusual sunny day.

After getting up in the morning and having a bowl of decoction of medicinal ingredients, Uncle Zhong felt much better after so many days' recuperation; especially today, he felt like he was untroubled by the witch parasites anymore. Uncle Zhong felt pretty happy as he finally saw a bit of hope in curing the broken-gold witch parasites.

When Uncle Zhong got up, Old Zhou, the boatman on the Golden Water River also got up. After cleansing up, Old Zhou stood in the courtyard which was planted with some peach trees and looked up at the clean, blue sky as he told his wife with a smile who was preparing breakfast for him, "It's a good weather today. I guess more people would like to travel on the Golden Water River; if I'm fortunate, I could make another 2 gold coins!"

"Watch out your health. Come back earlier!" The woman prepared the breakfast rapidly in the kitchen as she said.

"As it's the Treasures Meeting lately, I could make more than that I made in a week previously, it's nothing to be a bit tired!"

"You have to watch out your safety. Liu Hui told me that one of your guests fought a woman on a gaily-painted pleasure-boat and made a great trouble on the Golden Water River..." The boatman's wife told him out of concern.

"You don't know that. Childe Cui and Miss Bai are dignitaries; especially Childe Cui. He's like a river god. When the huge waves approached us, Childe Cui just stood on the prow. When I realized that the boat might be capsized, a water flow rose up and cupped the boat like a pair of hands steadily. I carried some knights before; however, it was my first time to meet such a great knight. 3 months later, I will have our 2nd son and his uncle go to Youzhou Province..."

"Do you really believe in their words? The traveling expense between Youzhou Province and Xuanyuan Hill is high; additionally, they have to spend much time on the way..."

Old Zhou touched that gold coin which was marked with Zhang Tie's fingerprint in his pocket before saying, "This is a favorable fate, how could a man like Childe Cui play a joke with small figures like us? I think we could have a try. Our Zhou Clan might make our ancestors illustrious one day..."

After hearing the boatman's words, the woman in the kitchen became silent.

After having breakfast with the peach bloom spirit and dried plums that were prepared by his wife at home, the boatman, with full of aspiration towards a bright future, left for a wharf on the Golden Water River where he fastened his boat to the cleats on the dock...

...

When the boatman arrived at the wharf, a customized top black

Faerie-dragon limo was slowly driving out of the Finance Minister's Mansion in Xuanyuan Hill. A flock of sparrows on those peach trees outside the Finance Minister's Mansion were tweeting. Han Zhengfang was watching those jubilant sparrows on the tips of twigs on the roadside in the car with a glassy-eyed look.

Hearing the tweets, Han Zhengfang felt fretful unconsciously.

Of course, the Finance Minister who attended myriad affairs daily would not lose temper to those sparrows that could be seen everywhere daily outside his mansion. What he was fretful was that his 2nd son had been missing for many days. Additionally, his 2nd son's airboat was also missing, leaving no trace at all. Therefore, Han Zhengfang felt something bad out of his instinct.

'Did something bad happen to my 2nd son?' Han Zhengfang had considered about this possibility; however, given the comprehensive intelligence, Han Zhengfang found Xuanyuan Hill was as normal as usual. The top 4 armies were still following the prescribed orders. The top three chancellors didn't encounter any abnormal situations. Therefore, Han Zhengfang didn't believe that his son could encounter any accident. 'Who dares do harm to my son across Taixia Country? Additionally, my 2nd son is not a weak scholar, he has a great aptitude and has already promoted to an earth knight. Besides, he's protected by an earth knight, a black iron knight and so many bodyguards. As long as he shows his identity, he will face no obstacle wherever he is. How dare anyone find him trouble?'

'Is he having fun with a lot of women somewhere once again?'

'It's possible; it's probable.'

However, even though Han Zhengfang convinced himself that his 2nd son was meddling with women somewhere, he still felt gloomy.

After promoting to a knight, one's perceptions and aspirations would be exceptional. The higher level a knight was, the stronger

his sixth sense would be. Han Zhengfang felt that he might have ignored something and something was going to happen. However, he couldn't figure it out; therefore, he felt fretful unconsciously.

Being fretful, he didn't feel good these days. Therefore, the entire Finance Minister's Mansion in Xuanyuan Hill was repressed lately. All the officials and clerks in the Finance Minister's Mansion behaved meticulously in case of any mistake.

'After Yuantu comes back, I will have his subordinates carry remote-sensing communications devices for sure in case of such an annoying condition!'

The window of Faerie-dragon limo rose up quietly and blocked the vision from outside. Before the tweets disappeared, a whim occurred to Finance Minister's mind.

'Oh, the master of royal prince invited me for a drink in Sincerity Garden today.'

When Han Zhengfang thought about the old man on the back of the emperor's imperial city, he tried his best to recover his composure.

Without this old man on the back of the emperor's imperial city, the three top chancellors might not feel safe leaving Xuanyuan Hill for an inspection.

...

When Han Zhengfang went to the Finance Minister's Authority for dealing with public affairs, the master of Sincerity Garden in the emperor's imperial city was feeding carps leisurely on one side of the pond in his courtyard.

The master of the Sincerity Garden was Meng Shidao. Few people might have heard this name, because nobody had dared call his name directly for dozens of years. In Xuanyuan Hill, everybody called him Master of Royal Prince. In other places, the name of Meng Shidao sounded like an identity for the Gobbling Party

which was growing increasingly powerful. Meng Shidao was the leader of the Gobbling Party. The members of the Gobbling Party called their leader Daoshi.

Daoshi, the master of universal laws.

It was unimaginable that there was a place covering 66,600 square miles like an abandoned rural courtyard in the emperor's imperial city.

It was Sincerity Garden. There was no gardener, florist in the Sincerity Garden. There were only very few servants. Looking at it from outside, this garden was like an abandoned rural courtyard which lacked management. It was covered with weeds. There were only some wooden hedges around the garden. Some stray cats would drill into the garden through the gaps of the hedges and wallop in the weeds. However, all the people who were qualified to push open the hedge door and enter Sincerity Garden were influential figures in Xuanyuan Hill. Many dignitaries across Taixia Country were even glorious about having a chat with the master of Sincerity Garden.

The universal laws were in nature; the sincere minds were close to the universal laws.

When the master of Sincerity Garden told the royal prince about the source of Sincerity Garden, it caused a tide in Xuanyuan Hill. Someone meditated about it day after day; someone scrambled for it; someone was driven ecstatic.

At this moment, the master of Sincerity Garden was feeding the carps in the pond in a dedicated way.

After being dropped into the pond, the lifeless dough suddenly turned into vital white small fish, shrimps and insects swimming in the water in a split second like a magic, which could even dodge from the golden fish, making the shoal of carps boisterous.

With a sound of "Pah", a 30-cm longer black carp slapped the

water by its tail in order to chase after a small shrimp incarnated by a dough, wetting the master's long gown with sprays. Closely after that, the black carp jumped into the gaps between stones on the side of the pond and was fixed there. The carp could only struggle in vain as it waved its tail and made the master's clean cloth shoes and the lower hem of his long gown dirty with some mud.

The master stopped dropping dough into the water. Watching the black carp struggling in the riprap while its scales were being scraped one bit after another, the master of Sincerity Garden slightly frowned. He looked at the waterlogging and mud stains over his shoes and gown and the black carp which had lost its strength to struggle in the riprap as his face gradually turned gloomy...

At this moment, a huge stray cat suddenly charged out of the weeds on the side of the pond with sparkling eyes. It was attracted by the fishy smell and movements of the black carp. This huge stray cat was not afraid of people at all. It charged towards that riprap by leaps and bounds. Closely after that, it scratched the black carp for a few times, causing the black carp to struggle for a short while once again. The huge stray cat then bit the spine of the black carp before dragging it out of the riprap and darting towards the weeds nearby. As the carp was too huge, plus it was struggling, the huge stray cat couldn't grip it by teeth and dropped it onto the ground. Then, the huge stray cat scratched it for a few times once again before biting its tail and slowly drawing it into the weeds far away from the pond...

Chapter 1151: Return of Zhang Tie

At 4 pm, all the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect had arrived at the airport outside Xuanyuan Hill and were ready for coming back to Youzhou Province by airboat.

Lord Guangnan's Mansion dispatched some vehicles to transport all of them to the airport. Zhang Tie said that they would leave at 4 pm; therefore, nobody dared to be late.

All the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect came to Xuanyuan Hill empty-handed; however, many people left with sabers, swords, armors, rouge, medicaments, books, various bizarre objects as well specialties of subcontinents. All of them were jubilant. These days in Xuanyuan Hill were too cool for them. Zhang Tie gave them freedom and 1 million gold coins. Additionally, Zhang Tie requested them to spend the money in Xuanyuan Hill. What an understanding, generous and unique master! If not Bai Suxian was on one side, some female disciples of Zhang Tie would have kissed Zhang Tie's face forcefully.

Uncle Zhong came here to see off Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian and the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect.

"We've already replenished the airboat. Lord Guangnan knows that Miss likes dried almonds, pear bloom sugar, blooms brew, rose ointment in South Province since young; therefore, he had people brought some here. They arrived 2 days ago. I've already had them loaded in the airboat..."

Bai Suxian became stunned for a second as her face turned a bit complex, "My dad..."

Uncle Zhong let out a sigh, "Miss, I will not talk about the domestic affairs of Lord Guangnan's Mansion. Lord has been used to be dissolute. Although he made some mistakes, it's nothing serious. What counts most is that Lord might be the one who cares about Miss most in the world. Those barbarians who sexually

harassed Miss a few days ago had been killed by the killer assigned by Lord in Daizhou Province. Lord knows that Miss dislikes those dirty and smelly heads; therefore, he didn't have people carry them back. Additionally, Lord let me tell Miss to bring back the son-in-law for him when you're free..."

Bai Suxian blushed as she threw a glimpse at Zhang Tie stealthily. After finding that Zhang Tie was content, she let out a sigh before saying, "Uncle Zhong, watch out your health!"

Uncle Zhong replied with a big smile, "I'm fine. I feel much better lately. I suppressed the broken-golden witch parasites in my body for the first time. This morning, Childe Cui gave me another prescription. I think that my disease will be cured completely after a few more days. I have to appreciate Childe Cui for that..."

"We're of the same family, you're welcome!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

Both Uncle Zhong and Bai Suxian felt happy when they heard "We're of the same family" from Zhang Tie.

"Childe Cui. you'd better be vigilant about Gold and Power Law and Han Clan from today on. Although they wouldn't dare harm Miss, they could dare find you trouble. Lord said you could seek help from him directly if you meet dangers"

Uncle Zhong told Zhang Tie in a secret way. On the way towards the airport, Uncle Zhong silently passed a remote-sensing finger ring to Zhang Tie. According to Uncle Zhong, Zhang Tie could directly contact Bai Suxian's dad with this remote-sensing finger ring. Zhang Tie didn't refuse him.

After bidding a farewell to each other, Bai Suxian's and Uncle Zhong's eyes turned wet too. Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian got on the airboat in the end. After waving their hands towards Uncle Zhong, they closed the cabin of Iron-Dragon Airboat. As a result, they could not see Uncle Zhong anymore; vice versa. Iron-Dragon Airboat then slowly floated up and left the airport.

...

The Iron-Dragon Airboat soon arrived at Heavenlyqin Lake where it had passed by a few days ago.

Standing by the porthole, Zhang Tie watched the increasingly smaller Xuanyuan Hill which was rapidly moving backward as his eyes sparkled in a bizarre way.

Xuanyuan Hill was the most magnificent human city; however, Zhang Tie was only impressed by those grand and grotesque buildings and scenic spots. He didn't have too much resonance about Xuanyuan Hill. Xuanyuan Hill was neither strange nor familiar for him. That was all.

What a city could genuinely impress people was only people; instead of those cold or magnificent buildings. As nobody in Xuanyuan Hill could deeply impress Zhang Tie in his mind, Xuanyuan Hill was just Xuanyuan Hill. Zhang Tie might meet Blackhot City in dreams; however, he would never dream about Xuanyuan Hill.

Standing on Zhang Tie's side, Bai Suxian watched the sparkling Xuanyuan Hill under the sunlight, then Zhang Tie. Based on her acute insight, Bai Suxian felt that Zhang Tie was a bit special today since she met him in the morning.

"It's finally all over!" Zhang Tie muttered.

"What's all over?" Bai Suxian looked at Zhang Tie out of curiosity.

Zhang Tie smiled as he put his arm around Bai Suxian's tender and beautiful waist before saying, "I mean something should come to an end today. My identity as Cui Li should also come to an end too. Although it feels a bit fresh and stimulative by incarnating into another person by accident, if it's too long, it would be like putting on a play, I feel tired about it too. Whenever I cleansed up and looked into the mirror each morning, I would look at this fake

face; therefore, I almost forgot about my original look. From then on, there will be only Zhang Tie; instead of Cui Li. I will be myself!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian was too shocked to utter a word. Although Zhang Tie had told her that there would be such a day sooner or later, she had not imagined that it could come so fast. Previously, Bai Suxian thought that Zhang Tie would find an opportunity to expose his real identity to the public when they returned to Iron-Dragon Sect, she had not imagined that it was now.

"Now?" Bai Suxian asked Zhang Tie so as to confirm it.

"Hmm, right now!" Zhang Tie replied as his skeleton as a whole started to utter sounds. Closely after that, his figure started to change while hair started to grow out of his bald head. Only after a short while, Zhang Tie had recovered his original look——A juvenile at the age of 16 years old with black hair and black eyes who looked handsome like a juvenile in the neighborhood.

Watching the sunny juvenile in the mirror, Zhang Tie revealed a smile while the juvenile in the mirror responded with a smile too; Zhang Tie pulled a face while the juvenile in the mirror pulled his face too. The smile and grimace looked as same as before.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that he might be intense after recovering his original look; however, at this moment, he found that he was pretty frank and quiet inside; he even felt a bit relaxed. He didn't care about the series of responses caused by this change; neither did he care about once being Cui Li as it was just a process of growth. Whatever, it was also a tough process of growth for Cui Li to incarnate into Zhang Tie himself.

Cui Li's underwears and robe were all larger than that of Zhang Tie's. Therefore, they looked loose and improper. After taking off those clothes, Zhang Tie took a whole set of clothes that Huaiyuan Palace prepared for clan elders out of his portable space-

teleportation equipment and put them on from head to toe.

After putting on a long gown made of boa silk, a pair of caligas with gold soles and a full-moon dragon soul waistband, Zhang Tie turned into a handsome boy at once, a handsome boy who was already an earth knight and the master of a sect.

Bai Suxian kept watching Zhang Tie's original look on one side silently. Nobody knew what she was thinking about. Although Bai Suxian had watched Zhang Tie to change his look before, she felt more shocked this time. When she saw that tough man turning into a big boy and pulling his face in front of a mirror, Bai Suxian became stunned while blushing unconsciously. Her eyes contained an unspoken affection.

"Well, come on, help me fix my hair!" Zhang Tie turned around in front of the mirror as he waved his hand towards Bai Suxian. Zhang Tie's hair was about 30 cm in length which was pitch-dark and carried the healthy and young brilliance.

When Bai Suxian touched Zhang Tie's face and neck, she even became absent-minded. She stealthily glanced at Zhang Tie's look every now and then before blushing unconsciously.

"Are you worried about me? Why did you become absent-minded so many times?" Zhang Tie, sitting on the chair, sighed when he saw Bai Suxian's absent-minded look in the mirror. He then directly leaned against her two hard "softnesses".

Bai Suxian became amazed as she stopped fixing up Zhang Tie's hair and asked Zhang Tie, "What do you think I'm worried about?"

"I could only tell you that I'm as small and large as before. My original look was genuinely produced by Zhang Clan, not a copycat. You don't need to worry about me at all!" Zhang Tie replied with an obscene smile.

"Disgusting..." Bai Suxian beat Zhang Tie once when she realized what Zhang Tie referred to after 2 seconds. At the same time, her

face turned redder.

Zhang Tie made a joke. Bai Suxian felt that this man was still her favored kind; therefore, she let out a sigh at once as she found back the intimate feeling with Zhang Tie...

With the help of Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie's hair was soon fixed. Closely after that, Zhang Tie summoned all of his disciples.

...

Only after boarding the airboat for half an hour, all the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect had gathered in a specific place at Zhang Tie's order.

When Liu Xing entered that familiar room, followed by his junior fellow and sister apprentices, they saw a strange young man sitting on their master's chair...except for Zhu Dabiao.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Zhu Dabiao's head buzzed as he felt sparkles flying before his eyes...he became speechless...

Chapter 1152: Frank Acceptance

Zhu Dabiao rubbed his eyes by fingers in order to confirm that he didn't have an illusion. The one sitting on the golden chair was such familiar. Zhu Dabiao just felt his head buzzing as he faintly opened his mouth and didn't know what to say...

Few of Zhang Tie's disciples had noticed Zhu Dabiao's expression. When those disciples entered the room and saw a strange young man sitting in the position of their master while Bai Suxian was standing silently on one side of that young man, the atmosphere froze at once. Everybody just gazed at Zhang Tie and his chair; someone had already looked furious.

Standing in the front of all the other disciples, Liu Xing knew that all the others were waiting for him to make a response to this situation although he didn't look back.

"Uncle Master Bai, our master called us here. We wonder where's our master?" Liu Xing threw a calm glance at Zhang Tie before asking Bai Suxian. However, before Bai Suxian replied, Liu Xing had slowed his manner of speaking and told Zhang Tie, "Little brother, you're sitting on our master's chair. You could not sit there casually. If you're the customer of our master and Uncle Master Bai, you can sit here!". Liu Xing pointed at those rows of seats on one side of the room.

Bai Suxian didn't respond to Liu Xing's words; instead, she just threw a glance at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile. Given his disciples' facial expressions and the suddenly freezing atmosphere in the room, Zhang Tie had known that these disciples had accepted him from inside; especially Liu Xing, who treated Bai Suxian and Zhang Tie himself in a humble way. Therefore, Zhang Tie appreciated Liu Xing pretty much. What Zhang Tie felt pretty hilarious was Zhu Dabiao's 'exaggerating' expression as if he had seen a ghost. Zhang Tie's two

nephews Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze also looked very excited. When his two nephews saw him last time, they were only 7-8 years old. At that time, they could already remember his look. The sudden appearance of Zhang Tie shocked them too much. Zhang Chengze wanted to call him uncle; however, Zhang Chengxu stopped him by pulling his arm while throwing a glance at him. Zhang Chengze hurriedly stopped. Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze both watched Zhang Tie with amazing and suspicious looks...

"Don't do that. Wait a minute. I was told that people could casually change their look using the disguising skill. We still don't know whether this man is the uncle or not!"

Zhang Chengze whispered to Zhang Chengxu; however, no matter how low the voice was, it could not escape from Zhang Tie's ears.

"Liu Xing, can't you recognize me?" Zhang Tie watched Liu Xing as he said in Cui Li's voice.

After hearing Zhang Tie's voice, Liu Xing and the other disciples behind him became restless at once. Liu Xing widely opened his eyes and looked straight into Zhang Tie's eyes; closely after that, he quivered all over.

This voice sounded too familiar. Even the qi in the voice was as same as that of Cui Li. More than that, even Zhang Tie's sitting position and expression looked familiar...

"Uncle Master Bai, what...what happened?" Liu Xing asked Bai Suxian.

"He's indeed your master!" Bai Suxian said as she threw a glance at Liu Xing and the other disciples. As she didn't know how to explain it to these disciples, she just poked Zhang Tie's back by finger as she said in a secret way, "Just clarify it to them!"

On such an occasion, how could his disciples believe him only by

words? Thankfully, Zhang Tie had long predicted about this situation and worked out a method. If these people were none of his business, it might take him some time to let these people believe that he was Cui Li. However, now that they were his disciples, it would be much simpler for him to prove his identity.

Sitting on the golden chair, Zhang Tie flicked a curl of golden battle qi of spiritual energy towards his disciples. Before reaching his 121 disciples, it slightly vibrated and turned into 121 golden pedals before lurking into his disciples' foreheads. At the same time, his disciples felt dazzled as if something entered their foreheads. Closely after that, the "mark of preach" that Fire Dragon Hermit pointed at their foreheads using gilding dragon-blood cinnabar rocked and gave out brilliant golden light. Everyone then saw sparkling golden light in front of them.

Hua people valued master's inheritance pretty much. In Taixia's inheritance ceremony between master and disciples, putting in dragons with precious gilding dragon-blood cinnabar by a golden brush was an unnecessary step. When Zhao Yuan enrolled Zhang Tie as a disciple, the process was pretty simple; however, in official occasions, this step was very important. In inheritance ceremony, the master would leave a "mark of preach" in his disciples' mind sea by mixing his spiritual energy and battle qi with precious gilding dragon-blood cinnabar and pointing it onto the forehead of his disciples. This "mark of preach" was unique for disciples which meant that their blood and flesh originated from their parents and forebears while their ranks of cultivation benefited by their master.

The disciples would appreciate their master so much like how they appreciated their parents for giving birth to them. After the step of putting in dragons with gilding dragon-blood cinnabar, the relationship between master and disciples would be confirmed.

The one who could activate the "mark of preach" was the very one who once put the "mark of preach" into their mind sea. It was

even more effective than a DNA test. Before the Catastrophe, even a DNA could be cloned; however, only one person could put in the "mark of preach" and activate it.

After being shocked, Liu Xing and the other disciples confirmed Zhang Tie's identity at once. It was Cui Li, Fire Dragon Hermit, also their master. Starting from Liu Xing, all the other disciples hurriedly knelt down, including Zhu Dabiao. No matter whether he knew this person sitting in front of him previously, now that this young man was his master, he had to show respect to him. The identity of a grandson of provincial governor didn't work here in Iron-Dragon Sect.

"Master, sorry for being rude..."

It was regarded as a big crime if the disciples didn't bow towards their master.

"Stand up. You're innocent as you didn't know that. What happened today was not your fault either!" Zhang Tie said in Cui Li's slightly hoarse and mature voice. Zhang Tie's real voice sounded like that of a teenager which was even more tender than most of the disciples at present.

After confirming their master's identity, nobody felt this sound was strange anymore.

Liu Xing and all the other disciples hurriedly stood up.

"Master, have you disguised?" Liu Xing asked Zhang Tie bravely on behalf of his junior fellow and sister apprentices which was also what all the others wanted to know most.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "I've not disguised. This is actually my original look. Cui Li is my incarnation. Many among you might have heard my real name. I'm Zhang Tie, an elder of Huaiyuan Palace in Youzhou Province. I was screwed due to the tragedy in Fuhai City and was wanted by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country. When I was screwed and wanted, I had to hide my

identity and look and escape everywhere. Now the Supreme Court of Taixia Country has already canceled off my order for arrest..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's original identity, more people among his disciples became as dumbfounded as Zhu Dabiao.

'My master Cui Li is Zhang Tie? The No. 1 black iron knight in Taixia Country? The black iron knight who wrote the article The Beloved Ones ? The main character of the Legend of Black Iron Hero? The Lion of Youzhou Province who once became especially outstanding in Youzhou City? The gentleman who was well-known across Taixia Country yet was screwed?'

'What is more important, he's so young and handsome.' Some female disciples had already cupped their hands at their hearts as they felt so happy that they almost passed out.

The name Zhang Tie was much well-known than Cui Li even though when he was just a black iron knight.

Although Cui Li was an earth knight, he had just been to Xuanyuan Hill and was strange to many people; however, the name Zhang Tie had been well-known in the knight's world. Zhang Tie's experiences could be legends of legends. He was really as brilliant as a superstar.

All of the disciples became stunned. Although the 7 black-armor fighters were usually calm, they were also shocked too much by Zhang Tie's words as they were going to fall down like stepping onto cotton or in the clouds.

'My master is Zhang Tie? My master is Zhang Tie?'

"Uncle, nice to see your original look..." Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze had already rushed out of the crowd and kowtowed loudly several times in front of Zhang Tie before the others recovered their composure. When the two brothers raised their heads, their foreheads were already red while they burst out into tears...

When they were at home, many people at home told them that their uncle was wronged. Their father Zhang Yang also told them that their uncle was the pillar of the Zhang family. The two boys grew up hearing the stories and legends about Zhang Tie told by their grandparents. Therefore, they had long treated Zhang Tie as their life idol and hero. The two brothers had not imagined that they could meet Zhang Tie at this moment. Being extremely thrilled, they didn't even know what to say.

After seeing what Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze did, the other two disciples from Huaiyuan Palace responded to it too, one male, one female. Closely after that, they walked out of the crowd and kowtowed loudly three times in front of Zhang Tie.

"Elder Mushen, Zhang Yueshan...Zhang Yawei are glad to see you recover your look..."

Zhang Tie was the hero of the Zhang family and Huaiyuan Palace. None of the disciples in Huaiyuan Palace would deny it...

...

Chapter 1153: Making Arrangements

After seeing the 4 people of Zhang family and Huaiyuan Palace walking out of the crowd and kowtowing in front of Zhang Tie, some smart ones finally understood why Zhang Clan enjoyed such a privilege in the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect. Zhang Clan was the only family that received two golden invitation cards and had 4 juniors being enrolled as the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect. In the beginning, they all thought that Fire Dragon Hermit especially favored the branch of Huaiyuan Palace in Jinwu City. Now they knew that they were of the same family. Of course, Fire Dragon Hermit would treat them better. That might also be the reason that Fire Dragon Hermit selected his bounty land in Youzhou Province.

Zhang Tie's disciples absolutely confirmed Zhang Tie's identity. Before the "amazing" feeling faded away, they had become extremely excited when they remembered so many legends and stories about Zhang Tie.

The Supreme Court had already canceled off Zhang Tie's order for arrest while the truth of the tragedy in Fuhai City was gradually exposed. In this situation, Zhang Tie's halos became more brilliant. It was really their great honor to have such a master.

However, their master looked too young. Given his look, he was definitely the type of youngest fellow apprentice among his disciples. Becoming an earth knight at such a young age, he was definitely a top talent among the top 7 sects in Taixia Country, not to mention the other human countries. With such a great master, they would definitely have a bright future.

"Stand up!" Zhan Tie told his two nephews and two disciples from Huaiyuan Palace genially. The four people then picked themselves up in a restrained way. Closely after that, Zhang Tie's voice turned solemn, "Later on, we're just master and disciples in

Iron-Dragon Sect as usual. Two of you are my nephews, the other two are clan disciples of Huaiyuan Palace. You share the same blood and forebears with me. However, I have to treat you as same as all the disciples; sometimes, I will even treat you stricter. In front of the other disciples, you're forbidden to seek for any special treatment or become arrogant and ruin the friendship between disciples; otherwise, if I find that, I will punish you severely and drive you out of the sect. Am I clear?"

"Clear!" The 4 juniors answered in unison.

After becoming a master for so long, Zhang Tie had been adapted to this role. As the master of Iron-Dragon Sect, he was always dominating; as an earth knight, he was always commanding. Each of his movement was shocking. With these words, Zhang Tie wanted to warn Zhang Chengxu, Zhang Chengze, Zhang Yueshan and Zhang Yawei; meanwhile, he wanted to imply the other disciples to not treat the 4 people specially by flattering them in the public or bullying them secretly because of jealousy. Anyone who dared play any trick would be labeled as ruining the friendship between disciples. The moment Zhang Tie said it, all the others had understood it, including Zhu Dabiao.

Although he was once Zhang Tie's friend, he knew that he was just Zhang Tie's disciple in Iron-Dragon Sect. Previously when Zhang Tie was a black iron knight, Zhu Dabiao might feel a bit uncomfortable with this master; however, Zhang Tie was already an earth knight, who was qualified to be his master now. If not that Zhu Dabiao came from the Yanzhou Provincial Governor's Clan, he would be not qualified to be Zhang Tie's disciple at all. How could one become the disciple of an earth knight so easily? In Taixia Country, the more talented ones could be masters regardless of age. If Zhu elders or his father knew that he dared neglect Zhang Tie based on the former friendship between him and Zhang Tie, they would immediately rush in Iron-Dragon Sect to break his leg before Zhang Tie punished him.

A beggar would envy another beggar who was luckier than him one day; a LV 9 fighter would envy a LV 10 fighter who was more powerful than him. Everybody could be jealous about the others who were better than them in one aspect; however, if one person was much better than another one in one aspect that the latter couldn't even dream about catching up with the former, the latter would not envy the former one anymore. Like that a beggar would not envy a king who lived better than him, a LV 9 fighter would not envy an earth knight who was much more commanding than him although he might hope that he could also be a knight one day.

Watching the familiar, young yet secret, commanding face on the golden chair, Zhu Dabiao respected Zhang Tie sincerely; neither did he envy Zhang Tie. He just sighed with emotions that there were so many wonders in this world. This young man who saved him out of the shadow demon's dungeon became his master. This might be pre-destined.

Zhang Tie slightly raised his arm while Zhang Chengxu, Zhang Chengze, Zhang Yueshan and Zhang Yawei from Huaiyuan Palace who were related to him by blood immediately moved back into the crowd by lowering their bodies. At the same time, Zhang Chengxu and Zhang Chengze silently received the hand towels from two senior sister apprentices on their sides and wiped out their tears by them. Although they felt complex, they both guessed that their father Zhang Yang must have known that Fire Dragon Hermit was their uncle. Therefore, their father especially brought them to the opening ceremony of Iron-Dragon Sect.

Zhang Tie looked around his disciples. When he moved his eyes onto Zhu Dabiao, Zhu Dabiao also looked up at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile. Zhu Dabiao hurriedly lowered his head out of respect.

"Dabiao!" Zhang Tie called genially.

Zhu Dabiao's fat belly quivered all over at once as he hurriedly

walked out of the crowd and bowed towards Zhang Tie like what a disciple should do in front of his master, "I'm here!"

"Taixia Country is going to experience a great chaos. In the future, if you don't have a great battle strength, how could you protect yourself when in danger? You're born to be alive. However, in the road of cultivation, no pain, no gain. You could not be indolent in cultivation. If you have questions, you could ask your senior brothers and sisters. Don't lag behind!" Zhang Tie said genially.

Zhu Dabiao was overwhelmed by the unexpected favor. Now that Zhang Tie talked to Zhu Dabiao independently although in the tone of his master, it indicated that Zhang Tie had not forgotten about the friendship between them. However, in this situation, given the positions in the sect, their friendship became a master's sincere care about his disciple.

Zhang Tie told Zhu Dabiao about similar words before. However, when Zhu Dabiao heard that at that time, he burst out into laughter. On the same evening, he even invited Zhang Tie to play women in brothels such as Peony Pavilion. At that time, he just treated Zhang Tie's words as a sincere suggestion. However, after a few years, when he heard similar words on such an occasion, Zhu Dabiao was deeply moved as his eyes turned red. Zhang Tie was both his good master and bosom friend. 'If not care about you sincerely, who would talk about it to you?' Zhu Dabiao was not an idiot. Of course, he could identify whether Zhang Tie's words were sincere or not. "I see, master, I will bear your words deep in mind and never lose your face!"

"I don't care about my face. Even if I lost my face, I would still not lose a hair!" Zhang Tie sighed with emotion, "After being wanted by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country as a scapegoat and being blamed and hated by almost everyone across Taixia Country, ordinary reputation damage couldn't touch my heart at all. As long as you could survive dangers in the future, I will be reassured.

Sometimes, one is alive and could give hope to one's family and friends count most!"

"Yes, I see, master!"

When Zhu Dabiao moved backward, he could feel a special "energy" from his back. Needless to say, it was from his male cousins, one of the Zhu Clan being enrolled by Zhang Tie. Although being male cousins, they didn't get along well with each other since young.

Zhu Dabiao just killed his time; by contrast, his male cousin was ambitious to be the pillar of Zhu Clan since young. One was flying in the sky, the other was climbing on the ground. They were not on the same channel at all. Actually, his male cousin disliked Zhu Dabiao as he always felt that Zhu Dabiao wasted one precious opportunity of Zhu Clan.

Even though fellow apprentices of a sect would compete with each other. On this occasion, undoubtedly, those being named by Zhang Tie were especially taken care of by their master himself. Even though Zhu Dabiao was average and even hindered the other disciples, given Zhang Tie's special care about him at this present, Zhu Dabiao immediately became special among the 121 disciples.

Therefore, his male cousin was amazed and jealous of him. By contrast, Zhu Dabiao felt like having a cool drink of a huge bowl of iced plum soup in the hottest days of a year.

"Liu Xing!"

"I'm here, master!"

The moment Zhang Tie called Liu Xing, Liu Xing walked out of the crowd at once.

"In the next a few days, you need to supervise your junior fellow and sister apprentices to cultivate hardly. When I'm not on the airboat, everything will be hosted by your Uncle Master Bai!"

"Yes, master!"

"Alright, take them off!"

Zhang Tie wove his hands while all the disciples left the room orderly. During the minutes in the room, they were shocked so much that they could not recover their composure for quite a long while.

After all the disciples left, Bai Suxian who had been standing on Zhang Tie's side immediately pouted her mouth as she told Zhang Tie in a jealous way, "Have you noticed how your female disciples look at you?"

With a tender and enchanting exclamation, Zhang Tie immediately embraced Bai Suxian with his arms and had her lie on his legs. A 30 seconds deep kiss made Bai Suxian soft all over. With face blushing like red clouds at sunrise and sunset, Bai Suxian's eyes shimmered like flowing waves.

"Stop having a bee in your mind. The airboat will fly towards Zhongzhou City. If I don't come back, just wait for me in Zhongzhou City for a few days!"

"What are you going to do there?" Bai Suxian put her arms around Zhang Tie's neck as she slightly bit Zhang Tie's ear and exhaled as fragrant as an orchid. It seemed that Bai Suxian had almost become blood-boiled.

"I have to complete something!"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at the wall clock and found that it was almost 5 pm...

Chapter 1154: Silent Battle Flames

"Have Cui Li and Bai Suxian left Xuanyuan Hill?"

Han Yuanhong asked a subordinate when his eyebrows raised in the Treasures Complex of Gold and Power Market.

Noticing the master's expression, the one replied meticulously, "Yes, half an hour ago, Bai Suxian, Cui Li and the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect had already boarded their airboat at the airport in the north of Xuanyuan Hill. Closely after that, the airboat left Xuanyuan Hill for the north..."

"Do you know where they are heading for?"

After being a bit awkward, the one replied, "Hmm...I've not received the latest intelligence yet. Master, do you want to send a decree and have all the strength of Gold and Power Law keep a close eye on that airboat?"

The master's decree reflected the power and influence of masters in Gold and Power Law. After a master sent the decree, all the token owners, mountain owners, general directors and directors of Gold and Power Law across Taixia Country and abroad would coordinate with each other so as to meet the requirements and tasks in the master's decree. In Gold and Power Law, the master's decree was already a senior mobilization order.

In a federal organization like Gold and Power Law, the master's decree was not limitless. Master was neither major master nor Emperor Xuanyuan. One master could only send a few master's decrees just like the tokens in his hand. The more they were used, the less there would be. After using up all the master's decrees, the master had to exchange for it with his donation points in Gold and Power Law. The donation points in Gold and Power Law could not be made that easily.

After a short consideration, Han Yuanhong shook his head as he

said, "Cui Li is not stupid. He knows that he could not defeat me in Xuanyuan Hill; therefore, he could only escape far away. Whatever, he has to return to Iron-Dragon Sect. We have enough time to deal with him!"

There was another reason that Han Yuanhong didn't mention. Just now, the general steward of Lord Guangnan's manor in Xuanyuan Hill came to the Treasures Complex in Gold and Power Market and bought some vials of medicaments. Although that general steward didn't meet Han Yuanhong or talk with him, Han Yuanhong was clear that the general steward was here on behalf of Lord Guangnan's manor in Xuanyuan Hill to not want his dad to offend Lord Guangnan openly. Therefore, he just ignored this thing for the time being.

Not until now did Han Yuanhong feel that Cui Li, as an earth knight, could pose any threat to him.

After waving his arm to let the subordinate leave here, Han Yuanhong looked outside the window and found it was already about 5 pm. He thought, 'My father should have already set for the Sincerity Garden. Of course, the master of the royal prince doesn't invite my father only for a drink. In Xuanyuan Hill, everybody knows that the hedge around Sincerity Garden was the shortest. Very few people could enter it. The Emperor Xuanyuan is still missing; the royal prince acts as regent; the three top chancellors make a tour inspection far away from Xuanyuan Hill. Of course, my father, as one of the 9 ministers will be relied heavily on by the royal prince and the master of the royal prince. According to the current situation, my father could reach a higher position in the imperial court in the future. By then...' Han Yuanhong fleered.

...

Most of the people would have supper between 5 pm and 7 pm. Therefore, the master of Sincerity Garden invited Han Zhengfang to have a drink during this period.

If Han Zhengfang just paid a visit to his ordinary friend, as long as he could arrive there during this period, he would not be regarded as discourteous; however, at the invitation of the master of the royal prince, Han Zhengfang dared not be late at all; neither would he lower his own position. Therefore, he arrived at the gate of Sincerity Garden by his Faerie-dragon limo at 5:15 pm.

When Han Zhengfang got off, a humpbacked old servant, who had been waiting for him at the gate, pushed open the hedge door and invited Han Zhengfang in.

"Thanks..." Han Zhengfang said like a gentleman.

Trees, flowers, grasses and stones scattered in the garden disorderly. Stray cats were running back and forth. Even the path that led to the inside of the garden was unevenly paved with stones. Besides, there were pits here and there, which were filled with rainwater a few days ago.

"Watch out, these ants are carrying food for tiding over winter. Don't step on them!" The humpbacked old servant reminded Han Zhengfang about the cluster of ants before Han Zhengfang's foot as if he didn't know about the identity of Han Zhengfang.

Han Zhengfang lowered his head as he saw an army of ants carrying two fingernail-sized bloody items in the gap of two stones. They looked like gills; however, as they were covered with dust, Han Zhengfang was not sure what they exactly were.

The finance minister raised his foot and strode over those ants meticulously.

In the eyes of outsiders, everything in Sincerity Garden looked disordered like a wasteland; however, in the eyes of Han Zhengfang, everything in this garden had reached the supreme realm like great arts concealing itself. Everything in the garden contained a Buddhist mood including the weeds, woods, a lonely flower among weeds, a piece of broken stone on one side of the hedge and a small water pit on the path. The essence of the great

laws enlightened by the master of this garden was buried in this extremely unpretentious garden. Without reaching a realm, nobody could discover the specialty of this garden. Those who could figure out the specialty of this garden understood that this was the most valuable garden across Taixia Country; even the imperial garden in the imperial palace could not match this one. Even 100 courtyards of dignitaries couldn't match a cluster of weeds in this garden. If a knight cultivated in this garden, his cultivation speed and insight might improve unconsciously.

The universal laws lay in nature; the sincerest heart was close to the universal laws. It was not just a lip service. Without such an immortal means being resonated to the universal laws, how could Meng Shidao become outstanding among billions of people in Taixia Country as the master of the royal prince and the leader of the Gobbling Party?

...

When Han Zhengfang entered the Sincerity Garden, some sparrows which were tweeting on a roadside tree outside Sincerity Garden flew away as they frolicked with each other.

Han Zhengfang sensed that those sparrows flew off at such a coincidental moment. As there were so many secret knowledge in Taixia Country, it was hard to prevent them. Additionally, his 2nd son was still missing which made Han Zhengfang fretful unconsciously. Therefore, when Han Zhengfang entered the garden, he targeted on those sparrows with his knight's consciousness and wanted to check their destination.

Those sparrows fell on the eaves of an attic over 200 m away as they capered and tweeted over there.

Han Zhengfang became reassured at once as he mocked himself and shook his head slightly, 'I'm oversuspicious. It's just some birds; nothing to worry about.'

The master of Sincerity Garden was waiting for Han Zhengfang

under an old walnut tree beside the pond with a stony table and two stony benches. There were a bottle of spirit and some dishes on the stony table.

...

Han Zhengfang didn't care about those trivial sparrows any more. However, two more sparrows were paying attention to those sparrows who flew over there from the gate of Sincerity Garden over 500 m away from Sincerity Garden.

Although those sparrows' dance and frolic on the eaves looked meaningless in Han Zhengfang's eyes, it was meaningful in the eyes of the two sparrows in the far.

The two sparrows over 500 m immediately flew off the treetop and flew around that huge tree where they once rested on. At the sight of this information, two swirling doves miles away immediately turned around and flew towards the north of Xuanyuan Hill. After they flew less than 100 m away, the bizarre arcs that they drew in the sky were caught by some more doves in the distance...

The information chain composed of doves and sparrows soon reached dozens of miles away.

Sparrows could only fly about 20 miles per hour and had a poor endurance. Doves couldn't fly fast either. If Zhang Tie only depended on some doves or sparrows to pass the information in Xuanyuan Hill, when he received the information outside Xuanyuan Hill, it would be too late. However, doves and sparrows existed everywhere in Xuanyuan Hill. They were not eye-catching at all. What counted most, birds had very good vision. As long as there were enough doves and sparrows, they would be able to form a complete information chain and a specific monitoring network in Xuanyuan Hill.

Even sage-level knights could do nothing to such an information chain.

This was how the Great Wilderness Sutra made people scared and greedy. Such a realm of controlling animals was already unpredictable.

...

7 minutes later, before Han Zhengfang warmed up his seat, a white dove had flown over the shimmering Heavenlyqin Lake and rested onto Zhang Tie's shoulder after flying around him for a short while. Closely after that, the dove cooed as it rubbed its furry head against Zhang Tie's face.

Zhang Tie stretched out his hand and fed this dove with a small handful of swollen, crystal wheat which had been soaked in water.

This dove brought Zhang Tie a message what Zhang Tie was waiting for, namely, Han Zhengfang had already entered Sincerity Garden!

Given the passing time of the message, Zhang Tie knew that Han Zhengfang had just entered Sincerity Garden for less than 10 minutes.

Zhang Tie sneered. When the dove ate up the small handful of wheat and flew off his shoulder, Zhang Tie made a bizarre hand gesture. Closely after that, the All-spirits Pagoda in his mind sea quivered all over while two great wilderness seals flew out of Zhang Tie's hand.

At this moment, the sun glow had already tinged the entire Xuanyuan Hill in the far with golden red...

The mysterious strength of the great wilderness seals immediately spread across thousands of square miles...

Numerous wild swans resting nearby the wetland of Heavenlyqin Lake looked up at the sky at the same time as a dominant strength was summoning them...

Chapter 1155: The Major Event was Coming

The east of Heavenlyqin Lake was a wetland with plenty of water and lush grass that covered over 600 square miles. Too many birds were resting here; especially wild swans.

Under the golden light of setting sun, Heavenlyqin Lake was shimmering while some deluxe cruisers were parking on the lake nearby the wetland.

Before each sunset, the 600 miles' reed catkins, high grasses and flying nightingales would become a scenic spot nearby Xuanyuan Hill.

On the deck of a 100 m-longer white cruiser, those knights who had a conflict with Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian on the Golden Water River that day were appreciating the lakescape and the wild swans on the lake and in the sky pleasantly.

Yue Peng who was severely wounded by Zhang Tie didn't come here. Evidently, the female knight who once stayed with Fang Xinyi had already become a pair of lovers with the other male knight.

"Brother Chuzhi, when did you get junior sister apprentice Yuling? How fast you are! Given such a fast speed, brother Chuzhi must have got hang of a secret method. Why not share it with brother Jiguang and me? Look, brother Jiguang and I are still single!"

"Chuzhi" and "Yuling" were that pair of "wild mandarin ducks" that Zhang Tie saw in the reeds on that evening a few days ago. When they saw the two people fall in love with each other so fast, the others couldn't stand making a joke to spice up the atmosphere. Although the male knight made a joke orally, he was looking at Fang Xinyi as if he was implying something.

As long as she didn't see Bai Suxian, Fang Xinyi was indeed like a

charming, elegant fairy. At this moment, she just watched the dancing wild swans on the lake with a faint smile. Her beautiful facial contour, slim and snow-white neck and swaying hair were fatal to the other two male knights. Both of them wanted to pursue her.

"Hahaha, of course, there's a secret method; however, only the sky, the earth, I and Yuling know it. If I told you about that, it would not work anymore!" The male knight called Chizhi replied in a dissolute way. The other two knights didn't know what the so-called secret method referred to; however, Yuling threw a glare at Chuzhi bashfully.

Both Yuling and Chuzhi understood the so-called secret method.

"Ahh, what if Yue Peng was here? Younger brother Yue Peng is most poetic and talented. Facing such a nice lakescape, he could definitely make a good poem!"

"Younger brother Yue Peng might need a few more days' rehabilitation. That day, I felt that Cui Li was too vicious; however, on the second day, I was told that Cui Li had already shown his mercy. You might have already heard about it. At Qian Gate of Gold and Power Market, Cui Li kicked a foreign knight to death, who was even a prince of a major country on a subcontinent. Because of this event, Cui Li almost had a fight with Han Yuanhong, the master of Gold and Power Market. Fire Dragon Hermit was not afraid even in Xuanyuan Hill; he's indeed vicious and powerful!" A knight sighed with emotion while shaking his head.

"Don't mention about these unhappy things. Based on our talents, as long as we try our best to cultivate, we will definitely promote to earth knights one day. No need to admire him. Although Fire Dragon Hermit is powerful, a lot of people in our sect are more powerful than him. The powerful ones in Taixia country are as countless as the stars over the sky! Additionally, Gold and Power Law is just so-so. Even some barbarians from

subcontinents could attend such a Treasures Meeting. The piece of God's Star has already been bought before we saw it. All the other treasures are average. There're only a few secret items; all of them have been opened. Nothing to be curious about. It could never match our Treasures Meeting in Taiyi City."

"Hahaha, fine, we will not talk about these unhappy things. Although Master Cai is not here, the waves sound and crane tweets here are also natural music. Oh, Xinyi, what are you looking at?"

After realizing that the subject was shifted to her, Fang Xinyi didn't behave distantly anymore; instead, she turned around as she parted her hair and revealed a faint smile. All of a sudden, all the others moved their eyes onto her, "When I looked at these wild swans, I couldn't help thinking about one thing. It's said that wild swans are most soulful. As long as two wild swans fall in love with each other, they would not depart from each other until death. If one dies, the other will be extremely anguished and even commit suicide for love. If everyone could be as soulful as wild swans, all the lovers in this world would have a perfect soul destination!"

"After hearing Xinyi's words, I feel that I should learn from wild swans!" The knight called Chuzhi watched Yuling as he said with a playful smile. Whether he wanted to learn something from wild swans or treat sky as the quilt and the earth as the bed. However, only the female knight called Yuling could sense his meaning.

Yuling threw a glare at Chuzhi as she turned around and looked at Fang Xinyi, "Xinyi, what's your criteria about a good man?"

The other two male knights pricked up their ears at once.

Fang Xinyi smiled as she recited some lines, "Graze black cattle in the morning, return in the evening with wildflowers; insert wildflowers onto your gray hair and enjoy the colorful sunglow together with you!"

After hearing Fang Xinyi's reply, all the other knights' hearts pounded as it was really out of their imagination that Fang Xinyi

could favor such a legendary figure. That man's poem the Beloved Ones had fascinated so many beauties, but...

Before the others said anything, the lakescape became abnormal...

In the horizon, all the wild swans on the lake stretched out their necks and tweeted at the same time, which sounded like the siren of a million ton-level ship, causing the eardrums of travelers on the cruisers to quiver.

Closely after that, all the wild swans suddenly flapped their wings and slid over the lake before lying off. Large flocks of wild swans flew off at the same time in the distance along the 600 miles' reed catkins.

At least tens of thousands of wild swans rested here. As a result, the scenery that tens of thousands of wild swans flew off at the same time was like white clouds, leaving travelers on the cruisers dumbfounded. In the sunglow, so many wild swans flew towards the same direction. In less than 1 minute, no wild swan could be seen over the lake anymore.

Although being far away from the bank, all the knights had good sight. They saw large flocks of wild swans flying off the water too.

"What's happening? Why all the wild swans are flying away? Theoretically, the wild swans should have a rest as the sun is setting. Is there an earthquake? It's said that birds would make abnormal responses when an earthquake is coming." A knight on the cruiser muttered.

"It shouldn't be an earthquake. Otherwise, the other birds should also have sensed it; however, look, all the other birds over this wetland are still resting there!"

"Yup, it's really strange..."

Fang Xinyi faintly frowned her beautiful eyebrows as she said, "Let's go take a look...". Soon after her words, Fang Xinyi had

flown off the cruiser. All the other knights also flew off after exchanging a glance with each other out of great curiosity.

At the same time, all the wild swans in another two lakes nearby Xuanyuan Hill flew off towards Xuanyuan Hill. The travelers on the cruisers in the three lakes exclaimed about such a wonderful scenery.

Of course, such an abnormal phenomenon was eye-catching. After flying for a short while, Fang Xinyi and her partners had already seen some more knights chasing after the wild swans. They were shocked so much as they wondered why so many wild swans suddenly flew off at the same time.

Wild swans flew very fast; the three lakes and the wetlands where wild swans rested were also close to Xuanyuan Hill. Therefore, those wild swans soon arrived at Xuanyuan Hill.

When they arrived at Xuanyuan Hill, Fang Xinyi and her partners were really startled by what they saw. So many wild swans were gathering here from all directions in an order.

Over 10,000 people would look endless. There were at least 100,000 wild swans in the sky which looked like moving clouds in the sky.

After sensing the no-fly zone above Xuanyuan Hill, all the knights that followed wild swans here could only suspend outside the no-fly zone as they watched the wild swans entering the air territory of Xuanyuan Hill smoothly.

Wild swans could fly fast and reach above 6,000 m high. Therefore, people on the ground could easily see all the wild swans as long as they looked up.

The abnormal phenomenon in the sky attracted the attention of everyone on the ground of Xuanyuan Hill. Watching the army of wild swans flying over, the ground of Xuanyuan Hill started to become disordered.

...

All the drivers on the roads stretched out their necks and watched those wild swans flying across in front of them as they widely opened their mouths. Some cars even collided with the vehicles on their sides, causing a traffic jam at once.

...

A team of Hua fighters at the border of Xuanyuan Hill watched the abnormal phenomenon for quite a while before reporting it to their superior. When a knight walked out of barracks and became stunned by what he saw for a few seconds, he also started to swear loudly.

"F*ck, this dad is a common knight, not a sage-level knight. Look at these birds. What do you want me to do? Fly in the sky and shoot them off or wail the air raid siren? Such an abnormal phenomenon might happen once in a few years. Just wait for a while!"

The abnormal phenomenon mentioned by this knight referred to that when Zhang Tie promoted to a black iron knight a few years ago. However, that knight didn't know that this time was utterly different than that time, although it was aroused by the same person.

...

Under the gaze of so many people on the ground of Xuanyuan Hill, over 100,000 wild swans gradually divided into 12 huge flocks like 12 clouds in the sky. When the onlookers were extremely startled, the 12 clouds started to change their shapes slowly.

Due to constant traffic accidents, some roads had been jammed. Those drivers directly got off their vehicles and looked up at the sky on the roads. When a taxi driver watched the 12 clouds gradually changing their shapes, he muttered, "I feel those birds are going to form 12 words. I find the first one might be Finance,

the fifth word is Zheng!"

The 12 clouds were indeed changing their shapes. The first word was Finance and the fifth word was Zheng.

In a few minutes, the 12 clouds had changed into clear and powerful words as if a celestial being painted them in the sky by a huge hand. Anyone could see them clearly as long as they were not illiterates. At the sight of the 12 huge words in the sky, everyone on the ground changed their face at once. Even the knight who lost his temper outside his barracks had turned pale in a split second.

The 12 words formed a sentence.

——Finance Minister Han Zhengfang is the master of Heavens Reaching Church

Like the largest and commanding banner and advertisement, this sentence composed of over 100,000 wild swans directly slashed towards the emperor's imperial city like a huge sword from outside.

After being empty, chaotic, intense and furious, the knight general standing in the camp finally recovered his free-thinking ability. Only after 2 seconds' consideration, he had confirmed that a major event was going to happen in Xuanyuan Hill today whether the sentence in the sky was real or not.

"Fall in..." A roar drifted across the barracks.

...

Something big was indeed going to happen in Xuanyuan Hill!

Suspending in the sky near the border of Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie just watched the wild swans flying towards the emperor's imperial city calmly and resolutely.

There were dozens of knights and an airboat within miles. All of them were watching Xuanyuan Hill in the distance while changing their face sharply; however, nobody could imagine that the culprit

was right on their side.

After all the wild swans entered the no-fly zone of Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie knew that his plot had succeeded. No power could prevent what would happen next...

Chapter 1156: A Fatal Plot

——Finance Minister Han Zhengfang is the master of Heavens Reaching Church.

At the sight of the 12 words in the sky, all the people on the ground were dumbfounded as the army of wild swans flew towards the emperor's imperial city.

The finance minister was a powerful shadow knight high in dignity, one of the 9 ministers in Taixia Country. It could be said that the finance minister was the controller of the economy and agriculture of Taixia Country. The daily needs of people, commerce, finance, agriculture, forestation, livestock farming and fishing across Taixia Country were related to finance minister.

Heavens Reaching Church was the cancer of the peace in Taixia Country; additionally, it colluded with demons. After the holy war broke out, Heavens Reaching Church increased their frequency in launching riots across the country. Evidently, Heavenly Reaching Church had become the largest threat facing the inside of Taixia Country after demons.

In Heavens Reaching Church, the most mysterious figure was the master. It was said that nobody across Heavens Reaching Church knew the identity of the master of Heavens Reaching Church besides very few core figures. The impression that the master of Heavens Reaching Church left to the public was that he was exceptional adept in trickery and was almost almighty. The catastrophe of bloody figures in Zhongzhou Province a few months ago proved the terror of Heavens Reaching Church and the power of that mysterious master of Heavens Reaching Church. Now that Heavens Reaching Church could build a bloody sea in one of the 9 immortal provinces, what else couldn't they do?

However, the 12 huge words composed of over 100,000 wild swans in the sky above Xuanyuan Hill during the Treasures

Meeting told everyone across Taixia Country even all the humans that the dignified finance minister of Taixia Country in Xuanyuan Hill was the very master of Heavens Reaching Church, who colluded with demons to exterminate Taixia Country.

Wherever the wild swans flew over, the corresponding traffic on the roads would be paralyzed. At the same time, emergency bulge calls could be heard across the camps surrounding Xuanyuan Hill.

...

In a small courtyard of Xuanyuan Hill, a criminal hunter had just washed his face and was ready for supper at home. Right then, he heard noises near his house. He then rapidly walked out of his house. When he looked up at the 12 huge words that were moving orderly in the sky, he immediately changed his face as he shouted, "Darling, take our kids; hide in the basement and lock the cover from inside. Don't come out of there no matter what happens outside..."

After saying that, before his wife responded, this criminal hunter had rushed out of the room. He picked up his walking saber, iron ruler; putting on his official hat and fastening his waistband. Without eating any food, he had rushed out of the door of his courtyard before closing it from outside.

"Ahh, darling, the supper is ready. Where are you going..." The woman asked as she walked out of the kitchen with a tray of dish. However, the man had disappeared. When the woman came to the courtyard, she noticed the 12 huge words in the sky too. Closely after that, her hand quivered, causing the tray of fragrantly fried peanuts dropping onto the ground together with the tray. The tray broke into pieces, spraying the peanuts everywhere.

When she remembered what her husband told him before leaving, the woman hurriedly returned to the room and prepared some food and drinks before coming into the basement together with her 3 kids in a flurried way.

...

The traffic started to be jammed which even caused small chaos. At this moment, some drivers who were close to their homes yet were blocked on the way directly dropped off their vehicles and escaped towards their own homes.

Nobody was an idiot.

Everybody could sense that a major event was going to happen in Xuanyuan Hill.

Although it was not the time to close their doors, many stores had ended their businesses in advance wherever the 12 huge words flew over...

...

Suspending in the sky, Zhang Tie didn't feel guilty at all at the sight of chaos on the ground as such chaos would come sooner or later. It was much better for him to arouse it in advance than to wait for Heavens Reaching Church and Han Zhengfang at Xuanyuan Hill when they were ready for that. Compared to those places which had been afflicted by the bloody figures across Zhongzhou Province, this chaos was nothing serious.

It was a fatal plot that Zhang Tie designed for Han Zhangfang. Being similar to that plot that Han Zhengfang designed for Zhang Tie in Fuhai City, Zhang Tie was also screwing him by the stress of the public. It was karma. It was the one who screwed Zhang Tie being screwed by Zhang Tie himself this time.

If Han Zhengfang the finance minister of Taixia Country was not the master of Heavens Reaching Church, the 12 huge words in the sky could only badly annoy Han Zhengfang and make Xuanyuan Hill chaotic for a few days; no matter how destructive was this basin of sewage, it could not kill such an influential chancellor in Taixia Country.

However, the truth was that Han Zhengfang was the master of

Heavens Reaching Church and the remnant of bloody soul temple. The 12 huge words in the sky were not sewage, but the fact was that Han Zhengfang was mostly afraid of being exposed to the public. It was as effective as unveiling the mole in the hinterland of the enemy.

Han Zhengfang couldn't stand being investigated; especially when everybody across Taixia Country and all the humans knew that he might be the master of Heavens Reaching Church, even if nobody proved that, with the overall strength of Taixia Country, Han Zhengfang's secrets would be unveiled rapidly. This event was much more influential than the tragedy in Fuhai City. In order to reassure people in the country and for the safety of Taixia Country, the Supreme Court had to figure out this event.

What would Han Zhengfang do when he suddenly knew that his real identity was exposed to the public in Taixia Country?

Han Zhengfang would never explain it; because it was useless for him to explain. Neither would he just wait for Taixia Country to prepare everything well for dismembering his body one piece after another. From now on, Taixia Country had become Han Zhengfang's enemy state. He was the very one whom hundreds of millions of people in Xuanyuan Hill and emperor's imperial city abhorred the most. Xuanyuan Hill was not where he sent his order anymore; instead, it would become his graveyard which was ambushed with enemies in every direction. The first thing that Han Yuanhong would do was to escape!

Before all the powers in Xuanyuan Hill made response to it; before the top three chancellors of Taixia Country came back; before the other 8 ministers of Taixia Country came here to besiege him; before the military of Taixia Country set nets above and snares below, he had to escape away from the dangerous Xuanyuan Hill at the fastest speed. If not, from now on, the longer he stayed in Xuanyuan Hill, the better the powers on all aspects of Taixia Country would prepare and the fewer chances that he would

survive himself.

Han Zhengfang was having a drink of Meng Shidao in Sincerity Garden. Therefore, the master of royal prince became Han Zhengfang's biggest obstacle to escape.

The 12 huge words in the sky would never be seen by Han Zhengfang and Meng Shidao until they reached above the emperor's imperial city. Because the eyes and ears of the royal prince and Han Zhengfang in Xuanyuan Hill would inform the master of the royal prince and Han Zhengfang about the latest news as fast as possible.

Given the efficiency, the power of royal prince in Xuanyuan Hill was definitely higher than that of Han Zhengfang's. The master of royal prince might be able to receive this news a few minutes earlier than Han Zhengfang. At least he would not receive it later than Han Zhengfang. Because only Han Zhengfang's lackeys and members of Heavens Reaching Church would inform him about this news. Those in Gold and Power Law and the system of Finance Minister's Mansion who were not fully loyal to Han Zhengfang would not inform him about this news as fast as possible. When they didn't collude with Heavens Reaching Church and demons, if they informed this to Han Zhengfang timely which was proved to be false, Han Zhengfang would not appreciate them because nobody liked crows; conversely, if Han Zhengfang was proved to be the master of Heavens Reaching Church, they were destined to die; even their family members would suffer a death penalty. Very few people who could directly contact big figures through remote-sensing crystals were idiots.

'Would the master of royal prince let Han Zhengfang go on purpose?' Zhang Tie asked himself. Although he set the plot, he could not make the decision for the master of the royal prince. However, no matter what, there were only three possibilities in Xuanyuan Hill. Whatever, at least one public enemy of Zhang Tie's family and Huaiyuan Palace would be killed. Therefore, Zhang Tie

had succeeded in his plot.

'If the master of royal prince let Han Zhengfang go on purpose when he learned that Han Zhengfang is the master of Heavens Reaching Church, his reputation and meritorious services for Taixia Country would become a joke. How could a person who had a drink with the master of Heavens Reaching Church and let the latter go after knowing the latter's real identity be qualified to be the master of the royal prince? After Meng Shidao fell down, the Gobbling Party would fall down and would not pose any threat to Huaiyuan Palace anymore. Meanwhile, Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong would become the eyesores of the imperial court of Taixia Country. Even if I don't kill them myself, numerous powerhouses would like to chop off their heads one after another.'

'This is the first situation that might happen today.'

'As for the second situation. The master of royal prince could choose to kill Han Zhengfang in the emperor's imperial city. Meanwhile, the master of royal prince would stir up a big enemy for the Gobbling Party. If Heavens Reaching Church didn't revenge the Gobbling Party after their master was killed by the leader of the Gobbling Party, it could be disbanded right away. I don't care which one would laugh at the end, the Heavenly Reaching Church or the Gobbling Party. Given the overall strengths and potentials of the two parties, I would not feel strange even if their animosity lasted hundreds of years after their death. The Gobbling Party is deep-rooted in Taixia Country with numerous supporters in and out of imperial court; the Heavens Reaching Church colludes with demons as the remnants of the weird bloody soul temple. If the two parties fought each other, it would be a splendid show. I will just watch the show together with Huaiyuan Palace.'

'The third situation could barely happen, namely, Han Zhengfang and Meng Shidao both get severely wounded. Han Zhengfang is still able to escape out of Xuanyuan Hill. At this moment, I will give a favor to Meng Shidao. Ordinary earth

knights are unable to kill a shadow knight; however, as a divine dominator and a powerful earth knight, I'm absolutely qualified to kill an injured shadow knight...'

'Is it worthwhile to set such a fatal plot with 5 trouble-reappearance fruits and my preparation in Xuanyuan Hill?'

Zhang Tie felt it was very worthwhile.

The army of wild swans flew towards Xuanyuan Hill. Zhang Tie just waited for the result...

Before the 12 huge words reached the emperor's imperial city, Zhang Tie arranged those wild swans to fly across Gold and Power Market in the periphery of Xuanyuan Hill.

In normal times, as the host of Gold and Power Market and the bright golden master of Gold and Power Law of Taixia Country, Han Yuanhong would not just stay in Gold and Power Market like a steward, except for late days. According to Zhang Tie's intelligence, during the period of Treasures Meeting, Han Yuanhong stayed in Treasures Complex every day and controlled the overall situation of the Treasures Meeting; additionally, he was collecting a great number of silver secret items...

Honestly, Zhang Tie was really worried that Han Zhengfang had too few faithful lackeys in Xuanyuan Hill. If Han Zhengfang received this news too late and was easily arrested by the master of royal prince through some arrangement, it would not be interesting at all.

When the wild swans flew across Gold and Power Market, at least his son would tell him about the news.

'How would Han Yuanhong look like and respond when he saw the abnormal phenomenon in the sky?'

'I'm really looking forward to that...'

Gold and Power Market was the fuse that Zhang Tie set for this fatal plot...

Chapter 1157: Lighting the Battle Flames in Xuanyuan Hill

Han Yuanhong was dominating the auction of some silver secret items in the Secret Items Pavilion of Gold and Power market.

What the Imperial Affairs Ministry entrusted Han Yuanhong's father to do should actually be done by Gold and Power Law. As the master of Gold and Power Law, according to the result of the discussion between Han Yuanhong and Han Zhengfang, even if they were just pretending to complete the task, Han Yuanhong had to try his best to collect silver secret items in the Treasures Meeting for the Imperial Affairs Ministry.

Even pieces of God's Star could be sold in this Treasures Meeting, not to mention silver secret items.

The silver secret items being auctioned in the Treasures Meeting mainly came from two sources: first, like that of the piece of God's Star, after some major knight clans declined, facing the 3rd holy war, treasures such as pieces of God's Star and silver secret items could not bring prosperity to their clans any more; conversely, they might incur threats to their clans. Therefore, these clans would choose to auction these treasures left by their forebears for something more practical in case that these treasures were robbed away.

Second, silver secret items came from very few lucky dogs. These lucky dogs were basically knights. When most of the knights were spending great efforts in seeking silver secret items, these lucky dogs had one or two silver secret items. Those lucky dogs with one silver secret item would like to exchange it for something more practical, such as urgent cultivation resources like earth-element crystals; those with two silver secret items would keep one silver secret item for themselves while exchanging the other one for cultivation resources or something that they needed.

The silver secret item being displayed on the counter of the auction house was a short sword.

After wiping out the spiritual mark of its owner, this short sword suspended in a special crystal showcase whose volume was about 64 cubic meters as it was constantly changing its shapes between a colorful, brilliant short sword with sharp sawteeth and a real, colorful double-headed snake which constantly swam in the crystal showcase.

The greater part of the audiences were representatives of major clans across Taixia Country. These major clans would never think that they had enough silver secret items. These representatives would always be followed by one or two juniors of their clans who were taken out to see the world. It was the first time for many juniors to see the real object of silver secret items. Therefore, they were all dumbfounded as they whispered to each other.

Because Gold and Power Law was an organization that Emperor Xuanyuan used to compete with the other 6 top clans in Taixia Country, the Treasures Meeting of Gold and Power Law was generally ignored and resisted by the other 6 top clans in Taixia Country. Although the 6 top clans also assigned knights to attend the Treasures Meeting for the sake of the face of Gold and Power law, those major clans and forces on subcontinents were more passionate about this.

The original owner of the silver secret item was an earth knight. He wanted to exchange this silver secret item for water-element crystals that he demanded urgently.

The starting price was 200 water-element crystals. When it rose to 1200 water-element crystals, the rising speed evidently slowed down.

One water-element crystal could be exchanged for 6 earth-element crystals, namely, 1,200 water-element crystals were equal to 7,200 earth-element crystals. It was already a big figure. Even

those major clans of Taixia Country could not easily afford such a great number of element crystals. Whatever, no clan could plant these element crystals in their own land. All the element crystals had to be gained from Earth-element Realm; additionally, the more advanced the element crystals were, the more difficult it would be to gain them. Compared to silver secret items, element crystals were the urgent strategic resources of all the clans and sects.

When it rose to 1200 water-element crystals, the bidders started to raise the price meticulously as they communicated with their clan elders or heads through remote-sensing communications devices simultaneously so as to confirm their bottom lines.

"1290 water-element crystals...1290 water-element crystals, is there any higher quotation..." A beautiful female auctioneer shouted on the platform.

When Han Yuanhong implied his assistant to raise the figure to 1,300, loud chaos suddenly drifted from outside the auction house of the Secret Items Pavilion, causing him to frown unpleasantly.

'Who dared make trouble in the Treasures Complex? Does anyone want to imitate Cui Li?'

With a loud noise "bang", a side door of the hobby of the auction house was pushed open forcefully from outside, attracting the attention of many people in the auction house.

A guy with a long face and sparse beard broke inside in a flurried way regardless of the others' looks. He came all the way to Han Yuanhong's side as he approached Han Yuanhong's ear and whispered to him, "Master, there's an emergency outside...you...you'd better take a look outside!"

"What's the matter?" Han Yuanhong asked as he continued, "Does anyone dare make trouble in the Treasures Complex?"

"Erm...almost like that. Master, you will know it when you come outside..." The guy with the long face and sparse beard looked

embarrassed as he didn't know how to say.

Watching the strange expression of this guy, Han Yuanhong immediately walked out of the auction house unpleasantly with a killing intent, followed by that guy with the long face and sparse beard.

...

The moment Han Yuanhong left the auction house, he had seen hundreds of people gathering in the courtyard of Treasures Complex. When Han Yuanhong exited, the noise suddenly disappeared.

Han Yuanhong felt that everybody else was looking at him. The onlookers' eyes even contained something strange, which looked extremely weird. Even some knights of Gold and Power Law who were responsible for maintaining orders in Treasures Complex looked at him in a strange way as if they were surrounding to watch a surging hidden force among the mass.

The surrounding bizarre eye lights and weird atmosphere made Han Yuanhong's heart pound unconsciously. However, as an earth knight who had seen the world, he could not be flurried by such a scene.

Han Yuanhong didn't see anyone stirring up trouble here, he looked up at the sky along the finger of that guy with the long face and sparse beard.

——Finance Minister Han Zhengfang is the Master of Heavens Reaching Church

The 12 huge words in the brilliant, crimson sunglow were flying over here from afar, striking terror in Han Zhengfang's heart.

Each huge word was over 1,000 m long. They flew above 6,000 m in the air territory of Xuanyuan Hill like a celestial being's calligraphy. Being composed of over 100,000 wild swans, when they were still 10 miles away from the air territory above Gold and

Power Market, everybody in Gold and Power Market could already see them clearly.

Han Yuanhong's body rocked twice as if he was going to fall down. At the sight of 12 huge words, he felt that his head was split open by a huge ax falling off the sky. In a split second, Han Yuanhong's eyes sparkled as his head buzzed.

'It's over!'

It was the first whim that occurred to Han Yuanhong's mind. Han Yuanhong didn't even have time to consider why the 12 huge words could appear in the sky in this manner. Compared to the reason and process of the appearance of the 12 huge words, the result was more terrifying for Han Yuanhong.

In a split second, Han Clan's power and prestige would disappear. In the blink of an eye, Xuanyuan Hill would become the graveyard of Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong.

Han Yuanhong finally understood why those people in Gold and Power Market watched him with strange looks.

There was a proverb in Taixia Country that the son had to pay off his father's debt; there's another proverb that the son would inherit the undertakings of his father. If his father was the master of Heavens Reaching Church, undoubtedly, Han Yuanhong himself was also the remnant of Heavens Reaching Church. Anyone who could kill Han Yuanhong, the young master of Heavens Reaching Church would have reputation and fame at the same time.

Only dignitaries could enter Treasures Complex. At this moment, there were at least 20 earth knights in the courtyard of Treasures Complex. No matter how powerful was Han Yuanhong, he didn't feel that he could resist so many earth knights at the same time.

A few minutes ago, Han Yuanhong was still commanding in his Gold and Power Market; however, at this moment, Han Yuanhong felt that he became a fat piece that was thrown into a wolf pack.

It was pretty quiet inside Treasures Complex. At the same time, many onlookers' eyes grew increasingly perilous while a surging hidden force was going to break out at any time.

'I could not waste time anymore.' Han Yuanhong made his determination almost in a split second. After so many years' experience, Han Yuanhong immediately worked out a way to stabilize the current situation for the time being.

"It's a blasphemy!" Han Yuanhong roared with a solemn look as his face turned completely pale. He looked straight into the eyes of the onlookers with fearless, bloody eyes as he said, "Moles of demons and Heavens Reaching Church must be manipulating this plot as they want to slander my father and me in order to make Xuanyuan Hill chaotic. I will prepare for it right now and request the Supreme Court to carry out an overall investigation about this event!"

After saying that, Han Yuanhong rolled his sleeves furiously as he turned around and walked towards his office in Treasures Complex.

After exchanging a glance with each other, many knights who wanted to arrest Han Zhengfang just now became a bit hesitated. If it was really a blasphemy manipulated by the Heavens Reaching Church and demons, they would offend the finance minister of Taixia Country and Han Clan as a whole once they jumped out to fight Han Yuanhong at this moment; additionally, after this event, they might even be counterattacked by Han Clan with the excuse that they colluded with demons and Heavens Reaching Church.

The great meritorious service might also be a great trouble.

When the others became hesitated for a few seconds, Han Yuanhong had already disappeared.

After exchanging a glance with each other, nobody in Treasures Complex dared move.

...

Han Yuanhong was still clenching his fist. As a result, his knuckles turned white with raised green tendons while slightly shaking.

He pretended to be stable; however, only he could feel that the firm ground felt as soft as cotton. So far, his brain was still chaotic while golden sparkles were flickering in front of his eyes.

He just pretended to be furious and calm in front of the public so as to seek for more time for him to escape.

Of course, both Han Yuanhong and Han Zhengfang didn't have any mental preparation against the 12 huge words in the sky; neither did the official forces in Xuanyuan Hill make any preparation about that. If the official of Taixia Country had long known the background of Han Yuanhong and Han Zhengfang and was ready to arrest them, the 12 huge words were completely redundant which would frighten away the snakes. Because this was an emergency for everybody, it was of great significance for Han Yuanhong to strive for one more minute to escape.

After entering his study in Treasures Complex, Han Yuanhong closed the door from inside. At this moment, only that guy with the long face and sparse beard still closely followed Han Yuanhong with a resentful look so as to express that he was loyal to Han Clan.

"Master, this might be a vicious plot set by demons and Heavens Reaching Church or the revenge of Cui Li and Bai Clan..." The guy with the long face and sparse beard racked his brain and wanted to display his talent at this moment; however, he didn't notice Han Yuanhong's bad look. Unimaginably, he almost hit the truth although he just fabricated some reasons.

"You've really done too much for me over these years!" Han Yuanhong said genially.

The guy with the long face and sparse beard felt being flurried as

he hurriedly lowered his body while raising his sparse beard pleasantly, "Master, it's my honor to serve you..."

Soon after the word 'you', Han Yuanhong had already slightly pressed his palm on his head and turned his brain into a paste. Before this guy with the long face and sparse beard straightened up his body, his two eyeballs had already jumped out of his eye sockets as he immediately fell onto the ground like a dead dog.

Han Yuanhong threw the last glance at this guy with a glassy-eyed look. 'Previously, this guy was not a member of Heavens Reaching Church; as he's a bit smart and could be loyal to me, I just kept him alive as my lackey and eye in Gold and Power Market. Over these years, this guy has done too many things for me; if this guy fell into the hand of the Supreme Court, he might ruin our plan. Of course, he could not stay alive.'

'I've got some more subordinates in Xuanyuan Hill; however, given the emergency, I couldn't care too much about that.'

After killing one person, Han Yuanhong rapidly came to a wall of the study. He pressed some places on the wall, revealing an entrance of a hidden tunnel leading to the underground space. Han Yuanhong immediately jumped inside...

As he left there too hurriedly, Han Yuanhong didn't even close the door of the hidden tunnel.

Actually, even if he closed the door of the hidden tunnel, it wouldn't work anymore. If any knight wanted to look for the cave in this study, any blow would expose the entrance of the hidden tunnel. Although nobody dared be that presumptuous in Treasures Complex in normal times, many people dared be that presumptuous today for sure...

...

After a few minutes, after receiving no response from inside the study, the three earth knights in uniforms who were assigned by

the Supreme Court here to "invite" Han Yuanhong to the Supreme Court for an interrogation broke the door of the study into pieces while more people surrounded to watch what happened inside.

After catching sight of the corpse in the study and that entrance of the hidden tunnel, the face of the earth knight who broke the door turned solemn at once...

"Catch up with him..."

The three earth knights immediately jumped into the entrance.

All the onlookers inside Treasures Complex were in an uproar at once...

Before the three earth knights of the Supreme Court arrived, Han Yuanhong, the son of Han Zhengfang had killed one person and escaped far away, which lit the battle flames in Xuanyuan Hill at once.

Chapter 1158: Being Trapped

When the golden sun set in the west, the night fell. Only 1/3 of turbid wine was left in the bottle unconsciously under the old peach tree in the Sincerity Garden, emperor's imperial city...

Xuanyuan Hill was very large. The wild swans had not reached Gold and Power Market yet; therefore, Han Yuanhong had not heard the noise drifting from outside the auction house.

Meng Shidao and Han Zhengfang were having a drink on both sides of the stony table while talking with each other.

The so-called stony table was actually a time-honored stone mill composed of two parts.

The edge of the stone mill was already worn. The hole in the middle of the mill had been blocked by sundries. The lower mill was close to the ground. Therefore, its feet had been covered with mosses. Such a worn stone mill would be abandoned by well-off families. However, in Sincerity Garden, it was treated as the stony table for receiving guests. Very few people across the emperor's imperial city could have a seat on the side of this stone mill.

The master of royal prince might take over the position of prime minister, one of the top three chancellors of Taixia Country in the future.

When Han Zhengfang talked and drank with the master of the royal prince, he gradually felt that master of the royal prince was most interested in the economy of Taixia Country that he was responsible for.

Prime minister was responsible for the political affairs across Taixia Country. This position could help the royal prince pretty much; prime minister could assist the royal prince to control the overall situation of Taixia Country. Compare to the general inspector who was responsible for supervision, education,

etiquette and sacrifice and defense secretary, the prime minister was more influential to all aspects across Taixia Country. Of course, the royal prince hoped that he could be assisted by his master in the most important position. Meanwhile, it would meet the interests of the Gobbling Party.

If the master of royal prince took over the position of prime minister, the Finance Minister's Mansion would become the immediate subordinate of the master of the royal prince. The master of royal prince might want to pass this signal to Han Zhengfang through this meeting.

'I wonder what condition could that guy in the east imperial palace provide so as to have Di Longtu, who was the current prime minister, abdicate voluntarily? Di Longtu is bad-tempered. He would not consider modestly decline as a virtue on this point. Whether could I grasp an opportunity during this process? If I could have Di Clan fight the master of the royal prince, it would interesting.'

When Han Zhengfang was thinking about something evil, he looked and said sincerely. Han Zhengfang treated well-known master of the royal prince who was going to be the immediate superior of Finance Minister's Mansion pretty politely; at the same time, he maintained his dignity and moral courage as the finance minister of Taixia Country.

"According to the statistics about the consumption of edible salt among all the provinces that the Finance Minister Mansion made 3 years ago, there were over 0.1536 trillion people in Taixia Country. Over 80% of these people are in the 9 immortal provinces, 36 upper provinces and 72 major provinces in Taixia Country. One of such provinces would have about 10 billion people. Although the medium and lower provinces have large land areas, they have fewer people; additionally, most people settled in nearby cities. There's still a great development potential in the field. Fanzhou Province has the least population. Fanzhou Province is a barren

and cold land. It contains less than 100 million people. Besides those uncivilized barbarians, each wild province would usually have millions of Hua people and descendants, at most 10 million people. However, many criminals usually escape to wild provinces so as to avoid the arrest of the Supreme Court."

Han Zhengfang put his drink down. After hearing the master of royal prince's question about population statistics in Taixia Country, he immediately uttered a lot of figures. Actually, these figures were classified in Taixia Country. Low-rank officials could not touch these figures at all.

"Migrating criminals to open up wasteland in wild provinces is a national policy of Taixia Country. The ruling party actually forgive those criminals in this way. Most of the people who violate rules by force are cunning and evil. Although they are toxic in Taixia Country, as long as they are not heinous, the Supreme Court would just drive them into the wild provinces so as to survive themselves; meanwhile, they could contribute to the wasteland reclamation in Taixia Country. Additionally, these guys could also deal with those barbarians in those wild provinces. After 100 years, when some descendants of these criminals could be something, they would build cities and seek for paying allegiance to the imperial court so as to make their ancestors illustrious. By then, Taixia Country could update those wild provinces to establish provinces and assign one provincial governor and some able men over there to have them under control!" The master of royal prince really had special discernment about national policies.

"Master of the royal prince, what a unique analysis!" Han Zhengfang replied with a smile as he nodded, "It also benefits from the grant morality of His Majesty!"

The two people raised their glasses once again. As Zhang Tie had imagined, when their glasses touched, the master of royal prince received the emergency remote-sensing message from the royal prince, which was about what was happening outside the

emperor's imperial city.

Although being earth-shaking, this news didn't influence the mood of the master of the royal prince at all. Even his hand which was holding the glass remained unchanged. Meng Shidao was still drinking and chatting with Han Zhengfang as if nothing had happened.

1 minute later, the master of royal prince received another message from the royal prince; however, he still didn't make any response to it.

Not until a few minutes later when Han Yuanhong left the auction house after hearing the uproar outside Gold and Power Market did the master of royal prince notice that the hand of Han Zhengfang became stiff suddenly.

The master of royal prince put down the drink as he looked at Han Zhengfang with a smile and that glass of wine in Han Zhengfang's hand as he asked casually, "Zhengfang, did you receive the same message from your subordinate?"

The thunder-like question caused a faint ripple in Han Zhengfang's glass.

Han Zhengfang's face remained unchanged. After bottoming up the glass of wine, he replied with the same smile, "I've indeed received a message just now; I wonder about the message that the master of royal prince refers to?"

"I've just received the message from the royal prince. As Xuanyuan Hill is holding the Treasures Meeting lately, someone evil guys grasped this opportunity to bewilder the public by using animal controlling skill. They say you're the master of Heavens Reaching Church!" The master of royal prince said casually as if he just took it as a rumor and didn't care about it at all.

"I've also received the report from my subordinate!" Han Zhengfang let out a sigh, "When one reaches a high place, he would

always feel cold. I'm afraid that I've offended too many people as a finance minister. Perhaps, the remnants of Heavens Reaching Church want to mess up the overall situation facing Taixia Country. Therefore, they used such an insidious means. It ruined our good moods here!"

"These evil forces are indeed disgusting!" The master of royal prince nodded as if he sympathized Han Zhengfang's encounter very much.

"These evil forces seize the opportunity to make troubles. After hearing this rumor, I'm afraid that my family members have already become chaotic. In order to reassure my family members and avoid from accidents, Zhengfang has to bid a farewell to you. Thanks for your hospitality, master of the royal prince!" Han Zhengfang stood up in a calm way.

The master of royal prince also stood up as he said with a smile, "Zhengfang, don't worry about that. Royal prince has already assigned the able staff men of Imperial Affairs Ministry to comfort your family members in the Finance Minister's Mansion. Therefore, your mansion would never be bothered by those evil forces. Those evil forces want to mess up the overall situation facing Xuanyuan Hill by targeting at the finance minister in such an insidious way. It's already a bit chaotic outside the emperor's imperial city. The Zodiac Guards have already blocked the emperor's imperial city. Considering that those evil forces might have other means, the royal prince is summoning the 9 ministers and me to negotiate about the counter-measures in the imperial palace so as to stabilize the overall situation. As Zhengfang is here, at the order of royal prince, we should enter the imperial palace together!"

'Enter the imperial palace?' How could Han Zhengfang be mired in the desperate place at this moment? There are sheer terrors in the emperor's imperial palace. As long as those secret tricks were triggered in the imperial palace, Han Zhengfang would fall into the

hell. Even sage-level knights from top 6 sects could not come out of there completely, not to mention Han Zhengfang. If Han Zhengfang agreed to enter the imperial palace at this moment, he would have no chance to survive himself any longer. If he was really slandered by the evil forces, of course, he dared enter the imperial palace together with the master of the royal prince to meet the royal prince at this moment so as to clarify his innocence while not afraid of being investigated. But the problem was that Han Zhengfang knew that it was not a blasphemy but a truth. As the finance minister of Taixia Country, he knew clearly how many means could Xuanyuan Hill and the emperor's imperial city use to figure out his event.

'What a smart royal prince!'

'I should never enter the imperial palace.'

'I've got no chance to fabricate a lie anymore! Little time left!'

'How could it suddenly reach this step? Who's on the back of this event?' If possible, Han Zhengfang really wanted to take a look at the 12 huge words moving in the sky which sent him into eternal damnation.

'Are the top 6 sects dealing with me and Taixia Country or is it the inferior means of burning the bridge after crossing it adopted by demons? Who else in Taixia Country could send me into such a poor situation in the blink of an eye besides the two parties?'

As he didn't know who screwed him on the back, Han Zhengfang felt a chill invading each of his cells from his head to his toe, causing his heart to turn icy gradually.

At this moment, Han Zhengfang suddenly realized that his 2nd son who was still missing might have already been killed.

After finding that Han Zhengfang remained still, the master of royal prince's eye light turned profound and heart-piercing abruptly.

With a stone table in between, Han Zhengfang and Meng Shidao looked straight into each others' eyes while their smiles gradually faded away. At this moment, a withered peach leaf fell onto the stone stable while a solemn killing intent filled the entire Sincerity Garden in a split second...

Chapter 1159: Collisions between Powerful Ones

As this solemn killing intent gradually spread over Sincerity Garden, the fish in the pond near the two people instantly sneaked into the bottom of the pond; some birds on the treetop flew off in a flurried way; even the stray cat's meows disappeared. As a result, the entire Sincerity Garden seemed to be frozen.

"Master of the royal prince, if you allow me to return home, Zhengfang will definitely appreciate you in the future!" Han Zhengfang's voice suddenly turned a bit hoarse; meanwhile, his imposing manner also started to be aggressive and domineering like an iceberg that came out of the sea level.

Han Zhengfang who had been well behaved since he entered the Sincerity Garden didn't treat the master of royal prince in a respectful and restrained way anymore. In a split second, he started to talk with the master of the royal prince on the equal footing.

Master of royal prince looked at Han Zhengfang as he said, "If you leave Sincerity Garden safe and sound today, how could you stay in Xuanyuan Hill any longer? Your appreciation is my poison!" After saying that, the master of royal prince let out a sigh suddenly. Closely after that, he shook his head and looked at those riprap beside the pond as he muttered one sentence that made Han Zhengfang confused, "Alas, I've not imagined that it would come so fast!"

"Does the master of royal prince know why Emperor Xuanyuan is missing?" Han Zhengfang suddenly asked Meng Shengdao with a sneer.

"No, I don't." Master of royal prince shook his head as he answered in a distant way.

"Because Emperor Xuanyuan knows that Taixia Country would definitely be exterminated by demons in this holy war. Although the tunnel leading to the Earth-elements Realm in Military Province and Lion Fortress beneath that tunnel could successfully prevent the army of demons from entering the core territory of Taixia Country, this time, they can't. Because demons' army has already found another way to reach the territory of Taixia Country by detouring the tunnel in Military Province in the Earth-elements Realm. This time, the strength of the demon army is hundreds of times more greater than that in the former two holy wars between humans and demons. The demon corps on those subcontinents are just a small part of the demon army!" Han Zhengfang smiled more genially when he watched the master of the royal prince who remained as casual as usual, "As Emperor Xuanyuan knows that Taixia Country would not have a chance to win this holy war, he has left for the underground world before the holy war broke out. He wants to look for the legendary Xuanyuan Hill which might bring Taixia Country and Hua people the last bit of hope!"

When he heard "Xuanyuan Hill", the master of royal prince's eyes shot out a shrewd light.

Meng Shidao knew that the Xuanyuan Hill mentioned by Han Zhengfang didn't refer to this nominal capital of Taixia country and center of humans where they were in. Actually, the name of the capital of Taixia Country originated from a legendary supreme item called Xuanyuan Hill among Hua people. In the most mysterious history of Hua people, Xuanyuan Hill was the origin of Hua people. One day, Xuanyuan Hill fell onto the earth from the sky. Closely after that, the forebears of Hua people walked out of this Xuanyuan Hill and came to this world. In the ancient legend, Xuanyuan Hill was a huge cube which carried mysterious abilities. This cube was the real sacred and immortal item of Hua people. Because of the existence and legends of Xuanyuan Hill, some people in Taixia Country called Hua people as immortal people.

Xuanyuan Hill was actually a huge cube; instead of the nominal human city where they were. Only very few Hua people knew this secret. Meng Shidao was one of them.

Emperor Xuanyuan was missing as he was looking for the real Xuanyuan Hill. Even the royal prince didn't know this secret, not to mention the master of the crown prince!

Watching the silent expression of the master of the crown prince, Han Zhengfang took in a deep breath as he continued, "In order to look for Xuanyuan Hill, Emperor Xuanyuan has already been mired in a desperate situation and completely lost his contact with the outside world. Nobody knows whether he's still alive or not. He might never come back. Master of the crown prince, why not leave a chance for yourself and your clan at this moment?"

"Even the crown prince doesn't know it, how do you know that?"

At this critical moment, Han Zhengfang had already displayed his bearing as the master of a sect as he became not that scared anymore, "There was an item of Bloody Soul Temple that really came from Xuanyuan Hill. I presented that item to Emperor Xuanyuan by setting a plot through Gold and Power Law in the excuse that Gold and Power Law gained it by accident. The "Xuanyuan God Sutra" that Emperor Xuanyuan cultivated was metaphysical. As a result, Emperor Xuanyuan has special senses about the items in Xuanyuan Hill. With this item as a lure, I have Emperor Xuanyuan enter a desperate situation himself and sweep the largest obstacle of demons in Taixia Country."

"What's the relationship between you and Bloody Soul Temple? As the lacky of demons, what benefits could you gain?" Meng Shidao asked.

After hearing Meng Shidao's questions, Han Zhengfang burst out into laughter suddenly which sounded a bit miserable and indignant, "Hahahaha, at that time, Bloody Soul Temple just grasped the building method of the bloody sea; however, imperial

households and the top 7 sects in Taixia Country joined hands to exterminate us. What crime has Bloody Soul Temple committed? Why would we suffer such a great loss? Almost all the members of Bloody Soul Temple had been slaughtered. The so-called reason that bloody sea violated the universal laws and that disciples of Bloody Soul Temple made troubles everywhere across the country didn't exist at all. When did our Bloody Soul Temple kill innocent people for building bloody seas? Although there were some belials in Bloody Soul Temple who make troubles across Taixia Country by the secret methods of Bloody Soul Temple, it's nothing strange at all. Major sects and clans always have tens of millions of disciples of different qualities, even so, more than one disciples of Taiyi Fantasy Sect are being wanted by the Supreme Court. Why not exterminate Taiyi Fantasy Sect? We built the bloody sea only for an experiment. All the blood in the bloody sea came from animals. We didn't kill any human for building it. By contrast, although you call yourselves decent sects, you arranged moles among the disciples of Bloody Soul Temple and cast greedy eyes on the secret methods of our Bloody Soul Temple. Meanwhile, being afraid that our bloody sea could grow more powerful, you even joined hands to exterminate our Bloody Soul Temple. As the sutra-preach elder of Bloody Soul Temple, how could I not revenge such an animosity? Cooperated with demons, so what? In this word, the winner would become the king while the losers would become bandits. If demons win this holy war, I will be the human emperor of Taixia Country in the future. The justice would be on my side. Only after 200 years, the pettifoggers would nail the top 7 sects and the imperial households of Taixia Country onto the pillar of stigma as rebels and traitors!"

"I've not imagined that the finance minister of Taixia Country is the sutra-preach elder of Bloody Soul Temple!" Master of crown prince let out a sigh with emotion as he looked up at the sky. Closely after that, he shook his head.

In Taixia Country, some sects had sutra-preach elders, some

didn't have. The duties of sutra-preach elders of each sect were greatly different from each other. Some sutra-preach elders were only responsible for preaching some ordinary classics to their disciples through enlightenment; some sutra-preach elders could grasp the most important secret methods of their own sects; some sutra-preach elders were appointed by the masters of the sects, whose identity would be known by many people; some sutra-preach elders had their own inheritance system, in which situation, even though the masters of the sects didn't know who were the sutra-preach elders of their sects; namely, the inheritance system of sutra-preach elders were independent of the sects. sutra-preach elders fulfilled their duties silently. Undoubtedly, Bloody Soul Temple accepted the second inheritance system of sutra-preach elders, which was also the most mysterious kind.

The second kind of sutra-preach elder was the most mysterious figure in a sect. This person got hang of the most important classic secret methods of a sect. Benefited from this mode, if the sect suffered a catastrophe one day, the sutra-preach elder of this sect could serve as a kindling to reinvigorate the sect one day.

The kindling of Bloody Soul Temples was not only preserved but also turned into a big blazing fire of Heavens Reaching Church that almost burned Taixia Country as a whole into ruins.

"You designed the tragedy in Fuhai City, right?"

"The Zhang brat ruined the great plan of our Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province. His potential was really terrifying. If he grew up, he would definitely become the stumbling block of my great undertaking. I had to have forethought. Therefore, I set a plot to eliminate him!" Han Zhengfang smiled as if he was saying something trivial, "I just did something which master of royal prince also wanted to do yet felt bashful to do! I've not imagined that Zhang brat could escape from my plot and gain a great fame. I really underestimated him."

"The enmity between me and Huaiyuan Palace is not for private

benefits but for the universal laws. Therefore, I would never use your mean method!" Meng Shidao genially persuaded Han Zhengfang, whose qi grew stronger, "If you fold your hands for capture and could clarify all the plots that you and demons have set in Taixia Country over these years for the sake of numerous lives, I swear to keep you alive in front of the crown prince!"

Han Zhengfang suddenly let out a sigh as he said, "According to your words, the master of crown prince still determines to keep me here?"

"Yup, I have to!"

"If so, master of crown prince, you could...go die!"

Han Zhengfang's eyes turned bloody at once while two bloody spiritual strikes, which could mess up the mind sea of a heavenly knight, flew out of his eyes like bloody lightning bolts before booming into the head of Meng Shidao in a speed which was much faster than that of lightning bolt.

What an unavoidable spiritual strike!

This was the most powerful and irresistible trump card among all the secret methods of Bloody Soul Temple—Soul-Killing Bloody Spiritual Sword.

This strike could already reach the level of a heavenly knight.

The soul-killing bloody spiritual sword hit Meng Shidao. The aftermath of this strike swept over the entire Sincerity Garden which became deadly silent. All the fish at the bottom of the pond and the ants in the nests were killed in a split second.

When the soul-killing bloody spiritual sword hit Meng Shidao and made his body turn stiff, Han Zhengfang's punch arrived too. Being as powerful as a meteor that flew from the outer space, this punch broke through the void and passed by the stone mill between the two people, shattering all the trays, bowls and iron bottles on it. Like being blown over by a wind constantly for

hundreds of millions of years, everything was dried, weathered and turned into dust and memories...

Han Zhengfang, the former finance minister of Taixia Country or a shadow knight, revealed a terrifying battle strength and power that should be owned by a heavenly knight at his full efforts in a split second...

With a remaining faint dumbfounded look, Meng Shidao's chest was penetrated through by that punch, sending him to fly off...

Han Zhengfang didn't care whether Meng Shidao was alive or dead. He instantly strode over 100 m away only by one step. After another step, he strode out of the wooden hedge of Sincerity Garden by one foot...

However, before he started the 3rd step, Han Zhengfang had to stop.

The street outside the wooden hedge had disappeared at this moment. Although he had crossed over the wooden hedge, he entered the Sincerity Garden once again.

Han Zhengfang looked back and found that the street was on his back. Besides that humpbacked old servant who had disappeared, everything in front of his eyes was as same as that when he came to the Sincerity Garden at the beginning.

After leaving the Sincerity Garden, he entered the Sincerity Garden once again. It seemed that the sense of space had disappeared. The low wooden hedge felt like an impassable heavens reaching abyss.

Master of the royal prince was still standing beside that stone table being composed of the stone mill under the old peach tree while looking at Han Zhengfang genially with a small dough figurine whose chest was penetrated through. Meng Shidao said, "I've not imagined that you've long promoted to a heavenly knight. You've really buried your secrets deeply!"

Face turning slightly pale, Han Zhengfang looked up at the sky. The Sincerity Garden and the sky both remained unchanged.

"Semi...sage...realm..." Han Zhengfang uttered the three words hardly.

"I'm sorry..." Master of the crown prince replied bashfully.

Chapter 1160: Great Chaos in Xuanyuan Hill

"What's that..."

When a bloody qi rushed into the sky from the Sincerity Garden, many people in the emperor's imperial city became amazed. Few people could promote to knights; few knights had witnessed the battle between heavenly knights; especially between one heavenly knight and one semi-sage knight.

Therefore, when that bloody qi rushed into the sky, many people in the emperor's imperial city thought that there was a performance today. As Xuanyuan Hill was holding the Treasures Meeting, it was predictable that there was some festive program in the emperor's imperial city. Additionally, such things happened before.

However, those people who saw this bizarre scenery from afar soon realized that it was not a festive program but a major event.

The bloody qi that rushed into the sky from Sincerity Garden was abnormal and overbearing like a big heavenly fire. With a bizarre light, the bloody qi was constantly changing into various bizarre fierce beasts as if it wanted to get rid of an invisible bond.

There was a moment when the bloody qi was going to break the bond; however, closely after that, a looming huge, pitch-dark stele appeared above the bloody qi, suppressing it once again.

Everybody across the emperor's imperial city could hear tens of thousands of muffled thunders rolling over the ground from the direction of the Sincerity Garden, causing an earthquake within 13 miles around Sincerity Garden. The closer it was to Sincerity Garden, the fiercer the earthquake would be. All the people living nearby Sincerity Garden had escaped out of their houses out of fear. Closely after that, they were all evacuated by the imperial forbidden army in the emperor's imperial city. As a result, the soldiers of Imperial Guards soon covered 13 miles around Sincerity

Garden.

"Far-ancient Immortal Stele!" A knight-level general of the imperial guards exclaimed as he looked up at the words on the 100 m higher classic huge stele above Sincerity Garden while standing outside Sincerity Garden.

Of course, this was not the real Far-ancient Immortal Stele, but an incarnation like battle qi totem.

It seemed that the entire Sincerity Garden was covered by a grey mist. The grey mist was constantly twisting as if tens of thousands of swirls and hidden flows were surging in the mist. People couldn't see clearly what was happening inside the mist. Given the heavy earthquakes, they could sense that it was not peaceful inside.

"Let me take a look inside..." A brave earth knight of Imperial Guards gritted his teeth as he rushed towards the grey mist. However, the moment he approached the mist, he had been bounced back. The grey mist was covered with a strong, irresistible force field. The earth knight tried twice; however, the greater the strength he exerted, the greater the rebounding energy would be. When the earth knight was bounced back for the 3rd time, he almost got injured.

"No more try. It's close to a sage-level strength. Even heavenly knights could barely access to it by force..." Along with this sound, the commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards arrived with a solemn look. With double pupils in each eye, his eyebrows were so long that they reached his temples.

As one of the 9 ministers in Taixia Country, the commander-in-chief was shocked too much by the intensity of the earthquake as he watched the changing grey mist over Sincerity Garden.

'Master of the royal prince has already promoted to semi-sage. The familiar finance minister Han Zhengfang is already a heavenly knight.' The heart of commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards

pounded.

"You hurriedly go to the Golden Water River and assist the Zodiac Guards to safeguard Golden Water River. Without the consent of the royal prince, nobody is allowed to leave the emperor's imperial city at this moment. I'll be responsible for this place..." The commander-in-chief immediately sent an order.

"Yes, sir..." The other knights around Sincerity Garden immediately left at the order.

Some black iron knights and earth knights couldn't even interfere with the battle between a heavenly knight and a semi-sage knight. If Han Zhengfang was able to escape out of the realm of Meng Shidao, these knights outside Sincerity Garden could never resist Han Zhengfang. Therefore, they'd better play their role in the best place; instead of increasing casualties in vain.

Based on Han Zhengfang's arrangement in Xuanyuan Hill over these years, Han Zhengfang should have some accomplices in the emperor's imperial city. At this critical moment, the remnants of Heavens Reaching Church could never escape away from the emperor's imperial city anymore.

Almost the moment those subordinate knights of commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards turned around, they had seen a knight's battle qi totem rushing into the sky from the Golden Water River in the far.

Someone wanted to cross Golden Water River and had already started a battle with Zodiac Guards. What the commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards was concerned about had immediately come true.

The commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards didn't care about what happened over Golden Water River anymore; instead, a brilliant light gradually came into being in his hand and turned into a huge 3.3 m-long saber which carried a strong killing intent.

When the commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards held the huge saber in one hand in an imposing manner, he kept a close eye watch on the changing grey mist in the Sincerity Garden with a pair of brilliant eyes...

At the order of the royal prince, the two generals of God's Will Army and Feather Army had already been on the way here at the highest speed, followed by their powerful subordinates. Only after a couple of hours, nothing to worry about no matter how Heavens Reaching Church made arrangements in Xuanyuan Hill.

...

The bloody sea dashed to the sky in the Sincerity Garden.

In the semi-sage realm, there was no concept of size or space. Everything visible was incarnated by the four elements. The mysteries in the realm could only be known by the sage, whether true or not.

If it happened outside Sincerity Garden, Han Zhengfang's surging bloody billows had long covered 60 square miles. However, at this moment, Han Zhengfang's surging bloody billows still failed to break out of this tiny Sincerity Garden.

Han Zhengfang had to use his most powerful means as a heavenly knight. Because he knew that even if he could break out of the semi-sage realm of Meng Shidao 2 hours later, he couldn't leave Xuanyuan Hill anymore, because it would only take the generals of the top 4 armies of Taixia Country 3 hours to arrive at Xuanyuan Hill after receiving the message about the chaos facing Xuanyuan Hill.

As the emperor's imperial city counted most. The powerhouses on the back of emperor's imperial city would not leave there at this moment. As long as one of the generals of the top 4 armies arrived, Han Zhengfang would have no hope to survive anymore.

The bloody billows turned more and more black and increasingly

fiercer. A virtual immortal beast which looked like tortoise and dragon roared towards the sky like a living being, arousing extremely high bloody billows, shocking thunders, and bloody lightning bolts. Additionally, various ferocious beasts being incarnated by the bloody billows were constantly charging at the people above the bloody billows and the invisible barrier which bounded off this bloody sea. Each ferocious beast was more powerful than the images incarnated by common black iron knights' battle qis.

Suspending still above the bloody sea, Meng Shidao was wrapped in a colorful light, hair and beard swaying in the air, he was lifting a mountain-like virtual far-ancient immortal stele like a deity and shattered Han Zhengfang's strike one after another.

"Mercy is the heart of universal laws; virtue is the body of universal laws; etiquette is the tool of universal laws; righteousness is the driving force of universal laws; universal laws are looming with various images and objects. It contains true essences and trust. Universal laws are innominate; just follow the universal laws..."

In the sky, as master of royal prince recited the sutras on the Far-ancient Immortal Stele, the sound in the entire semi-sage realm grew increasingly louder. Everything in the realm started to resonate and rock together with this sound. Those beasts which were more ferocious than the battle qi images of common knights were successively flying out of the bloody billows before turning into bloody waves and falling off in the next second among the sutras that filled the entire realm.

Thunders stroke onto the head of the immortal beast in the shape of a tortoise and a dragon which was manifested by the heavenly knight using the secret method of combining blood with life when the immortal beast was brewing storms in the bloody sea.

The bloody sea caught fire...

The immortal beast's roar became more earth-shaking.

...

The earthquake in the emperor's imperial city and the battle qi totems which were rushing into the sky from the Golden Water River indicated that more and more people were involved in today's chaos. Of course, Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong were not the only members of Heavens Reaching Church in Xuanyuan Hill; therefore, all the other members of Heavens Reaching Church had exerted their full efforts to escape away from the emperor's imperial city, arousing many turmoils.

Not only the emperor's imperial city was rocking, but a loud boom also drifted from the underground space of Gold and Power Market soon after the three earth knights assigned by the Supreme Court entered the secret tunnel in Treasures Complex, causing the ground over Gold and Power Market rock for a short while. Additionally, the ground of a 4-storey building miles away from Treasures Complex in the west rose and fell like doughballs, causing the 4-storey building to collapse completely. Some people who were buried inside started to scream miserably...

The strong airflow that was sent out of the entrance of the secret tunnel broke all the windows in the study, causing the onlookers dumbfounded.

"Alchemist's bomb. There is an alchemist's bomb underground!" Someone shouted, scaring away all the onlookers who were waiting there for the result. None of them could imagine that there was an alchemist's bomb beneath Treasures Complex.

A few minutes later, the three earth knights who had just rushed into the hidden tunnel exited the hidden tunnel with embarrassed looks. Thankfully, they all survived although getting injured.

"Pass my order, block all the sewers that lead to the outside of Xuanyuan Hill!" An earth knight roared.

Soon after the roar, a louder boom drifted from a place miles away from Gold and Power Market. Closely after that, hundreds of meters high flame rose up from the ground over there...

At the sight of this scene, the three earth knights of Supreme Court changed their faces once again.

"What's that place?" An earth knight caught a staff of Treasures Complex as he asked loudly.

"That...is a materials warehouse that Gold and Power Law built outside Gold and Power Market..." The staff in Treasures Complex was scared too much by the series of accidents as he replied in a flurried way.

As the night gradually fell, Xuanyuan Hill was gradually in chaos.

Chapter 1161: Starting Action

Although Zhang Tie didn't enter Xuanyuan Hill, with his lotus-flower eyes, he could still see clearly the abnormal phenomenon in the Sincerity Garden of the emperor's imperial city hundreds of miles away. He saw the commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards who was standing outside the Sincerity Garden with a huge saber, which was a silver secret item, in hand; the crowd being evacuated outside the Sincerity Garden, the knights' battle qi smokes rushing into the sky from the Golden water River; the rising ground and the collapsing building in Gold and Power Market and the sudden rising flames due to explosions which were not far from Gold and Power Market.

The entire Xuanyuan Hill was gradually chaotic as the members of Heavens Reaching Church or the faithful lackeys of Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong in Xuanyuan Hill were exerting their utmost efforts to create chaos in Xuanyuan Hill so that they could have a chance to escape out of there.

The night had already fallen while the flames in the city became more eye-attractive. The wuthering ambulance vehicles and collisions between knights could be heard everywhere across Xuanyuan Hill. Additionally, many wails and cries escaping out the fiercest flames and most ferocious battles in Xuanyuan Hill.

At this moment, the wild swans were still 60 miles away from the emperor's imperial city while the entire Xuanyuan Hill had been boiling like a bowl of cold water entering rolling oil.

Zhang Tie knew that he had succeeded.

There would be many casualties in Xuanyuan Hill tonight. Although this was against Zhang Tie's conscience, Zhang Tie wouldn't feel guilty about it. He didn't have moral cleanliness.

The main reason of casualties was the arrangements that Heavens Reaching Church had made in Xuanyuan Hill. It was like

a bomb being buried in Xuanyuan Hill; if not detonate it in advance and cause Heavens Reaching Church to move flurriedly, it might cause a much severer outcome if Heavens Reaching Church detonated it when they prepared it well. Those who should be responsible for what happened tonight were the Supreme Court, the Imperial Censorate, the prime minister who governed the national policies of the country, the chief inspector who was responsible for supervising the officials in the imperial court, even Emperor Xuanyuan himself. A remnant of Bloody Soul Temple had lurked under their eyes for so many years; the master of Heavens Reaching Church served as the finance minister of Taixia Country in the hinterland of Taixia Country; those b*stards of Heavens Reaching Church could make so many arrangements in Xuanyuan Hill; shouldn't they be responsible for all this?

After this evening, the overall pattern in the imperial court of Taixia Country would definitely change greatly. The Finance Minister's Mansion would be cleaned up completely for sure. Someone in the imperial court of Taixia Country would be responsible for this event for sure. Although Zhang Tie could imagine all this, it had nothing to do with him. He was only doing what he should do and could do in Xuanyuan Hill at this moment.

Zhang Tie's job tonight was to kill Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong!

So many knights were suspending in the sky outside Xuanyuan Hill as they watched the chaos in Xuanyuan Hill with dumbfounded looks. In less than 1 hour, what happened drastically in Xuanyuan Hill had made everybody dumbfounded.

Zhang Tie watched the wild swans flying towards the emperor's imperial city as he silently made a hand gesture. Closely after that, the army of wild swans disbanded. They had already accomplished their task successfully.

"Ahh, the wild swans are disbanding..." Someone shouted among the surrounding knights.

As those wild swans disbanded, the 12 huge words in the sky above Xuanyuan Hill also gradually disappeared like a drop of ink falling into the pool.

The wild swans returned to their own nestles; however, the chaos in Xuanyuan Hill constantly fermented.

As long as those knights outside Xuanyuan Hill were not idiots, they would know that the contents of the 12 huge words were real. If not, how could Xuanyuan Hill became chaotic at once?

Han Zhengfang the finance minister of Taixia Country was the master of Heavens Reaching Church; Xuanyuan Hill was in great chaos tonight! What a shocking news! Those knights passed this news to all directions through remote-sensing crystals as soon as possible.

Right under Zhang Tie's foot, Zhang Tie saw a lot of elites of Supreme Court rushing out of Xuanyuan Hill along with some knights. The moment those knights exited Xuanyuan Hill, they had flown off towards far...

'These people are chasing after someone; whom are they chasing after?'

Zhang Tie sensed the locations of the two tracing feathers in his mind sea as he sneered. After that, he threw a glance at the emperor's imperial city. Only after thinking about it for a short while, Zhang Tie had turned around and flown towards Fairy Lake in the far.

'Han Yuanhong is escaping; the battle between Han Zhengfang and Meng Shidao has not come to an end. Given the current situation, I could deal with Han Yuanhong before returning to the sky outside emperor's imperial city for the final result of the battle.'

Zhang Tie then flew towards Fairy Lake. On the way, he encountered many knights.

As it was in the Treasures Meeting, most of the knights were gathering in Xuanyuan Hill over these years. Many knights were watching the fun outside Xuanyuan Hill too. Many knights had just run out of Xuanyuan Hill. As they couldn't fly in Xuanyuan Hill, their battle strength and flexibility would be greatly reduced over there. When Xuanyuan Hill was in great chaos, some smart knights who were close to the periphery of Xuanyuan Hill ran out of Xuanyuan Hill immediately. After jumping out of the swirl, they flew off into the sky outside Xuanyuan Hill and watched the development of the situation inside Xuanyuan Hill.

After leaving Xuanyuan Hill alone or in a group of two or three, these knights started to communicate with each other.

As too many knights were keeping a close watch on the situation inside Xuanyuan Hill in the sky outside Xuanyuan Hill, it was not that eye-catching when Zhang Tie flew over the sky.

However, Zhang Tie still met some familiar ones.

Fang Xinyi and the other knights that Zhang Tie met in the Golden Water River a few days ago along with that pair of "wild mandarin ducks" were also keeping a close watch on the situation inside Xuanyuan Hill. Zhang Tie directly passed them from hundreds of meters away. Zhang Tie didn't greet them or dodge away from them; he just threw a distant glance at them before flying away.

Zhang Tie noticed Fang Xinyi's team; Fang Xinyi's team also caught sight of Zhang Tie; especially Fang Xinyi who immediately widened her eyes when she caught sight of Zhang Tie although they were hundreds of meters away from each other. Closely after that, she revealed a faintly shocked expression; even her body became stiff all of a sudden. As knights, although Fang Xinyi and her partners didn't have lotus-flower eyes, the distance of hundreds of meters was also like 10 m in the eyes of commoners.

Zhang Tie flew as fast as a lightning bolt. In the blink of an eye,

he had passed by Fang Xinyi's team from hundreds of meters away and disappeared in front of their eyes.

"Ahh, who's that young knight? He looks even younger than 20 years old. I've met all the younger talents among the top 6 sects. But I've not heard about such a young knight!" A male knight on Fang Xinyi's side said with a faint frown as he looked at the direction where Zhang Tie was heading for, "Does he come from a major clan of Taixia Country? Now that he could promote to a knight at such a young age, he must be something!"

Fang Xinyi and her partners were all young elites among the top 6 sects; of course, they were very familiar with the elites of the top 6 sects.

"Yi, that's strange. Why do I feel this guy looks familiar? I might have already seen him somewhere." The female knight on Fang Xinyi's side called Ge Yuling muttered as she revealed a reminiscent look.

"Don't you feel that the young knight fly too fast?" You Chuzhi asked with a shocked look.

"Is that fast? We could also do it!" Another male knight said in an ill-affected manner.

"We cannot move so fast as easily as him. Given his easy look at such a high speed, he might be...might be..." You Chuzhi didn't say it. 'It's too shocking and unimaginable. A 20-year old earth knight! What a freak! Even the top 6 sects of Taixia Country couldn't culture such a young earth knight.'

"That guy might pretend to be that easy. Some young man who has just promoted to knights would always like to slap their own face until it's swollen in an effort to look imposing. How could a person promote to an earth knight at such a young age?" The male knight who was ill-affected just now argued.

When they were arguing about it out of curiosity, Fang Xinyi who

was always silent directly flew off towards Zhang Tie.

Fang Xinyi's partners were shocked by her sudden movement as they all followed after her.

Given the fight on Golden Water River that day, they thought that Fang Xinyi had caught sight of an enemy.

Zhang Tie soon disappeared in their vision. Fang Xinyi had already released her brilliant battle qi as she was speeding up abruptly. All of her partners had to make their utmost efforts to chase after Fang Xinyi like meteors.

After a few minutes, these meteors arrived at the vast and misty Fairy Lake consecutively. It was the shimmering yet endless lake under their foot; however, the young knight had already disappeared in their vision.

"Xinyi, do you know that guy..." Ge Yuling asked Fang Xinyi out of concern which all the others wanted to know too after they hid their brilliant protective battle qis.

Fang Xinyi let out a sigh suddenly as she glanced around all the others, "I'm afraid that the young knight was Zhang Mushen, Zhang Tie!"

After hearing Fang Xinyi's reply, all the other knights were stunned.

'That young man was Zhang Tie, Zhang Mushen, the No.1 black iron human knight who became famous around the country after the tragedy of Fuhai City?'

"Ahh, I remember it!" Ge Yuling suddenly shouted, "No wonder I felt that man looked a bit familiar. He was Zhang Tie. I've seen his look on the order for arrest!"

"If he's indeed Zhang Tie, why did he come to Xuanyuan Hill?"

You Chuzhi broke the silence.

"Because I'm too curious about that, I followed him here..." Fang

Xinyi stared blankly at the lake under her foot...

...

Chapter 1162: An Ambush

Zhang Tie had noticed Fang Xinyi's shocked look. He had not imagined that this woman could identify him so fast. However, at this critical moment, Zhang Tie didn't want anyone to ruin his good plan. Therefore, after flying away from Fang Xinyi and her partners, Zhang Tie accelerated all of a sudden and disappeared in their vision. In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had seen the Fairy Lake as he immediately dove inside.

The moment he entered the lake, Zhang Tie had triggered a hiding rune.

Being commonly affected by the hiding rune and the waterproof body, Zhang Tie became more concealed in water. He just swam towards a location in the center of Fairy Lake which was close to the northwest like a fish at the bottom of the lake.

2 minutes later, Fang Xinyi and her partners flew over the location where Zhang Tie dove into the lake as they failed to find him.

The Fairy Lake was deeper than 100 m. There were various fish in different sizes, waterweeds and riprap which looked like rugged hills in the lake. Additionally, Zhang Tie discovered a skeleton of a mutated beast longer than 40 m in the mud at the bottom of the lake. The skeleton had been soaking there for a few years. Given its size, such a mutated beast could threaten ships and travelers on the lake. When Xuanyuan Hill started to extend its metropolitan area, these mutated beasts hiding near the city would threaten the city and humans nearby. Therefore, they had long been driven away or killed by human powerhouses.

The bottom of Fairy Lake was like the bottom of a copper basin. Besides being deep, it was covered with pits; especially near the center of the lake. Some pits were even as large as a football court and as deep as 100 m. These pits were usually covered with lush

aquatic plants such as waterweeds as long as dozens of meters just like bizarre woods at the bottom of the lake.

The bottom of this lake was connected with some subterranean streams. As fresh water constantly flew in this lake from its bottom, this region became the paradise of fish.

Although it was Zhang Tie's first time to come to the bottom of Fairy Lake in reality, he had been very familiar with this place in trouble-reappearance situations.

When he entered Treasure Complex for the first time, Zhang Tie had already discovered that hidden tunnel in Han Yuanhong's study inside the Treasures Complex. Last night, he slid into the hidden tunnel in the incarnation of the little black beetle and left two tracing feathers inside in case of emergency. Zhang Tie felt that Han Yuanhong would probably escape through the hidden tunnel inside the Treasures Complex if he was still there when Zhang Tie aroused the chaos in Xuanyuan Hill. By then, his tracing feathers would help him a lot.

The fact proved that Han Yuanhong indeed chose to escape through that hidden tunnel when the real identity of his father was exposed to the public. However, Han Yuanhong didn't find that his trace had been under Zhang Tie's control since he entered the hidden tunnel.

That secret tunnel was connected with a complex maze-like underground drainage system under Xuanyuan Hill. Actually, that huge underground drainage system was just a camouflage as it contained another secret. If someone escaped away from the hidden tunnel, the hunters must think that the one who escaped wanted to leave Xuanyuan Hill through the exits of that drainage system. However, Heavens Reaching Church or Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong had modified the underground drainage system. After the modification, they could directly escape to the location in the center of Fairy Lake being close to the northwest through a secret subterranean stream below the underground

drainage system of Xuanyuan Hill.

Without lotus-flower eyes and his hearty exploration in the trouble-reappearance situation, Zhang Tie couldn't discover that secret at all.

The moving direction of the two tracing feathers told Zhang Tie about Han Yuanhong's route of escape. The most mysterious and unimaginable trick implied that the arrangement that the Supreme Court made to block Han Yuanhong at the exits of the underground drainage system of Xuanyuan Hill was destined to be in vain.

At the bottom of an inconspicuous pit which was deeper than 50 m and covered about 8,000 square meters, there was an entrance of a subterranean stream whose diameter was about 2 m. Water flew out of the subterranean stream from this entrance.

On both sides of the entrance, there were many waterweeds with huge crowns longer than 20 m. This was the hidden exit of that secret tunnel.

When Zhang Tie arrived here, a shoal of semi-transparent small fish as large as one's finger with a small spine in their mouth was scared away. They looked like loaches.

After coming to the top of the entrance of the tunnel, Zhang Tie hid himself well. Meanwhile, he took out a unique gold-eaten dagger being covered with bizarre screw threads as he concealed his qi and waited for the arrival of Han Yuanhong.

When Zhang Tie remained still, his body gradually changed its color and looked as same as the waterweeds and stones in the surroundings as if he had fully integrated with the water, releasing no qi at all.

Sometimes, animals had more sensitive senses than humans. Take that shoal of bizarre small fish as an instance, the moment they discovered Zhang Tie, they had escaped far away. Being small,

they could move very flexibly in water.

Watching the shoal of special small fish escaping away from here at their highest speed, Zhang Tie made a special hand gesture by hands. Closely after that, those small fish swam back and moved around the entrance of the tunnel once again.

Zhang Tie closed his eyes as he waited there patiently.

...

Being as flurried as a stray dog and fish that escaped away from a fishing net. Han Yuanhong fit this situation pretty well.

The explosive sound behind him a few minutes ago reminded him that someone had already discovered the secret tunnel and were hunting him. The alchemist's bomb destroyed a 100-m long section of the tunnel. Besides blocking the hunters, this explosion also passed a false news to the hunters——Han Yuanhong was going to escape from one exit of the underground drainage system of Xuanyuan Hill.

However, the narrow success in tactics couldn't cover the sudden collapse of the strategy of Heavens Reaching Church and Han Clan in Xuanyuan Hill.

Han Yuanhong's head was still buzzing until now. He was confused about why it suddenly deteriorated to such a bad situation.

Of course, it was caused by those wild swans; however, he didn't know who was on the back of these wild swans. Neither his father Han Zhengfang knew it. As it was too urgent, when he reported the emergency to Han Zhengfang through the remote-sensing crystal, he only received one word——escape!

This word completely shattered the fluke mind of Han Yuanhong.

As it was told by his father who was in the emperor' imperial city, it meant that his father didn't have any trump card to respond to it

anymore. At this critical moment, they could only escape away from Xuanyuan Hill at first. If they couldn't, they would die here for sure. Therefore, his father put it straightforwardly.

Yesterday, Han Yuanhong was dreaming about becoming the human crown prince of Taixia Country and could ascend to the throne of the emperor of Taixia country one day. In the blink of an eye, he had been escaping in the sewer filled with rats and sewage. He only thought about escaping away from Xuanyuan Hill at this moment. As long as he could make it, he would have a chance to reinvigorate his undertakings in Taixia Country!

Han Yuanhong knew that his father and Heavens Reaching Church had some arrangements and subordinates in Xuanyuan Hill; however, at this critical moment, they could only care about themselves. Only when they escaped away from Xuanyuan Hill could they have a bright future.

Of course, it was cool for them to summon wind and call for rain in the enemy's camp in the identities of the bright golden master and master of Gold and Power Law; sometimes, they could even play a great role; however, this cool sense also carried a price. As long as they met such an emergency, everything that they had prepared would become in vain; additionally, they would be mired in great dangers.

The moment Han Zhengfang entered the secret tunnel, he had taken a vial of night viewing medicament. With the effect of the night viewing medicament, he could see clearly in the underground drainage system even if it was pitch-dark inside.

The underground drainage system of Xuanyuan Hill was a magnificent engineering project. The bottom of the main sewer of the underground drainage system was available to two buses shoulder to shoulder easily.

However, there was no bus in the sewer at this moment, but only rats and various disgusting smells.

Han Yuanhong had exerted his full efforts as an earth knight. Although he couldn't fly, he moved very fast. When he passed by, those rats had not even responded to it.

Han Yuanhong knew how the Supreme Court would hunt for him.

When he ran, he took out some vials of special medicament from his portable space-teleportation item and sprayed them behind him. The medicament soon volatilized in the air behind him. The medicament could disrupt the smells of the dogs of Supreme Court and tracing powerhouses who had awakened a special bloodline. As a result, they could not get hang of his trace.

He had even prepared more than one secret tunnels for escaping away from Xuanyuan Hill, it was not strange for him to make some more preventive measures.

In Han Yuanhong's opinion, this was his only loophole through which Supreme Court could get hang of his trace. As long as he eliminated this loophole, nobody could catch him. As long as an earth knight escaped away from Xuanyuan Hill, he would be as free as a dragon returning to the ocean. It would be very difficult to capture him...

Now that the wanted criminals across Taixia Country could make it, Han Yuanhong could make it too.

After making twists and turns in the broad sewers, Han Yuanhong finally arrived at a familiar place. Although this place was filled with sewage which was at least 2 m in height like that in other places, when he arrived here, he didn't hear any sound behind him; therefore, Han Yuanhong finally became reassured.

Closely after that, Han Yuanhong released his protective battle qi to wrap himself before entering the sewage regardless of the stink, causing no spray at all.

As he was escaping instead of attending a ball, he didn't have

time to care about the disgusting stink anymore. It was said that some prisoners would choose to escape away from prisons through cesspits. Of course, Han Yuanhong was facing a much better situation. It was just sewage; instead of cesspit; additionally, he had isolated his body from the sewage using his protective battle qi. He only needed to bear it for the time being. Even if it was a cesspit, he would choose to enter it without any hesitation.

Han Yuanhong entered the 2-m deeper sewage.

The visibility in the sewage was very low. However, under the influence of the night viewing medicament, he could still see something; additionally, he constantly fumbled by hand. Therefore, he soon approached the wall at the bottom of the sewer and touched that familiar slate.

The moment he released his battle qi, Han Zhengfang immediately caught the slate which weighed hundreds of kilograms. He opened the slate and exposed the entrance of a tunnel leading upwards. The tunnel was still filled with sewage.

Han Yuanhong lowered his body and entered that tunnel. After that, he turned around and put the slate to its original place so that people could not discover this tunnel easily.

After floating up about 2 m, Han Yuanhong stepped onto the steps. After some steps, he completely left the water when he concealed his protective battle qi.

The stony steps were still extending upwards with an inclination. After ascending to 7-8 m higher, the secret tunnel abruptly turned downwards and reached over 100 m deep underground.

Actually, the elites of Supreme Court might not find him even if he hid here for a couple of months. Because this place was too concealed and was out of people's imagination. Only Han Yuanhong knew this escape passage; even Han Zhengfang didn't know the concret entrance of this escape passage although he knew that Han Yuanhong had such a preparation. It must be very

urgent when this escape passage was put in use. Therefore, the fewer people knew this escape passage, the better.

However, Han Yuanhong dared not risk it. If the elites of Supreme Court couldn't find him at the exits of the underground drainage system, they would definitely realize that Han Yuanhong was still in Xuanyuan Hill. With the overall strength of the Supreme Court, they might search over the entire underground drainage system inch by inch although it would cost them some time. Therefore, the longer he stayed here, the possibility of him being exposed would be more. The best method was to escape away from Xuanyuan Hill before the Supreme Court and Xuanyuan Hill completely mobilized their strength to look for him.

The end of the downwards stone steps was a several meters wide subterranean stream leading to Fairy Lake. Han Yuanhong immediately jumped into the subterranean stream.

Han Yuanhong couldn't swim well. Before he promoted to a knight, he was only good enough to not drown.

However, after he promoted to a knight, swimming was not a problem for him anymore. As a knight, he could casually stay in the water for a few hours; additionally, he could swim as flexibly as fish based on the strong controlling ability of his body and sensing capability of his knight's consciousness about water flow.

Being pushed by the water flow of the subterranean stream, it only took Han Yuanhong more than half an hour to see the exit of this subterranean stream in Fairy Lake.

The water here was pretty crystal, which had a very high visibility. If he fully released his protective battle qi, he would suffer a great resistance in water and could not easily access some narrow space and bends. Therefore, Han Yuanhong only released a thin protective battle qi.

When he approached the exit, Han Yuanhong became very meticulous. He didn't rush out of the exit at once; instead, he

sensed the situation near the exit using his knight's consciousness. After not finding any abnormal situation, he caught sight of the shoal of tiny glass fish swimming leisurely at the exit.

When he caught sight of the shoal of glassfish, Han Yuanhong became reassured completely. He knew that this fish was a rare fish for an appreciative purpose which only existed in Fairy Lake. This fish liked to live at the bottom of the lake and could not be caught by a fishing net. Additionally, this fish was very timid and sensitive in water. As long as they sensed any abnormal situation in water, they would escape in all directions. Even people who were good at swimming could barely catch them in water. However, as these fish were transparent and looked pretty beautiful under fluorite lamps, some rich men in Xuanyuan Hill would like to raise them in their own fish jars for the appreciative purpose.

Now that these glass fish were swimming leisurely at the exit, it indicated that nobody else was near the exit.

Han Yuanhong became reassured; he then swam towards the exit of the tunnel as he felt like having escaped away from the hunt of the elites of Supreme Court.

Before Han Yuanhong exited the tunnel, he had been discovered by the shoal of glassfish. Closely after that, they swam away flexibly.

'Wait, when the demons army launches a strike, this father will come back!'

Han Yuanhong swore inside.

The moment Han Yuanhong reached the exit and became reassured mentally and physically...the rear of his heart had been pierced through by the golden-eaten dagger silently which carried a terrifying strength. The gold-eaten dagger looked like a venomous snake that drilled out of water or a sickle in the hand of the god of death...

Before Han Yuanhong's thin protective battle qi prevented the dagger for 0.01 second, his body had been drilled through.

Closely after the heart-wrenching pain, Han Yuanhong's neck was silently and tightly reined by an extremely strong arm which was as sturdy as a dragon.

If Han Yuanhong's neck was regarded as a rail, it would be broken into halves by the strength from that strong arm like a noodle. However, as an earth knight, Han Yuanhong's neck should at least be a bit more dignified and stronger than a rail. Even in this situation, Zhang Tie could not kill him immediately only by reining his neck.

Han Yuanhong wanted to scream; however, he couldn't utter a sound. The strength was so terrifying that his eyes almost popped out of his eye sockets. At the same time, he caught sight of a shiny long sword which was giving out cold killing intent. The longsword itself flew towards him and slashed against his body...

'So fast!'

It was the last clear whim that occurred to Han Yuanhong's mind...

Chapter 1163: Arousing a Shock

In the evening, a huge bright red battle qi tornado rushed into the sky from the center of Fairy Lake, causing a great shock in the surroundings in a split second...

Battle qi tornado indicated a battle between earth knights; especially in the evening, an earth knight's battle qi tornado could almost be seen within one thousand square miles.

Given the imposing manner of this battle qi tornado, the one who released it should be at least a high-rank earth knight.

Fang Xinyi and her partners followed Zhang Tie here; after losing their target, they flew around Fairy Lake for quite a while in vain. When they were about to leave Fairy Lake, they suddenly saw a huge battle qi tornado rushing into the sky from the center of Fairy Lake.

"Let go take a look over there!" Fang Xinyi flew towards where the battle qi rose up, closely followed by her partners.

Xuanyuan Hill looked like a pot of messy porridge tonight which contained too many secrets. At the beginning, all the wild swans near Xuanyuan Hill became berserk. Closely after that, the 12 huge words composed of wild swans in the sky completely sent Xuanyuan Hill into chaos. Even Zhang Tie flashed by Xuanyuan Hill. As the disciples of the top sects in Taixia Country, now that they had encountered this event, they had to be sensitive about everything that happened in Xuanyuan Hill out of individual curiosity or in order to respond to their masters' questions.

Fang Xinyi and her partners flew towards the center of Fairy Lake at their fastest speeds like meteors. The battle qi tornado that rushed into the sky didn't move and looked pretty eye-catching; only after a few seconds, the battle qi tornado disappeared all of a sudden.

After a few minutes, they had arrived at the location where the battle qi tornado rushed up into the sky. It was close to the northwest in the center of Fairy Lake.

It was normal on the water. Additionally, they didn't see anyone fly away from here just now. After suspending in the sky and exchanging a glance with each other, those youngsters nodded towards each other as they dove into the lake at the same time.

The water of Fairy Lake was very crystal. Being not far away from where they entered the water, a wide area of muddy water was slowly rolling in a deep pit being covered with many waterweeds.

They meticulously approached there and didn't find anybody. There was a broken waterweed in the rolling muddy water. Besides, there was a hole inside while the water of a subterranean stream was flowing out of the hole and gradually diluting the muddy water.

"I could smell blood in the water here. As the blood is mixing with mud, it could be barely identified; but my cultivation method makes me sensitive to fresh blood..." You Chuzhi told all the others at present in a secret way with a solemn look.

"Someone fought here just now!"

"One of them was at least an earth knight!"

These young knights were not idiots. They immediately reached many conclusions. The opponent who could let an earth knight release his battle qi tornado probably be an earth knight on the same level or a knight on a higher or lower level. If the opponent was on a higher level, the earth knight who released his battle qi tornado had already been killed; if the opponent was on a lower level, it indicated that the earth knight had already killed a black iron knight. Each possibility brought Fang Xinyi and her partners a great stress.

"It seems that we could access this subterranean stream, should we enter it?" Someone proposed a suggestion.

"Given the direction of the water flow, this subterranean river might pass by Xuanyuan Hill. As Xuanyuan Hill is in chaos, if we enter Xuanyuan Hill in this way, we might arouse a misunderstanding in the sensitive region..." Fang Xinyi shook her head calmly. As they all came from the top sects in Taixia Country, which were born to be contradictory with the imperial court and imperial households of Taixia Country. If they entered Xuanyuan Hill; especially in some sensitive region of Xuanyuan Hill in such a secret way, they would indeed have big trouble.

There was one point that Fang Xinyi had not pointed out. However, they all knew it, namely, if the knight who appeared here just now was also in the subterranean stream at this moment, they would face a great danger if they entered this narrow and strange place. Curiosity killed the cat, also knights.

"Chuzhi, can you sense the trace of the person who bled in the water? If that person is bleeding, he might leave some clues in water." Ge Yuling asked as the others moved their eyes onto You Chuzhi.

You Chuzhi shook his head as he replied, "I could only sense the existence of fresh blood in this small region. It's diffusing. There's no fresh blood in other places. I guess the one who bled just now have already stopped bleeding, leaving no trace anymore!"

When they talked with each other in a secret way, another 3 knights entered the water. At the sight of these people over here, they instantly swam towards here.

One earth knight and two black iron knights; all of them were wearing uniforms of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country. It seemed that the rising battle qi tornado not only attracted Fang Xinyi and her partners but also some vigilant powerhouses of Supreme Court near Fairy Lake.

"Who are you?" The moment they arrived here, the earth knight had asked about the identities of Fang Xinyi and her partners.

"We're traveling in Xuanyuan Hill. Just now, we were near Fairy Lake. At the sight of the battle qi tornado, we especially came over here to take a look!" A knight on Fang Xinyi's side replied frankly.

After hearing his explanation, the earth knight of Supreme Court nodded silently. Because they had indeed seen some people flying in front of them with their brilliant protective battle qis which looked like meteors, although they were far away from Fang Xinyi and her partners; additionally, the number of members of Fang Xinyi's team corresponded with that of the "meteors".

The earth knight of Supreme Court slowed down his voice. He didn't even waste time inquiring about the concrete identities and names of Fang Xinyi's team members; instead, he put it straightforwardly, "Have you seen the one who released his battle qi tornado just now?"

"When we arrived here, we didn't see anybody but the muddy water. It seems that there was a transient fight here just now; additionally, the blood here has already diffused!"

"Didn't you see anyone leaving here?"

"No!"

"Alright, thanks!" The earth knight glanced around Fang Xinyi and her partners before warning them seriously, "It's a sensitive period in Xuanyuan Hill, as you're just travelers, watch out yourselves; do not be involved in the contradictions!"

After saying that, the earth knight threw a glance at the subterranean stream before drilling inside. Before entering it, he even told the other two black iron knights to look for suspicious places in the surroundings.

Fang Xinyi and her partners could only leave the water.

...

After flying out of Fairy Lake, they suspended in the sky and exchanged glances with each other silently. What happened in Xuanyuan Hill and what they encountered outside Xuanyuan Hill tonight were completely out of the limits of their abilities and knowledge. Previously, they were all proud of themselves as they were all elites of top sects in Taixia Country. However, tonight, they found that they could do nothing but be onlookers when a major event broke out in Xuanyuan Hill. They even lost their target; therefore, Fang Xinyi and her partners, especially those male knights felt frustrated more or less.

"Whether the earth knight of Supreme Court had already guessed our identities and backgrounds? Therefore, he warned us in the end!" A male knight broke the silence.

"Maybe, the powerhouses of the Supreme Court always have sharp eyes!"

"When we chased Zhang Tie all the way to the Fairy Lake, we lost our target; closely after that, a battle qi tornado appeared; whether the battle qi tornado is related to Zhang Tie?" You Chuzhi suddenly asked after being silent for a second.

"It's still too early for us to reach such a conclusion. But the time that Zhang Tie appeared in Xuanyuan Hill was indeed a bit strange. We'd better not expose this secret for the time being. We will report it to our masters at first. The experience and information sources of the elders in our sects could never be matched by us. They will give us an explanation!" Fang Xinyi said calmly.

All the others nodded. When they stayed with Fang Xinyi over these days, they all found that Fang Xinyi was intelligent and could always hit the key points; although being tranquil and elegant, she could always be decisive at critical moments. Gradually, they all thought that Fang Xinyi's words were reasonable.

Closely after that, these young elites left Fairy Lake...

...

When Fang Xinyi's team left Fairy Lake and the two black iron knights of Supreme Court carefully searched over the neighborhoods in water, Zhang Tie was refining the last bit of water elements from the incomplete water chakra of Han Yuanhong.

After being severely wounded, Han Yuanhong finally exhaled his final breath...

Chapter 1164: Second Kill

Knights had very strong vitality, which commoners might find unimaginable.

Even a common fighter would not die right away after his head was chopped off on the battlefield. Actually, after an ordinary knight's head was chopped off, he would still be clear-minded for dozens of seconds, even a few minutes. Sometimes, he could still blink his eyes while trying to shriek miserably or say something. Even if one fighter suffered from an unimaginable, fatal wound, he might also stick to a few hours in a miraculous way. After experiencing so many battles, whether large or small, Zhang Tie had witnessed and encountered such similar occasions.

Even commoners could display a strong vitality in emergencies, not to mention an earth knight.

When the gold-eaten dagger entered Han Yuanhong's body, it broke Han Yuanhong's heart. Closely after that, Zhang Tie released his battle qi and shattered his heart into pieces. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie manipulated a longsword to open a terrifying wound from Han Yuanhong's chest to his lower abdomen, breaking Han Yuanhong's guts severely.

Although suffering such severe wounds, Han Yuanhong didn't die immediately; instead, his muscles all over shrunk and closed the wounds in a split second. Meanwhile, Han Yuanhong released his battle qi tornado and was going to launch a counter-attack...

Of course, Han Yuanhong would not succeed his counter-attack. If Zhang Tie lost this battle when he had taken the initiative, he deserved the death.

Han Yuanhong exerted his full efforts to hit Zhang Tie's face using the rear of his head; however, Zhang Tie directly crashed his face against Han Yuanhong's rear of head forcefully. This time, Han Yuanhong further tasted Zhang Tie's iron body which was

benefited by iron-body fruits. As a result, Zhang Tie was firm; however, sparkles flew before Han Yuanhong's eyes as he spurted out a mouthful of blood.

Almost at the same time, Han Yuanhong thrust his right elbow against Zhang Tie's chest ferociously. Zhang Tie accepted it frankly safe and sound; at the same time, one snake-shaped short dagger suddenly appeared in Han Yuanhong's right hand as it was stabbed against Zhang Tie's back. However, Zhang Tie nipped it between his arm and his body.

Before Han Yuanhong made his 4th counter-attack, Zhang Tie had already thrust onto Han Yuanhong's tailbone forcefully using his knee. In a split second, Han Yuanhong's pelvic bone was shattered. At the same time, the longsword under Zhang Tie's spiritual control stabbed against Han Yuanhong's lower abdomen for hundreds of times, messing up his qi sea.

When two earth knights started a close combat, they would always risk their lives. In only a few seconds, the breathtaking, cruel and bloody close combat had come to an end. Han Yuanhong's final struggles were collapsed by Zhang Tie.

Although Han Yuanhong failed in his counter-attack, since his battle qi tornado rose up a few seconds ago, Zhang Tie had known that this location had been exposed. As there were so many knights outside Xuanyuan Hill, as long as they caught sight of this battle qi tornado, knight-level powerhouses of Supreme Court and the other onlookers would arrive here.

As the water smelt bloody.

Zhang Tie immediately stomped onto the mud at the bottom of the lake, causing a large amount of mud to mix with water. Closely after that, Zhang Tie sped up as he opened the siphon tunnel connecting Castle of Black Iron. Together with Han Yuanhong in his hand, Zhang Tie flashed far away in water at a speed faster than knight's flight speed in the sky.

When Zhang Tie flashed far away in water, he triggered his purgatory samsara method. Before Han Yuanhong died, Zhang Tie started to refine Han Yuanhong's water chakra.

When Fang Xinyi and her partners arrived at the spot, as was predicted by Zhang Tie, they were attracted by the muddy water immediately. However, at that time, Zhang Tie had already arrived at 60 miles away and stopped in a riprap at the bottom of the lake. Nobody could imagine that anyone could move so fast in water.

...

Han Yuanhong was the most powerful earth knight that Zhang Tie had ever seen.

Zhang Tie estimated that Han Yuanhong's battle strength was even higher than that of Old Monster Qi, that demon knight who had been sacrificed in the bloody sacrifice furnace and Mountain Lifting Hermit.

Pitifully, Han Yuanhong met Zhang Tie. An ambush plus the strike of a divine dominator, Han Yuanhong actually faced the attack of more than two Zhang Tie. Any earth knight would be killed facing such a powerful raid.

What was more pessimistic was that Han Yuanhong didn't know who killed him until death. He always wanted to turn around to see Zhang Tie's face; however, before Zhang Tie's face reflected in Han Yuanhong's eyes, his eyes had completely lost brilliance as he widely opened his eyes unwillingly.

Before death, Han Yuanhong felt too depressed and confused. He couldn't think through how he was ambushed at the exit of the escape passage although he behaved so mysteriously; additionally, the one who ambushed him was too terrifying. There was one moment that Han Yuanhong even thought that he was ambushed by a shadow knight. Because shadow knights who had formed water chakra could have a powerful battle strength in water; additionally, shadow knights excelled at concealing themselves in

water. All these features fit the situation.

Han Yuanhong could only see the excessively young arm over his neck. Given the skin on the arm, it should belong to a teenager. Although it didn't look as sturdy as that of Hercules, the strength of this arm made him despaired. The pure physical strength from that arm made Han Yuanhong think that it was not muscles in the arm, but some underground dragons who were drawing a capstan. What was more despairing was that the one who ambushed him was not a shadow knight, but an earth knight who was refining his water chakra with a powerful external strength in a secret method in which the alchemist demon ranked first on the wanted list of the Supreme Court of Taixia Country and was unrivaled among humans and demons ——Purgatory Samsara Method.

Han Yuanhong was pushed into the hell by Purgatory Samsara Method.

'Everything in Xuanyuan Hill today is related to alchemist demon. It must be alchemist demon's disciple or subordinate who ambushes me. As alchemist demon is already a heavenly knight, he would not absorb water-element crystals anymore. Only earth knight would absorb water elements in Purgatory Samsara Method. I must have seen this person. I've been trapped by this guy's secret method unconsciously. This person's secret method might be similar to the soul-chasing spiritual butterfly. Therefore, he could get hang of my trace; additionally, this person also knows the secret identity of my father.' Han Yuanhong suddenly became clear-minded at the end of his life while his face turned brilliant once again. He had figured out many questions in a split second. If possible, he would send a message to his father using remote-sensing crystal at this moment; pitifully, all of his remote-sensing crystals had been taken away since he lost his ability to launch a counter-attack. Besides ambushing him, that person was also very meticulous and spared no chance for Han Yuanhong to reverse the result of the battle.

At the end of his life, Han Yuanhong exerted his full strength as he uttered, "Who...are...you?"

"Guess..."

After being silent for a second, the one on his back replied which sounded pretty young. At this moment, the two words sounded a bit humorous more or less.

Han Yuanhong couldn't guess it; neither could he laugh out; he just widely opened his eyes until death.

...

Being in water, Zhang Tie just watched Han Yuanhong as if he was looking at a dead fish. When he found Han Yuanhong's eyes faded brilliance and the faint shocked expression and anguished twist on Han Yuanhong's face, Zhang Tie felt calm as if nothing had happened.

"Hoho, how about that? I killed you. Forgot to tell you, I also killed your young brother. As you father wants to kill me and all of my family members, I could only kill you." Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile as he said, "You're the second kill that I prepared for your family; there's only one left!"

If it was a kittie or a puppy that had just been flattened to death by a car on the road, Zhang Tie might feel a bit sympathetic or a bit sad; however, since he witnessed how demons and Three-eye Association turned hundreds of millions of alive people into demonized puppets in Waii Subcontinent, Zhang Tie's heart had turned extremely cold towards demons and all the lackeys of demons. He would never pity any of those sons of b*tches. As for Zhang Tie, even though these b*stards were alive, they were just dried, spiritless firewoods. He would not have any mood swings even if he split these b*stards into pieces and burned them like burning firewoods.

If it were in another place, Zhang Tie could have more time to

deal with Han Yuanhong without arousing the attention of anyone else. If so, Han Yuanhong might still be alive at this moment. After refining his water chakra in Purgatory Samsara Method, Zhang Tie would really throw this b*stard into bloody sacrifice furnace and burn it like burning firewood. He would only regard it as recycling wastes. However, at the critical moment, he had to kill the powerful earth knight in the shortest period in terms of ambush. He was not allowed to have any fluke mind when in the fight. He had to end the battle as fast as possible in the most ferocious way. To capture an earth knight alive was not as difficult as killing an earth knight. When he shattered Han Yuanhong's heart into pieces, Han Yuanhong had been destined to die; it was just a matter of time.

The short period that Han Yuanhong could stand based on his tenacious vitality was also required by Zhang Tie as he could refine Han Yuanhong's water chakra Purgatory Samsara Method during this period.

It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that he could refine Han Yuanhong's water chakra completely in such a short period. At such a critical moment, Zhang Tie thought that he was lucky enough if he could refine half of Han Yuanhong's water chakra.

'He must have taken too many rare tonics. What a strong vitality! Hahaha...' Zhang Tie laughed out.

If he knew this result, Han Yuanhong might be regretful that he didn't choose to commit suicide at the beginning.

Chapter 1165: Entering the Emperor's Imperial City

After throwing the last glance at Han Yuanhong's corpse, Zhang Tie directly teleported his corpse into Castle of Black Iron without even searching over his body.

As the bright golden master of Gold and Power Law, the host of Gold and Power Market and the young master of Heavens Reaching Church, Han Yuanhong must have a lot of rare items. However, Zhang Tie didn't have time to search over his corpse at this moment. Heller could easily complete that for him.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't expect too much from Han Yuanhong's belongings. Whatever, he could get at least a space-teleportation item.

"He's yours, Heller, thanks!"

"Castle Lord, don't worry. I will give your surprise when you return to Castle of Black Iron next time!" Heller's voice sounded a bit strange; however, Zhang Tie didn't think too much about it because it was not the right time for him to review his booties.

After doing that, Zhang Tie thought for a few seconds before taking out a full-body battle armor from Castle of Black Iron.

This set of full-body battle armor was specially made by Edward for Zhang Tie. It had stayed too long in Castle of Black Iron. Because Zhang Tie didn't join frontline battlefield lately, he didn't wear it.

Being black all over, the full-body battle armor was full of killing intent. As a rune weapons master, Edward's battle armor always had a soul and theme. The inspiration of this battle armor originated from the pool of chaos in Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, it was also named Chaos.

It could turn all the strikes into chaos. The entire armor had a

super strong protective force. Additionally, it bred a terrifying killing intent invisibly. The pointed horn on the helmet, the war spikes on the shoulders, the sharp crescent-shaped sabers on the arms and the teeth on the pair of caligas carried a terrifying killing intent. In order to adapt to Zhang Tie's ability, there were even some special tricks on the back of the battle armor. The entire battle armor could attack and defend the enemy at the same time in a commanding way.

The Chaos was made of abyss magical iron in Earth-elements Realm and mithril alloy in Waii Subcontinent. Additionally, the battle armor was attached to a LV 4 firmness rune effect, a LV 4 sharpness rune effect and an 18% rune recovery effect which broke through the bottleneck of knight's black iron effect.

The entire Chaos was composed of 39 parts and weighed over 600 kg. It might take commoners about 3-5 minutes to put it on without the help of others; however, it was too simple for Zhang Tie to put it on.

After being taken out of Castle of Black Iron, the whole set of battle armor floated in front of Zhang Tie with crossed arms in an anthropomorphous shape. Both Zhang Tie and the whole set of battle armor were in the space isolated by his protective battle qi in water.

Zhang Tie looked at the structure of the battle armor for a short while. After that, he triggered his ability as a divine dominator to separate the whole set of battle armor in a split second using his spirit. Closely after that, the 39 parts of the battle armor flew towards his body parts respectively. With click-clacks caused by the occlusions between metal parts, Zhang Tie had put on the whole set of battle armor in less than 2 seconds. Being wrapped by the Chaos, Zhang Tie changed his look utterly.

Nobody else among humans might put on the whole set of battle armor at such a fast speed, even if he was also a divine dominator. Because Zhang Tie also had multi-tasking ability besides being a

divine dominator. Benefited from the two abilities, Zhang Tie could realize such a high efficiency.

In a split second, Zhang Tie recalled the hero in a manga that he read when he was young. That hero also wore a whole set of marvelous battle armor. As long as the hero summoned, the marvelous battle armor would appear out of the void in parts; meanwhile, the parts of the battle armor would fly towards the hero automatically, granting a super strong ability to the hero. Everything in front of Zhang Tie's eyes was extremely similar to that in the manga.

Zhang Tie's entire face was covered by the helmet, except for two triangular one-way visible dark crystals near his eyes through which he could see outside; however, the others couldn't even see his eyes.

The Chaos was designed delicately in each detail. The breathing holes were below ears like shark's gills. In this way, the most fragile face could be well protected; additionally, when he flew rapidly, he would not feel uncomfortable facing the wind.

'Unconsciously, I've already been able to be the hero that I worshiped when I was young whenever I want.'

After putting on the Chaos, the hiding rune also took effect on the Chaos, causing the black battle armor looming in water.

Inside the battle armor, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. Closely after that, he shot out of the water like a bat out of the hell and entered the sky...

He was already over 60 miles away from the center of Fairy Lake and was close to the bank of Fairy Lake. The closest knights were over 60 miles away from him; additionally, Zhang Tie had triggered his hiding rune effect. Of course, he didn't need to worry about being discovered by others.

Since he put on the battle armor, Zhang Tie had been ready for

flying using the ability of divine dominator. As for Zhang Tie, it was much easier for him to manipulate his battle armor to fly using the ability of divine dominator.

When he exited the water, he maintained his flight speed at about 300 m per second. He kept ascending. In less than 2 minutes, Zhang Tie had broken through the troposphere which was closest to the earth and entered the stratosphere. In the stratosphere, there were fewer people. Zhang Tie became reassured as he accelerated and reached 3 times that of the speed of sound in a split second, causing a sonic boom. When he reached the top of the stratosphere, which was about 60 miles away from the earth, he turned and flew towards Xuanyuan Hill.

Under his lotus-flower eyes, although Zhang Tie was far away from the center of emperor's imperial city in Xuanyuan Hill, he could still see clearly the visional Far-ancient Moral Stele floating above Sincerity Garden in the emperor's imperial city.

Now that the visional Far-ancient Moral Stele was still above Sincerity Garden, it indicated that the battle in Sincerity Garden had not come to an end. As was imagined by Zhang Tie, the battle between high-level knights would not come to an end in a short period. Although he had already ambushed and killed Han Yuanhong, the battle in Sincerity Garden had not come to an end yet.

At the speed of about 1,000 m per second, soon after leaving the rim of Xuanyuan Hill, he had already approached the no-fly zone of Xuanyuan Hill at a higher place in the sky.

The no-fly zone of Lion Fortress was a pot cover, knights could fly as long as they were out of this pot cover. By contrast, Xuanyuan Hill was a deep conical well. Starting from the earth, the no-fly zone of Xuanyuan Hill included the atmosphere even space above Xuanyuan Hill. Take the Xuanyuan Hill on the earth as the bottom of this conical well, the no-fly zone of Xuanyuan Hill was like a huge cone. The higher it was, the larger the space of the no-

fly zone would be and the more difficult it would be for knights to approach Xuanyuan Hill.

Such a no-fly zone was very powerful. It was actually borderless. However, it could also protect knights indirectly. Because if knights fell off when they entered the no-fly zone of Xuanyuan Hill from a high place, they would probably get out of the fly-no zone and recover their flying ability in case of death.

Powerhouses were always brave. After grasping the flying skill under the control of divine dominator, Zhang Tie immediately entered the no-fly zone of Xuanyuan Hill which was regarded as an impasse by all the knights below sage-level. Closely after that, he started to overlook the entire Xuanyuan Hill using his lotus-flower eyes.

It was less than 1 hour since Zhang Tie left here, during which period, Xuanyuan Hill seemed to become more chaotic.

The battle qi smoke on the bank of Golden Water River just now had already disappeared; however, many more places caught big fires. The army that was stationed outside Xuanyuan Hill had already entered Xuanyuan Hill in batches. No more battles between knights could be seen on the ground outside the emperor's imperial city. Zhang Tie wondered whether those knight-level powerhouses of Heavens Reaching Church in Xuanyuan Hill had been caught or were hiding their identities to escape; however, he saw thousands of people making terrors and chaos in Xuanyuan Hill by killing people and setting fires in all directions like carrying out a guerrilla. The army and the elites of Supreme Court were encircling and annihilating these b*stards.

Needless to say, these people were dare-to-die fighters that Heavens Reaching Church had arranged in Xuanyuan Hill with the ability of Gold and Power Law or the Finance Minister's Mansion or under the control of demonized puppet worms. These people ranked between LV 9 and LV 15, who were easily dealt with by knights; however, given their great population, they could cause

great chaos in Xuanyuan Hill; especially in the evening.

When he entered the emperor's imperial city of Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Tie immediately reduced his speed to below the speed of sound and flew silently. Being affected by his master-level hiding rune effect, he could not be discovered in the black sky at all. Closely after that, he lowered his height to about dozens of miles away from the earth.

The imperial palace in the emperor's imperial city looked nothing special. Watching it from over 20 miles high, Zhang Tie found the imperial palace of Xuanyuan Hill on the earth was just a huge cubic complex like a city of the city. Besides being magnificent, it was nothing special. However, Zhang Tie could feel a heart-wrenching qi from the imperial palace. When he recalled that Heller told him that there might be a rarity which could match Castle of Black Iron inside the imperial palace of Xuanyuan Hill and there might be super powerhouses on the back of imperial palace, Zhang Tie became vigilant; he didn't fly over the top of the imperial palace; instead, he detoured the imperial palace from afar and directly came to the top of Sincerity Garden...

The moment Zhang Tie arrived at the top of Sincerity Garden, the dense grey mist above the Sincerity Garden instantly changed greatly...

Chapter 1166: The Fierce Fight

Within the semi-sage realm, the bloody sea surged heavily; an immortal beast which looked like both tortoise and dragon looked up and roared, causing extremely high surging billows. Meng Shidao was lifting the Far-ancient Moral Stele by one hand with swaying hair and sparkling eyes as if he could suppress everything...

As Meng Shidao constantly recited sutras, the resonance of sutras filled the entire semi-sage realm. Golden inscriptions constantly appeared on the pitch dark Far-ancient Moral Stele. Closely after that, those golden inscriptions directly jumped out of the stele like spiritual living beings. As those inscriptions fell off, the strikes from earth element, water element, wind element and fire element in the semi-sage realm became irresistible.

The moment the inscriptions that mercy was the heart of universal laws like the earth which could carry everything fell off, all the earth element in the elements realm became berserk. Within the semi-sage realm, numerous spikes rushed as high as 1,000 m from the earth, causing the immortal beast to badly mutate; at the same time, the earth under the bloody sea also fluctuated like a see-saw. When the bloody water arrived, Meng Shidao covered them with earth and engulfed the greater half of the berserk bloody billows at once...

The moment the inscriptions that virtue was the body of universal laws and the greatest virtue was like water which would lubricate the lower reach in a tender way fell off, all the water element in the elements realm resonated and became berserk at the same time. Within the semi-sage realm, resplendent water fell off the sky. The moment they touched the earth, they had cut through everything like ice blades. Even the rolling bloody sea was frozen. Additionally, the immortal beast was covered with white frost...

The moment the inscriptions that etiquette was the tool of universal laws fell off and the greatest etiquette was as genial and warm as wind fell off, all the wind element in the elements realm resonated and became berserk. Within the semi-sage realm, the breeze came into being. Being blown by the breeze, the rolling bloody sea became calm and crystal in a split second. Being affected by the breeze, the berserk immortal beast's shell and muscles started to degenerate and collapse in large areas like rocks that have been weathered for tens of thousands of years.

The moment the inscriptions that righteousness was the driving force of universal laws like flames that lit up the darkness, all the fire element in the elements realm resonated and became berserk. Within the semi-sage realm, the bloody sea caught fire and disappeared through evaporation like being in a furnace that was used to refine steel. Additionally, the roaring immortal beast's skin and flesh cracked while the rim of its body started to be carbonized...

Before such a deadly kill action which could match the anger of the natural disaster, any ordinary knights in this semi-sage realm would be burned into scums in the blink of an eye. However, the immortal beast incarnated by Han Zhengfang was still as tenacious as before. The shell on the back of the immortal beast was like a huge shield which blocked the greater part of the fatal strikes.

However, this semi-sage realm belonged to Meng Shidao, which contained the universal laws that Meng Shidao had comprehended and was sticking to and the terrifying killing intent that Meng Shidao had integrated with the heavens. In this semi-sage realm, Meng Shidao was almost like a deity. That was the terror of the personal realm.

Meng Shidao had not reached sage level yet; even being a semi-sage, he was also irresistible for Han Zhengfang who was just a heavenly knight.

Han Zhengfang knew that he didn't have too much time left. In

the past 1 hour, Meng Shidao's semi-sage realm had shattered all the fluke minds of Han Zhengfang. Meng Shidao was not a new semi-sage knight; instead, he had already completely consolidated his rank as a semi-sage knight. Additionally, his semi-sage realm had already started to display the power of the 4 changing elements.

'I could not resist the semi-sage realm of Meng Shidao based on my current battle strength.' Han Zhengfang was clear about his current situation based on his rich experience. Even gecko could break its tail at the critical moment, Han Zhengfang determined his mind almost soon after he abandoned all of his fluke minds.

A scorching bloody sun immediately rose up from the back of the immortal beast while giving out shiny brilliance, causing Meng Shidao's semi-sage realm to be as red as sunglow.

Soon after Zhang Tie arrived above Sincerity Garden, he had caught sight of such an abnormal phenomenon——The grey mist covering Sincerity Garden immediately turned red as if it was burning inside. Zhang Tie saw through it using his lotus-flower eyes at once.

Under his lotus-flower eyes, Zhang Tie saw the semi-sage realm of Meng Shidao in a bizarre visual angle. On the back of the grey mist, there seemed to be a window that led to another world, which covered about 30,000 square miles. In that virtual world, Meng Shidao was floating in the sky while lifting the Far-ancient Moral Stele. A bloody hot sun was rising up from the shell of the immortal beast while giving out resplendent light, causing Zhang Tie giddy.

Zhang Tie didn't know this grey mist was semi-sage realm. In reality, it was like a wholly new grey misty space in the Sincerity Garden. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie had to change his conception about time, space, size, false or real out of shock. He had not imagined that a fight between a heavenly knight and a semi-sage knight could be so massive. They could fight using their virtual

immortal beasts; additionally, the battle could cover 30,000 square miles. Such a scene brought Zhang Tie an unprecedented shock.

Zhang Tie knew that this was a fight between top knights in this age. It was really a worthy travel here as he could witness such a ferocious fight as an earth knight, not to mention others.

Zhang Tie widely opened his eyes in case that he missed any details of the fight.

When the bloody hot sun rose up in the semi-sage realm, the entire semi-sage realm was filled with berserk fire element in the blink of an eye. These berserk fire element even disrupted the balance between 4 elements in the semi-sage realm, causing the elements in this realm to be disordered. As a result, Meng Shidao's striking rhythm was broken at once.

Meng Shidao suddenly stopped as he looked extremely solemn.

The bloody sun grew increasingly larger with an extremely strong energy wave that could even match that of sage-level knights. During the process, all the strikes against Han Zhengfang in the semi-sage realm would be completely devoured by this bloody sun and could not hurt Han Zhengfang at all.

Meng Shidao had experienced such a scene when he just formed his fire chakra and promoted to a semi-sage knight. When commoners promoted to knights, they could be regarded as becoming Hua dragons; when knights promoted to semi-sage knights, they could be regarded as phoenixes that gained their new birth in the fire. After promoting to a semi-sage knight, one would be utterly different than heavenly knights and all the other knights below heavenly knights as he had entered the threshold of sage level.

This pass was called nirvana in holy fire, which was the ultimate target of many knights. The nirvana in holy fire indicated that one had completely formed his fire chakra, the last chakra of the 4 elements chakras. After forming his own fire chakra, one would be

able to control all the 4 elements in the world freely. He could directly explore and get hang of the ultimate secret in the universal laws, which was the strength of realm, time and space. The knight who dominated the strength of realm was a semi-sage knight.

In the process of nirvana in holy fire, the holy fire that carried the strength of universal laws could eliminate all the strikes and harms invisibly. This was the most powerful moment of a knight, when he would still be safe and sound even facing the strikes of a sage knight.

Meng Shidao knew that Han Zhengfang didn't promote to semi-sage level from a heavenly knight all of a sudden; because fire chakra could not be formed in a short period. If Han Zhengfang was able to do that, he would never promote to a semi-sage knight at this critical moment. Han Zhengfang was definitely promoting his cultivation base to a higher realm using a secret method like how low-level fighters grew berserk after taking something. The real nirvana in the holy fire would never be such berserk, which meant that Han Zhengfang's fire chakra was in an extremely volatile and fragile state.

The nirvana in holy fire diffused in the semi-sage realm in terms of a fiery sun. Closely after that, Han Zhengfang's battle qi grew two times more berserk than before as if he was wrapped by immaterial flames that appeared out of the void. Standing still in the sky, he gave out an unrivaled qi, which was even greater than that of Meng Shidao.

"What a secret method of Bloody Soul Temple! It could promote a heavenly knight to a semi-sage knight in an emergency. I've not seen that. I think such a secret method should come from the Bloody Soul Sutra in your temple..." Meng Shidao still looked as calm as before although he was fighting Han Zhengfang at the risk of his life. He still sincerely praised Han Zhengfang's secret method.

Han Zhengfang firmly gazed at Meng Shidao with his bloody eyes

as his qi grew increasingly berserk and more dangerous as if a burning powder keg. He replied, "This is the unique secret method of Bloody Soul Sutra..."

"It's a bit pitiful for you to cause troubles to humans rather than resisting demons with this secret method..." Meng Shidao shook his head.

"That's the right place!" Han Zhengfang roared as his qi reached its climax. Closely after that, he flashed away. In a split second, he had already arrived at Meng Shidao's side as he punched towards Meng Shidao.

This punch was as powerful as that of a semi-sage knight. Closely after this punch, Meng Shidao's semi-sage realm had started to quiver like waves while a burning bloody qi filled the entire semi-sage space...

...

After the grey mist over Sincerity Garden turned bloody for less than 10 minutes, a loud boom drifted from that mist. At the same time, that grey mist was torn apart into pieces while a curl of after wind spurted out of the mist and lay flat hundreds of buildings and courtyards within 1,000 m. The Sincerity Garden which once contained the truth of universal laws disappeared in a split second in terms of shadowy powders through evaporation, leaving no trace at all.

Almost at the same time, a bloody figure rushed out of the broken grey mist...

Chapter 1167: Chasing After the Target

The commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards had long been waiting outside the Sincerity Garden for the possible fight with a fiery killing intent. At the sight of the bloody figure breaking out of the grey mist, he immediately sprung up as he slashed his huge saber towards that figure in an overwhelming manner, causing a crescent in the air.

The huge saber was a silver secret item which carried a special ability. It could not be matched by ordinary swords and sabers. Before that crescent arrived at that bloody figure, it had split in two. As a result, its force of attack grew by two times in a split second...

"Go die..." The commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards roared which could be heard dozens of miles away like a muffled thunder as his eyes sparkled like stars.

That bloody figure was Han Zhengfang. A few days ago, the commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards was drinking and discussing with him about political affairs; however, at this moment, they had already become enemies instead of friends. Therefore, the commander-in-chief just launched an attack mercilessly.

Han Zhengfang threw a glance at the commander-in-chief of Imperial Guards with his bloody eyes as he punched the latter, ignoring the strike of the huge saber.

The double crescent saber qi hit Han Zhengfang, splitting him into 9 bloody humanoid mist. The 9 bloody humanoid mist darted towards 9 directions like sharp arrows as fast as lightning bolts. They had reached over 1,000 m away in a second. By contrast, the commander-in-chief of imperial guards spurted out a mouthful of blood as he was sent flying a few miles away by Han Zhengfang's punch like a meteor. Not until he damaged many buildings did he

finally stop.

With bloody stains at his mouth corners, Meng Shidao strode out of the diffusing grey mist by one step with a solemn look. After glancing around those bloody humanoid mist that was darting in 9 directions, he immediately punched towards a bloody humanoid mist which had reached 3,000 m away. The bloody humanoid mist jumped once; however, it still failed to dodge away from the terrifying power of the purple impact wave of Meng Shidao's punch. In a split second, the bloody humanoid mist twisted and exploded, spraying blood over the sky.

One of the 9 bloody humanoid mist was solved by Meng Shidao in a split second. All the other 8 bloody humanoid mist accelerated once again and reached another 2,000 m away in the blink of an eye. Meng Shidao threw a glance at them before chasing after a bloody humanoid mist in the northeast direction.

Even Meng Shidao could not move much faster than those bloody humanoid mist. Therefore, he could only choose one target.

Suddenly an azure sword qi rushed into the sky from 10,000 away from Sincerity Garden, involving a bloody humanoid mist into the sword qi...

Half an hour later, that sword qi being over 10,000 m away from Sincerity Garden shattered that bloody humanoid mist. Closely after that, being wrapped by the sword light, a woman darted towards the ruined Sincerity Garden at a super high speed.

This woman had a plump figure with a longsword in hand. Given her look, she was about 40-50 years old. Her delicate oval face looked still enchanting. With a fan-shaped bun, she looked pretty imposing. The class I uniform of foreign minister fit the woman's imposing manner pretty well.

This woman was one of top 9 ministers in Taixia Country.

Nothing was left in the former Sincerity Garden, even a grass. It

was covered with pits while the earth had become semi-ceramic after being baked in high temperature like the surface of the moon...

'Is this the power of realm?'

Watching this miserable scene in the Sincerity Garden, the foreign minister thought inside.

At this moment, she heard a sonic boom while Meng Shidao had appeared outside the former Sincerity Garden.

Watching the ruins, Meng Shidao let out a long sigh.

"Master of Crown Prince!" The foreign minister of Taixia Country lowered her head towards Meng Shidao as she put away her longsword.

"Minister An..." Meng Shidao nodded politely too. Meng Shidao was not amazed by the appearance of this woman at this place. The entire emperor's imperial city was in great chaos tonight; the 9 ministers had been called into the imperial palace for the sake of the hinterland of Taixia Country. Only the foreign minister who was responsible for diplomacy shouldered responsibility tonight and could be assigned by the crown prince to investigate the situation here or assist the Supreme Court to arrest Han Zhengfang. "How about your wounds?"

"Severe wounds; but I could still survive. What about Han Zhengfang..."

After hearing foreign minister's question, Meng Shidao looked up at the sky above Sincerity Garden while a bizarre light flashed by his eyes. After being silent for a couple of seconds, he told the foreign minister, "There are too many doubts about what happened tonight. Han Zhengfang has long promoted to a heavenly knight; however, he was always hiding his battle strength; his secret method of Bloody Soul Temple was too weird and unpredictable. I failed to prevent him from leaving; however,

he should have been severely injured. Let's talk about it in the imperial palace in front of the crown prince..."

The chaos in Xuanyuan Hill had not been appeased; however, it was almost under control; additionally, the elites of the top 4 armies would soon arrive at Xuanyuan Hill. The remaining fish of Heavens Reaching Church couldn't make great trouble anymore. The chaos outside Xuanyuan Hill was just a piece of cake in Meng Shidao's eyes. Therefore, he just ignored it. Even though the chaos in Xuanyuan Hill could be easily appeased, the entire Taixia Country would never be in peace from tonight on.

The master of Heavens Reaching Church became the finance minister of Taixia Country. How many arrangements had Han Zhengfang made in the position of a finance minister over these years? This question made people feel cold.

'The chaos in Xuanyuan Hill tonight was preset. Who directed all this using those swans? How could I be involved in it? Is that someone on the back of the top 6 sects joking Xuanyuan Hill or it's demon's plot after they made full use of Han Zhengfang, or...'

Meng Shidao looked terrifyingly gloomy while being sad and thoughtful on the way towards the imperial palace...

The image of a big cat suddenly flashed by Meng Shidao's mind as he finally stopped thinking about that...

...

At this moment, Zhang Tie was flying at 4 times the speed of sound.

The marvelous changes in Sincerity Garden made Zhang Tie yell inside; especially in the last few minutes, the fight between Han Zhengfang and Meng Shidao benefited Zhang Tie for the rest of his life as it was the first time for him to witness such a fight between top knights.

Zhang Tie witnessed how Han Zhengfang broke through

Sincerity Garden.

After Han Zhengfang broke out of the grey mist, he suddenly split into 9 bloody humanoid mist. One of them was killed by Meng Shidao immediately; another one was blocked by a sword qi from the emperor's imperial city; besides, Meng Shidao chased after another one out of the emperor's imperial city and killed it, leaving 6. Zhang Tie targeted on one of the last 6 bloody humanoid figures. Since the 9 bloody humanoid mist came into being, Zhang Tie had been keeping a close watch on one of them.

Given their looks, all the bloody humanoid mist looked same. They even had the same battle strength and flying speed; however, under his lotus-flower eyes, Zhang Tie could clearly see that one of the 9 bloody humanoid mist was evidently different than the other 8. The bloody runes floating in this one's qi sea, breast and mind sea respectively were utterly different than that in the bodies of the other 8 bloody humanoid figures. Therefore, Zhang Tie kept a close watch on this one.

The bloody humanoid mist flew at a high speed. The moment he exited Xuanyuan Hill, its speed had already reached over 4 times that of the speed of sound. This speed could never be reached by a shadow knight. Ordinary knights couldn't block him at all as it moved too fast. Before some knights outside Xuanyuan Hill realized what happened, this bloody humanoid mist had already flashed far away in a split second, sparing no chance for them to catch up with him.

If not grasp the secret method of flying as a divine dominator, Zhang Tie could only stand aside and watch him escape away in vain at this moment too.

Zhang Tie targeted that bloody humanoid mist by his lotus-flower eyes and kept a distance of about 20 miles away from that bloody humanoid mist.

When he flew using the ability of divine dominator, he didn't

give out any light. Therefore, nobody would pay attention to him no matter how fast he moved. It was utterly different than flying relying on the gravity caused by rotating chakras. As for the latter pattern, as long as he reached a certain high speed, he would become as eye-catching as a meteor in the evening. In that case, he would expose himself to the public. However, Zhang Tie didn't face such a problem now. Additionally, with the effect of the master-level immortal hiding rune, Zhang Tie could barely expose himself to Han Zhengfang with such a distance in between. Even sonic booms would be lagged far behind Zhang Tie. Sonic booms could only spread about a couple of miles in the air. Given the safe distance between Zhang Tie and that bloody humanoid mist, the latter could never hear any sound behind him no matter how sensitive his ears were.

That bloody humanoid mist also hid its battle qi light in flight. Additionally, although being a bloody mist, it could not be seen at all. Even a person with night viewing ability could encounter it in the sky, he could barely trace it with his eye light as it moved faster than 4 times that of the speed of sound.

Only after about 1 hour, the bloody humanoid mist had already been almost 2,300 miles away from Xuanyuan Hill and entered a wild and dangerous mountain wood.

It was barren under his foot. Although being at a high altitude, Zhang Tie could still sniff the stimulative smell of sulfur. The earth was covered with rising vapor and smoke that was blowing out of the underground space. The visibility was only hundreds of meters. In the looming mist and smoke, dull red magma was constantly spurting out of the crater like boiling water that flew out of the pot. The bloody humanoid mist directly entered the crater...

Chapter 1168: Canglan Palace

When the bloody humanoid mist was 330-400 miles away from this barren and dangerous volcanic area, it could almost not bear it physically under the gaze of Zhang Tie. As a result, it gradually reduced its speed from 4 times that of the speed of sound to same as that of the speed of sound...

When the bloody humanoid mist reduced its speed to less than 200 m per second, Zhang Tie even saw it dropping off 100 m in a split second like a drunk man in the evening who fell off a pit. Closely after that, it became spirited and continued to fly towards the crater...

At this moment, the bloody humanoid mist gradually diffused, revealing the real human body.

It was Han Zhengfang. Zhang Tie knew that he had made a correct choice this time. Among the 9 bloody humanoid mist, only this one was real; all the others were just used to fool the public and create chaos. However, those substitutes were indeed very powerful, who could fly even faster than real shadow knights. Additionally, their battle strength could match that of real shadow knights in a short period. How unfathomable was the secret method of Bloody Soul Temple!

Tonight, Zhang Tie saw this remnant of Bloody Soul Temple also the master of Heavens Reaching Church breaking out of Xuanyuan Hill alone. If not given the stance, Zhang Tie really admired Han Zhengfang. A person who could conceal his real identity in the hinterland of Taixia Country for so many years as one of the 9 ministers was really talented.

When the former finance minister of Taixia Country revealed his original body, he was naked all over like a roasted duck that was taken out of the oven. His skin all over was crimson, which gradually turned a bit normal in a few minutes. Being dozens of

miles away, Han Zhengfang's skin looked pretty white as if he had not basked in the sun for dozens of years. According to the saying in Waii Subcontinent or Western Continent, only vampire's skin could be that white...

Han Zhengfang was very meticulous. After coming to the crater, he didn't enter it immediately; instead, he flew around the crater slowly for a short while as a rest; meanwhile, he took a vial of medicament. After confirming that he was not followed up, he flashed into the magma at the fastest speed.

Zhang Tie just watched him from afar; instead of rushing over there at once.

With lotus-flower eyes, Zhang Tie could see clearly Han Zhengfang's movements in magma. The entire volcano and magma inside it were transparent with different color temperatures in Zhang Tie's eyes. Of course, Han Zhengfang's temperature was different than that of magma. Therefore, he was very eye-catching even in magma. Zhang Tie blinked his eyes twice and filtered the color temperatures of magma and underground rocks; closely after that, Han Zhengfang became as clear as a person in a crystal swimming pool in Zhang Tie's eyes.

The crater was like a rugged and vast deep well being filled with scorching magma. After deepening over 800 m underground, it was connected with a magma vein, from where magma flew out naturally under the great pressure of the underground space. That magma vein led to the deep underground space...

Han Zhengfang didn't stop until he reached about 5,000 m underground. He hid in somewhere. It seemed that Han Zhengfang had set a specially hidden residence for himself over there. There was something special inside that residence. After Han Zhengfang entered that place, he immediately lay in a huge coffin naked before covering the coffin with a lid from inside.

After Han Zhengfang lay in the coffin for about 5 minutes, Zhang

Tie appeared above the crater silently in his Chaos.

Zhang Tie in Chaos was isolated from the stimulative sulfuric smoke that rose from the crater by his protective battle qi. The scarlet and scorching magma was gurgling out of the crater. The volcano reminded Zhang Tie of the pimples on the faces of those horny teenagers in the No. 7 male middle school in Blackhot City. According to the explanation of the church of patron, all the volcanoes were the pimples on the face of Gaya, the mother of the earth.

Nobody knew how long had this volcano maintained such a state. It might not erupt on a large scale anymore. Therefore, Han Zhengfang built his shelter inside it. Additionally, thousands of square miles around here was covered with magma that gurgled out of the underground space. It was fatal everywhere on the earth. Additionally, there were faint toxins in the air. Nobody could be seen here.

Commoners would never come here. Those below earth knights could not stay in magma for a long time. Even ordinary earth knights could not bear too long in magma. Han Zhengfang built his shelter here in case of being discovered by others. No earth knight or shadow knight across Taixia Country would like to soak in magma in the wild and especially dream about discovering backrooms in the magma.

With the protection of his protective battle qi, Zhang Tie entered the magma inside the crater at once. Even at this moment, he still kept his immortal hiding rune effective as he swam towards Han Zhengfang's shelter meticulously.

Magma and water had different densities. However, it didn't affect Zhang Tie's moving speed at all. He just moved like how he did in the water. Being protected by his protective battle qi and Chaos, Zhang Tie almost could not sense the high temperature of the magma. It only took him less than 5 minutes to reach 5,000 m in depth outside the entrance of Han Zhengfang's shelter.

The entrance of Han Zhengfang's shelter was a huge granite which weighed over 10 tons soaking in the magma, which was covered with metal granules.

This huge granite being soaked in the magma had already turned crimson like firebricks in the brickkiln.

There was a small magma vein like a root of a huge tree at this place. It flew far away. There were also many rocks and bulges around the huge granite, large or small. Actually, the same scene spread over the entire magma sea. Nobody could imagine that there was a hidden space behind this huge granite.

'I'm afraid that Han Zhengfang couldn't see anything in the magma at all. He just fumbled all the way here through his memory. The other knights would be blind here except for being able to sense something besides themselves.'

Zhang Tie hugged this huge granite and easily pushed it aside, revealing a cave that led upwards. Zhang Tie flashed in the cave before pushing the huge granite back.

Only after floating up less than 20 m, Zhang Tie had already exposed his body out of the magma.

Two icy blue beads were inlaid in the cliff above the magma. Zhang Tie was curious about the two special beads. He could sense a bizarre force field around the two beads. Like water-driving beads that he had ever heard, the two icy blue beads could press down the magma that intended to spill out of the cave. When Zhang Tie passed that force field, he felt like passing a cold veil.

The two beads were absolute treasures. However, Zhang Tie didn't touch them; instead, he started to glance around this place seriously. When he was at the edge of the crater just now, he kept his close watch on Han Yuanhong. All the lifeless things which Han Yuanhong had were just color temperatures in Zhang Tie's lotus-flower eyes. When he arrived here, he had an utterly different feeling.

This place was absolutely like an underground mini-palace. The magma below it was like the moat of this mini-palace. Zhang Tie was now in a fountain-like magma pool outside the gate of this mini-palace.

There was no guard outside the gate. It was just a closed metal gate. The dozens of steps from the magma pool to the gate were made of top-quality class 9 crystals, each of which would be worth above hundreds of thousands of gold coins. However, they were used for paving here. How luxurious it was!

There were some specific underground plants on both sides of the steps. These plants didn't need sunshine. Only with proper temperature could they provide fresh air for this place. Therefore, it was not suffocating here although being in the underground.

Zhang Tie walked out of the magma and stepped onto the crystal steps by foot quietly.

There were 6 words on the top of the metal gate——Canglan Palace of Bloody Soul Temple.

'It turns out to be built by Bloody Soul Temple. When they built this palace, Bloody Soul Temple might not have been exterminated yet. This secret base was a small act of Bloody Soul Temple under the eyes of Emperor Xuanyuan. However, nobody could discover it.' Zhang Tie admired the means of Bloody Soul Temple very much.

Chapter 1169: Fighting a Powerful Enemy at Full Efforts (I)

Zhang Tie moved his eyes away from the top of the gate. After a few more steps forward, Zhang Tie stood in front of the gate. He lightly put his hand onto the gate as he felt that this gate, which was higher than 10 m, was made of abyss magical iron. The material of this gate could match that of his Chaos. Even in Lion Fortress, weapons being made of abyss magical iron were available to knights.

The gate was closed tightly. After entering the gate, Han Zhengfang latched the gate with a bolt from inside. As a result, outsiders could barely enter it, except for Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie could clearly see the internal structure of the lock of the abyss magical gate with his lotus-flower eyes.

The lock of the gate was 7-star interlinked lock, which was a unique top-class lock in Taixia Country. If not know the method, one could never open it. Because one 7-star interlinked lock had 7 holes in different depths inside, one had to rotate the key 7 times; each time he rotated his key, he had to pay attention to the depth, angle and number of turns. Only after manipulating it 7 times consecutively could one open it. Han Zhengfang opened it using a key.

After observing it for a short while, Zhang Tie had already borne the structure of 7-star interlinked lock in mind. He then took a slow, deep breath before starting to prepare for the coming fight.

He took out the gold-eaten dagger, a silver secret longsword and a silver secret heavy hammer that he gained from the Earth-elements Realm; after that, he took out another silver secret dagger. Zhang Tie had the 4 weapons float around himself. After making a full preparation, Zhang Tie started to open the gate.

Zhang Tie triggered the ability of a divine dominator to slowly

open the 7-star interlinked lock on the gate of the Canglan Palace of Bloody Soul Temple. After unlocking it, the metal bolt behind the gate floated up itself silently too.

The gate slowly opened like two feathers, exposing the inside of Canglan Palace of Bloody Soul Temple to Zhang Tie.

The inside of the palace was much more luxurious than that outside. The surface of the entire palace was covered with Class IX crystals. There were some buildings made of gold in the palace. The entire palace was as large as a football court. What made it bright were not long-lasting fluorites but legendary luminous pearls. In the rear end of the square of the palace, there was a bloody pool whose diameter was 10 m. There was a huge black crystal coffin in the middle of the bloody pool. Besides, the surroundings of the bloody pool and the surface of the huge black crystal coffin were all covered with brilliant gilded runes.

This bloody pool reminded Zhang Tie of the bloody sea; however, this bloody pool was much smaller than the bloody sea; additionally, there was only one person in the crystal coffin.

Immersing himself in the dense blood of the black crystal coffin, Han Zhengfang looked like falling asleep.

The black crystal coffin was about 70 m away from the gate. Zhang Tie didn't enter it immediately. He just stood outside the gate. As it was an adventure, Zhang Tie didn't know the concrete situation of Han Zhengfang at this moment. However, he had witnessed Han Zheng's battle strength in Xuanyuan Hill, which was far greater than that of a shadow knight. Han Zhengfang's performance reminded Zhang Tie of his master Zhao Yuan. 'Han Zhengfang must have hidden his real battle strength when he was the finance minister of Taixia Country. This master of Heavens Reaching Church might have long promoted to a heavenly knight.' Zhang Tie thought.

Generally, an earth knight could never defeat a heavenly knight.

Although he was a divine dominator, Zhang Tie would never throw an egg against a rock. However, this situation was very special. After fighting Meng Shidao; especially after using secret methods constantly to escape away from the grey mist and Xuanyuan Hill, his vitality had been severely reduced. At this moment, Han Zhengfang was definitely in the weakest and unfenced condition.

He might not have the second chance to defeat such a terrifying enemy. Even risking his life, Zhang Tie would also have a try. He was too gutless if he dared not launch such an attack towards Han Zhengfang at this moment.

Zhang Tie had determined his mind. This time, he had to fight Han Zhengfang and kill him even risking his life. If not kill this enemy who screwed him and did harm to his family members for a couple of times, Zhang Tie would never sleep well.

When all the thoughts turned into an irresistible killing intent, Zhang Tie's eyes shot out shrewd light as he roared, "Go die..."

The distance of 70 m was almost equal to face-to-face for a knight and a divine dominator. Zhang Tie's first round of strike arrived at the coffin before his "roar" as the sound transmission speed in the air was only 340 m per second.

The silver secret grim hammer which weighed a few tons fell onto the black crystal coffin ferociously like a sudden lightning bolt.

Zhang Tie gained this heavy hammer from the demon knight of Augulas Clan on the battlefield of the Earth-elements Realm. As a silver secret item, this heavy hammer carried two terrifying attacking skills which could even frighten knights. First, it could shatter goods; Zhang Tie had tried its shattering ability in Castle of Black Iron by crashing it onto a piece of gold brick. The result was that the gold brick was shattered.

Gold was a metal with the greatest ductility. One gram of gold

could be extended to a large area of gold foil by a hammer. However, this silver secret heavy hammer could even shatter a piece of gold brick. It could be imagined how it would damage a human body.

Second, "bolt" harm. As long as it could hit the living being, besides the shattering effect, it could also realize the effect of a lightning bolt, causing people to be stiff all over. Zhang Tie tried it on himself lightly. As a result, the shield in his hand was shattered; additionally, the effect of "bolt" passed on Zhang Tie himself, causing his hair to stand and his body to numb all over for quite a while.

Terrifying shattering strike and the effect of "bolt" harm which could delay one's moving ability. What a great match!

The real object of the huge hammer was 6.8 tons in weight and longer than 3 m, which was taller and bigger than Cui Li. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt a bit hard manipulating it with the ability of divine dominator. This huge hammer would consume him one hundred times more spiritual strength than that on ordinary weapons. Although Zhang Tie had gained many silver secret items in the Weapons Mountain of the Hieron Ruins, none of those silver secret items could match this one which he gained from the demon knight.

Zhang Tie saw the virtual body of this silver secret item. It was a huge far-ancient mammoth which was hundreds of meters high and had two 10-m longer huge fangs while being covered with scales. Each foot of the virtual body of this silver secret item was like a huge pillar that led to the sky. Each stomp would cause an earthquake.

The flat side of this huge hammer was similar to the footprint of its virtual body. The two fangs incarnated into the two spikes on the top of the huge hammer.

This heavy hammer was the real Thor's hammer.

When the hammer was less than 1 m away from the coffin, Han Zhengfang opened his eyes in a split second in the coffin with a shocked expression. Han Zhengfang could never imagine that he would be raided even in Canglan Palace.

However, he didn't have time to make a counter-attack anymore because the striking speed of divine dominator was too fast that nobody could escape at that moment...

As a result, the black crystal coffin was shattered into ashes in a split second like a paper-made matchbox being put under a forging press. The moment the crystal coffin was shattered, under the great pressure, the blood in the bloody pool were sent flying in the air in terms of round liquid particles...

The heavy hammer hit Han Zhengfang's chest directly. If a huge rock was put on Han Zhengfang's chest, it would be the standard trick in streets—breaking the rock on one's chest by a hammer.

Han Zhengfang was directly sent into the earth; meanwhile, many crystal bricks on the ground of Canglan Palace of Bloody Soul Temple were shattered...

When the huge hammer fell off, gold-eaten dagger and the other two silver secret items firmed targeted on Han Zhengfang's two body parts. Only after less than 0.01 second, two silver secret items had penetrated through Han Zhengfang's heart and lower abdomen.

0.01 second later, Zhang Tie launched his 3rd round of attack by releasing the berserk dragon-shaped battle qi towards the deep pit which was caused by the huge hammer.

The entire Canglan Palace of Bloody Soul Temple quaked while being covered with smoke and dust.

In the smoke and dust, Han Zhengfang slowly floated up from the huge, deep pit nakedly while being wrapped by his fiery protective battle qi.

Besides being disheveled and covered with blood, a large area on Han Zhengfang's chest sunk while his skin as a whole was covered with dense cracks and bloody streaks. Therefore, Han Zhengfang looked like a ferocious ghost with Zhang Tie's gold-eaten dagger in hand.

The gold-eaten dagger was targeting at Han Zhengfang's right eye while quivering and struggling like a terrifying venomous snake being pinched by Han Zhengfang. Just now, if Han Zhengfang didn't grasp the gold-eaten dagger, his head must have been blown up.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had already entered Canglan Palace. Han Zhengfang watched this guy in the grim black battle armor as he roared furiously, "Who are you...who the hell are you?"

Like having not heard Han Zhengfang's question, Zhang Tie just gazed at the gold-eaten dagger in Han Zhengfang's hand and his body while contracting his pupils all of a sudden.

Han Zhengfang's current situation was completely out of Zhang Tie's imagination. The dagger didn't actually penetrate through Han Zhengfang's heart. At the most critical moment, Han Zhengfang contracted his heart and caused it to move aside a bit to dodge from the fatal blow. He responded to the blow on his lower abdomen in the same manner. Therefore, although two parts of his body were penetrated, neither of them was fatal for a knight.

In the blink of an eye, Han Zhengfang had controlled his muscles, tendons, meridians, and skin to close the two wounds. As a result, he stopped bleeding right away.

Even the most destructive gold-eaten dagger was clutched by Han Zhengfang.

By contrast, the first blow harmed Han Zhengfang most. With that blow, Han Zhengfang's skin, skeletons and guts had been covered with cracks.

At this moment, Han Zhengfang's qi was the standard qi of a shadow knight. Compared to what Zhang Tie saw and felt in Xuanyuan Hill, Han Zhengfang's overall strength seemed to have reduced by a realm. This might be the price that Han Zhengfang had to pay for breaking through Xuanyuan Hill.

Zhang Tie was right. Han Zhengfang indeed had declined from the level of a heavenly knight to a shadow knight. Although the secret methods of Bloody Soul Temple were unrivaled, any secret method had to be paid. After a heavenly knight who had not completely formed his fire chakra pushed his level to the semi-sage realm by a secret method in a short period, he had to bear the price of collapsing his wind chakra.

It was like eating viagra. One might stand and be as strong as a mutated beast overnight; however, after the effect of the medicine, he had to bear a sequelae; the more ferocious the medicine was, the severer the sequelae would be and the greater compensation would be required; especially the secret method that Han Zhengfang used to separate into 9 bloody humanoid mist when he escaped from Xuanyuan Hill, which made him suffer a great loss. He almost could not reach Canglan Palace. In that desperate situation, he had to suffer the price of declining to a lower level and the great loss of his vitality.

Han Zhengfang had not imagined that he could be raided in his Canglan Palace.

Neither did Zhang Tie imagine that Han Zhengfang could still be as powerful as a shadow knight. Therefore, he only realized half of the desired effect of the first round of attack.

The current situation was out of the imagination of both Zhang Tie and Han Zhengfang.

"Who are you?" Han Zhengfang glared at Zhang Tie as he roared with muffled thunders for the second time. Meanwhile, his shadow-knight level battle qi surged.

Any shadow knight could not be profaned by ordinary knights, no matter how weak he was.

"Go die..."

Zhang Tie's boiling killing intent formed a resolute battle intent. He was not scared by Han Zhengfang's imposing manner; instead, he became spirited all over. 'Shadow knight, so what? This father swears to kill a shadow knight today. In Han Zhengfang's muffled roars, Zhang Tie also roared in a muffled way as he rushed towards Han Zhengfang and launched an attack on his own initiative by punching and slashing his sword...

'When two enemies encountered in a narrow path, the braver one would be the winner!'

Zhang Tie had borne this resolute belief deep in mind since he joined Iron-Blood Camp...

Chapter 1170: Fighting a Powerful Enemy at Full Efforts (II)

With the ability of a divine dominator, Zhang Tie was tied with Han Zhengfang in this situation.

Shadow knights were very powerful; however, Han Zhengfang had been severely injured and suffered a great loss in vitality. Therefore, he could not respond to Zhang Tie's strikes as easily as ordinary shadow knights.

Han Zhengfang's shadow-knight level protective battle qi was like a thick alloy armor for Zhang Tie. It really had a great protective effect. Additionally, Han Zhengfang might cultivate a secret method of Bloody Soul Temple which could grant him with a super strong defensive power. This point could correspond to the thick shell of the immortal beast that Han Zhengfang manifested in Sincerity Garden.

The moment they started the fight, both Zhang Tie and Han Zhengfang were thinking about killing the opponent as fast as possible. Therefore, in a split second, they immediately entered the fiercest close combat.

Han Zhengfang's shadow-knight level protective battle qi could not be broken through by Zhang Tie in a short period; however, Zhang Tie's ability as a divine dominator also shocked Han Zhengfang too much.

Zhang Tie had already put away the silver secret heavy hammer into Castle of Black Iron. In this occasion, unless Han Zhengfang stood still and waited for Zhang Tie's strike with the silver secret heavy hammer, it would be too hard for him to manipulate a weapon weighing tons to attack Han Zhengfang; additionally, it was almost in vain. Therefore, Zhang Tie directly put away the silver secret heavy hammer.

After realizing that he couldn't teleport the gold-eaten dagger into his portable space-teleportation equipment and that he had to give up the attacking force of one hand by clutching that heavily struggling gold-eaten dagger, Han Zhengfang let go the gold-eaten dagger.

After the silver secret heavy hammer entered Castle of Black Iron, two silver secret shields came out of Castle of Black Iron and started to fly around Zhang Tie; plus the gold-eaten dagger and the other two silver secret weapons, Zhang Tie could manipulate the 5 weapons and equipment at the same time which combined both defensive and attacking effects. Plus Zhang Tie himself, Han Yuanhong felt like being besieged by more than 5 earth knights.

The aftermath of their collisions and the attached destructive effects of their battle skills messed up the entire Canglan Palace in only a few minutes. The entire underground space below Canglan Palace was rocking. Numerous boulders fell off the cliff above their heads; some boulders weighed hundreds even thousands of tons, smashing those terraces and open halls inside Canglan Palace.

Zhang Tie finally experienced the power of a shadow knight. Even in this situation, Han Zhengfang's casual blow could be barely resisted by Zhang Tie's silver secret shield. Only after colliding Han Zhengfang twice by force in the close combat, Zhang Tie had felt breathless and spurted out blood while being affected by the aftermath and shocks of Han Zhengfang's strikes, although his protective battle qi was not broken.

A lean camel was bigger than a horse.

The speed, strength, defensive ability and battle consciousness of a shadow knight were not on the same order of magnitude with that of an earth knight. If not having rich battle experience and a much greater knight's consciousness than the other earth knights and the multi-tasking ability as a divine dominator, he had long been severely injured or killed by Han Zhengfang after a few minutes of combat.

Zhang Tie also sensed what Han Zhengfang was thinking about——kill the opponent through close combat as fast as possible!

Han Zhengfang was even more urgently desiring for killing Zhang Tie.

'Why Han Zhengfang was so urgent?'

Such a whim flashed through Zhang Tie's mind in the close combat.

'Because Han Zhengfang couldn't bear a long time close combat like this. In another word, he couldn't stand a long time high-intensity combat consumption anymore. Han Zhengfang is consuming his battle strength much faster than his recovering speed. The wounds that were left in Xuanyuan Hill and the wounds that were caused by me have almost made him exhausted. If he doesn't kill me as fast as possible, as long as he reveals his fatigued look and couldn't maintain his advantage in battle strength over me or I fetched a powerful assistant, he would die for sure. Additionally, there's definitely not another palace of Bloody Soul Temple as secret as Canglan Palace near Xuanyuan Hill, where he could recover his wounds without any concern.

After thinking through this point, Zhang Tie immediately altered his combat strategy by extending the distance between him and Han Zhengfang.

'Prevent your enemy from reaching his target.' This was the essence of all the combats.

People required braveness and wisdom when in fight.

Zhang Tie soon got rid of the state of close combat. Because he was completely using his ability as a divine dominator to manipulate his battle armor to move in the air, he could move in an unimaginable traces and speed. Even Han Zhengfang could not catch up with him as a shadow knight.

"Who the hell are you? There are very few divine dominators in

Taixia Country. Only Immortal Penglai Island could enlighten the ability of divine dominator secretly. Whether you're dominating everything tonight in Xuanyuan Hill?" Han Zhengfang roared with bloody eyes as he chased closely after Zhang Tie. When he saw Zhang Tie leaving his combat circle, he sped up towards Zhang Tie; meanwhile, he shot a battle qi by fingers, which finally formed a bloody sword, towards Zhang Tie at a super high speed.

Being besieged by the three weapons, Han Zhengfang's movement was greatly affected. At this moment, a silver secret shield crashed onto Han Zhengfang's protective battle qi, slowed down Han Zhengfang's chasing speed at once. At the same time, the virtual bloody sword that was shot from Han Zhengfang's two fingers was blocked by another silver secret shield in a delicate way. Closely after that, the virtual bloody sword altered its direction and shot onto the earth, causing a bottomless hole as large as the rim of a bowl.

Zhang Tie expanded the distance between him and Han Zhengfang to over 70 m once again.

Han Zhengfang's roar shocked Zhang Tie faintly, 'Immortal Penglai Island in Taixia Country could enlighten the ability of divine dominator?' That was a key information. After coming to Taixia Country, Zhang Tie had not gained any information about divine dominator. He just tapped the ability of divine dominator himself. That was why he didn't figure out the flying ability of divine dominator until he promoted to an earth knight. If Zhang Tie had long known that there were divine dominators in Immortal Penglai Island, he might not need to take so many wrong ways; instead, he could visit Immortal Penglai Island and exchange with the divine dominators over there.

'This might be the accidental achievement of this combat.'

When Zhang Tie thought about it, he didn't slow down his movements; not to mention sparing any chance for Han Zhengfang to take a rest. Zhang Tie immediately ran his spirit while a row of

sharp metal spikes on the back of his Chaos flew off and joined the combat.

This was an attached striking pattern that Edward especially designed for Zhang Tie as a divine dominator. There were totally 21 sharp spikes on the back of the Chaos. Besides being extremely sharp, their rims were like sawteeth. Such a design could grant these sharp spikes with a great destructive effect; additionally, they could cut knight's protective battle qi like sawing wood when they move at a high speed, causing a great pressure to a knight's protective battle qi.

Zhang Tie was manipulating 3 weapons, 2 shields and his Chaos using his ability as a divine dominator and his multi-tasking ability. Without exposing the secret of Castle of Black Iron, he had 14 sharp spikes fly off the back of his Chaos at once and join in the combat like a wolf pack which had smelt the blood.

Han Zhengfang's protective battle qi formed an illuminant

Han Zhengfang's illuminant protective battle qi had to sustain hundreds of times' strikes in each second. Although these strikes could not break through Han Zhengfang's protective battle qi at once, they caused Han Zhengfang's protective battle qi to quiver constantly like ripples at such a high frequency...

Han Zhengfang wanted to involve Zhang Tie in this battle once again; he darted towards Zhang Tie many times; however, Zhang Tie always stayed 50 m away from Han Zhengfang while moving flexibly at the current speed.

A shield flew around Han Zhengfang which could stop him from moving freely and block the greater part of his strikes towards Zhang Tie; the other shield just stayed on Zhang Tie's side so as to withstand the remaining strikes that escaped from the first shield.

Han Zhengfang roared out of fury as he hit left and right; however, he couldn't break through this huge net made by Zhang Tie.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie was just thinking about consuming Han Zhengfang's battle strength. Gradually, Zhang Tie found that he could use the same method to kill all the shadow knights step by step.

This was the method that he could use to deal with high-level shadow knights as an earth knight benefited from the object manipulation ability of a divine dominator, also the real reason that divine dominator was awe-inspiring...

Only after 5 minutes, Han Zhengfang had realized that he couldn't keep going in this way; otherwise, he would be killed for sure by this divine dominator...

Chapter 1171: Another Secret Skill of Bloody Soul Temple

"Bloody Soul Temple's secret methods rank first in Taixia Country. Do you really think that you could kill me in this way..."

Han Zhengfang's face turned grim all of a sudden. When he was sustaining hundreds of times' strikes, he broke the tip of his tongue by the teeth; closely after that, he spurted out a mouthful of blood out of his mouth. The blood didn't diffuse; instead, it suspended in front of Han Zhengfang. After that, Han Zhengfang broke his left thumb by the teeth and broke the middle place between his eyebrows by his right thumb. Closely after that, a small drop of blood flew out of his mouth, left thumb and forehead at the same time while giving out a brilliant red light. They mixed with each other at once and turned into 2 tadpole-sized bizarre runes that gave out the brilliant glow.

Han Zhengfang pointed at Zhang Tie. Closely after that, one of the two runes immediately entered his forehead while the other one darted towards Zhang Tie like a lightning bolt after breaking through Han Zhengfang's protective battle qi.

Although Zhang Tie was over 50 m away from Han Zhengfang, as he had witnessed Han Zhengfang's secret methods and means in the emperor's imperial city, he was vigilant about Han Zhengfang's movements very much. The moment Zhang Tie saw Han Zhengfang breaking his tongue tip, spurring out blood and the other similar self-mutilating behaviors, Zhang Tie immediately expanded the distance between them and reached over 80 m away from Han Zhengfang. At the same time, he expanded his protective battle qi to its utmost extent and prepared to respond to the coming danger.

However, Zhang Tie underestimated the power of the secret method of Bloody Soul Temple.

The moment the red rune flew out of Han Zhengfang's protective battle qi, Zhang Tie had intended to block it with a silver secret shield. Unimaginably, the rune directly penetrated through Zhang Tie's silver secret shield like a visionary object. In the blink of an eye, it had arrived at Zhang Tie's side. Being shocked too much, Zhang Tie hurriedly dodged from it at his highest speed. However, the closer the rune was to Zhang Tie, the faster it would move. It just chased after Zhang Tie like a lightning bolt.

Zhang Tie had changed more than 300 locations in one second, leaving many visional shadows in Canglan Palace. Even though, the rune still caught up with Zhang Tie like a massless visional shadow. It penetrated through Zhang Tie's second silver secret shield, Zhang Tie's battle qi strikes, Zhang Tie's protective battle qi and Chaos before falling onto Zhang Tie.

The moment that rune fell onto Zhang Tie's body, Zhang Tie had changed his face.

He thought it was a sharp killing skill; however, he had not imagined that he didn't even lose one hair after being hit by the rune; neither did he feel painful or itchy. When Zhang Tie felt weird, he suddenly had an inconceivable feeling, which was very similar to the feeling when he formed a 3-in-1 battle formation with the other 2 knights through knight's consciousness. It was even deeper than the ties of 3-in-1 battle formation.

The 3-in-1 battle formation was connected by different knights' consciousness; however, after being hit by Han Zhengfang's rune, Zhang Tie felt that his chakras had been closely tied with that of Han Zhengfang like two high-power magnets being drawn together tightly.

Each knight's chakras were composed of element crystals in the material world or element crystals in the Elements Realm. Knights always stayed with their chakras. However, chakras existed in a special pattern. Being neither in the elements realm nor the material world, it was a mode of existence between elements realm

and the material world. Charkas were invisible and untouchable; however, they indeed existed.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that there was a secret skill of Bloody Soul Temple that could directly act upon one's chakras. Besides Purgatory Samsara Method, it was his first time to see another secret method that could act upon one's chakras.

Facing the irresistible attraction caused by chakras, Zhang Tie's body seemed to become the appendage of his chakras and a nail on a super-powerful magnet. When two magnets attached together, Zhang Tie was unconsciously drawn towards Han Zhengfang by the attraction between their chakras. That was an irresistible pulling force, which carried the qi of the elements realm. Like a waterfall that rushed down from a high place, this pulling force was hard to refuse.

When Zhang Tie was worried whether this great strength would involve him in the close combat that was desired by Han Zhengfang, this pulling force suddenly disappeared when he was less than 30 m away from Han Zhengfang. Because their chakras had been closely attached together at this moment. Neither could he further approach nor stay farther away from Han Zhengfang. Neither could Han Zhengfang.

'What does that mean?' Zhang Tie doubted, 'Even though Han Zhengfang wants to pull me closer by a secret method, he could not rush to the front of me in such a distance; neither could it influence my strike against him.'

When Zhang Tie was pulled closer to Han Zhengfang, he didn't stop his strikes against Han Zhengfang.

"What's this secret method of Bloody Soul Temple? Do you think that you could threaten me in this way?" Zhang Tie's muffled voice drifted from the breathing holes under his ears before resonating in the ruined Canglan Palace.

Since they started the combat, it was Zhang Tie's first time to

open his mouth.

Zhang Tie's original voice didn't sound mature; however, after being drifted from the breathing holes under his ears, his voice turned utterly different. It carried a strange metallic resonance. Of course, Han Zhengfang couldn't figure out Zhang Tie's identity through his voice.

Zhang Tie ignored Han Zhengfang's question just now because he didn't want to get a revenge from Han Zhengfang's subordinates. As Han Zhengfang probably carried remote-sensing crystals which were used to contact the other major figures of Heavens Reaching Church. If Zhang Tie exposed his real identity, Han Zhengfang might send this message to the other remnants of Heavens Reaching Church. As a result, they might revenge Zhang Tie and Huaiyuan Palace. If so, what Zhang Tie arranged tonight were all in vain; additionally, nobody could enjoy such a meal that Zhang Tie prepared for the Gobbling Party and Meng Shidao.

Because of this reason, Zhang Tie became silent until he was curious about this secret method of Han Zhengfang.

"This is the lock of bloody chakras of Bloody Soul Temple! You are really something as you could make me use this skill." Han Zhengfang revealed a faint confident smile on his grim and aggressive face, "You will know the effect of this secret skill soon!"

"Really?"

The two people talked with each other as they fought.

"Of course, look at what's on the earth?" Han Zhengfang pointed at the ground.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at the ground and found scarlet magma was gurgling out of a hole which was as large as a bowl.

When he blocked Han Zhengfang's strike by one shield just now, he caused such a hole. Actually, the Canglan Palace of Bloody Soul Temple was built on an underground magma vein. This place was

actually very close to the magma in the vein.

At the sight of the magma that gurgled out of the ground, Zhang Tie immediately thought about a possibility...

Zhang Tie's heart pounded as he looked at Han Zhengfang.

Han Zhengfang was looking at Zhang Tie with an eye light which was full of killing intent as he revealed an icy and insidious sinister. Closely after that, he spent his full efforts in punching against the ground of the palace.

In an earthquake, a crack as wide as dozens of meters suddenly appeared on the ground of the palace. In the blink of an eye, magma surged out of the crack and soaked half of Canglan Palace.

At the sight of the magma, Zhang Tie wanted to fly consciously; however, he found that he couldn't move at all; because Han Zhengfang didn't move. The two people's chakras were locked together like two magnets. As Han Zhengfang was advantageous over Zhang Tie in battle strength, if Han Zhengfang didn't move, Zhang Tie couldn't move either.

Zhang Tie tried to contact Castle of Black Iron; however, he couldn't return to Castle of Black Iron because of the same reason.

Since he owned Castle of Black Iron, it was Zhang Tie's second time to meet such a situation. Last time, it was in the prison of Senel Clan, a Three-eye Association Clan when his body was clocked by a rune shackle. That time, he almost lost his life; he also experienced the feeling of being unable to return to his ultimate shelter when in crisis. After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie thought that he would not meet such an experience for the rest of his life; unimaginably, it could come so fast.

All of a sudden, Zhang Tie understood what Han Zhengfang wanted to do. He felt hopeless at once.

'He's one of the 9 ministers of Taixia Country. He has concealed his real identity in the hinterland of Taixia Country for so many

years. This is the master of Heavens Reaching Church who didn't expose his loophole even in front of Emperor Xuanyuan, the top powerhouse that could escape from the heavenly net made by Meng Shidao and Xuanyuan Hill. Even he's severely injured and has declined to a lower realm, his insidious movements, intelligence and decisiveness definitely rank top in Taixia Country. If not, he could not mess up the entire Taixia Country with his own strength.'

'I've underestimated this man. It proves once again that everything in the world wouldn't always run at one's will.'

'It's already too late for me to be regretful.'

After Han Zhengfang gave his second punch, the greater part of the ground of Canglan Palace had been collapsed while hundreds of millions of tons of magma poured inside like sea water.

In magma which had a very high density, the attacking ability of divine dominator was reduced to the utmost extent. Being flurried, Zhang Tie could only put away his weapons and silver secret items into Castle of Black Iron, leaving one silver secret shield in hand.

Han Zhengfang threw a sneer at Zhang Tie before diving into magma and flying downwards. Being drawn by Han Zhengfang's chakras, Zhang Tie felt being fastened by an invisible iron chain as he was pulled towards the depth of the magma vein...

Zhang Tie felt increasing pressure from all directions...

Chapter 1172: Breaking the Universe

As they grew increasingly deeper, Zhang Tie felt an increasing pressure that acted upon his protective battle qi.

It was like how a diver deepened into the ocean. The deeper he reached, the greater pressure he would suffer from the sea water.

However, Zhang Tie was not in the ocean, but in the scorching magma.

In the same depth, the pressure of magma was 2.5 times that of the water pressure. Canglan Palace of Bloody Soul Temple was about 5,000 m deep in the magma, the pressure at which location was equal to the water pressure deeper than 12,500 m. Anyone below knights would be crushed into pieces by such a great pressure, not to mention battle spirits who had formed protective battle qis. Even knights would not feel good under such a great pressure.

The maximal depth that underwater robots and submarines which humans invented before the Catastrophe was about 12,000 m. If a huge solid iron ball was thrown deeper than 10,000 m underwater, it would be compressed greatly by water pressure.

Han Zhengfang "bound" Zhang Tie to him by the secret method of Bloody Soul Temple and moved towards the depth of the magma so that he could crush Zhang Tie into pieces using the sheer terror of nature.

The protective battle qi of a shadow knight was definitely more protective than that of an earth knight. Under the same pressure, Han Zhengfang was confident to win the combat in the end. Additionally, due to the greater density and pressure of the magma, Zhang Tie's benefit as a divine dominator was completely restricted.

Han Zhengfang immediately reversed the result of this combat in

such an insidious way.

Zhang Tie had taken a lot of fiery lotus seeds; therefore, he could adapt to the heat of magma; however, he had to sustain the great pressure of the magma.

Han Zhengfang didn't attack Zhang Tie; instead, he just dove towards the depth of the magma. In a short while, they had reached over 10,000 m in depth. The deeper they reached, the more magma there would be. It was absolutely a bottomless magma sea.

Zhang Tie knew what Han Zhengfang was thinking about. Of course, he would not just wait for death. At such a critical moment, Zhang Tie was also trying his utmost efforts to reverse the situation.

Zhang Tie started to attack Han Zhengfang. As he was just 30 m away from Han Zhengfang. Even though he didn't run his lotus-flower eyes, he could also target at Han Zhengfang easily. He just launched his battle qi towards Han Zhengfang after going through the magma between them.

Han Zhengfang was not anxious about fighting Zhang Tie anymore; he just blocked Zhang Tie's attacks as he kept diving towards the depth of the magma.

"Heheheh, just move; you will not move later..." Han Zhengfang's sneer full of killing intent drifted into Zhang Tie's ears.

Zhang Tie soon knew Han Zhengfang's meaning. When he reached 20,000 m deep into the magma sea, he could barely attack Han Zhengfang with his battle qi anymore due to the great pressure from all directions.

The deeper it was, the denser the magma would be and the greater the pressure would be. As a result, 30-m thick magma was as hard as 30-m granite protective layer for his battle qi. Even though his battle qi could still reach Han Zhengfang, its lethality

would be weakened greatly. Han Zhengfang could easily block it only by raising his hand.

If Zhang Tie attacked Han Zhengfang at such a depth, he could not do any harm to Han Zhengfang; additionally, it would accelerate the consumption of his battle qi and physical strength. In this situation, Han Zhengfang could easily collapse Zhang Tie's attack at a trivial price.

Zhang Tie stopped attacking Han Zhengfang; Han Zhengfang didn't attack Zhang Tie. They were not idiots. The one who could stand until the last minute would succeed.

The pressure from all directions constantly compressed Zhang Tie's protective battle qi. Han Zhengfang's protective battle qi was also greatly compressed. After reaching 25,000 m in depth, Zhang Tie became more and more befuddled; he even became breathless. His chest and back felt like being gradually compressed by two iron sheets, causing his chest to become increasingly hotter. The gaps between Chaos and Zhang Tie's body were extremely narrowed. The entire Chaos started to be out of shape due to compression. Zhang Tie could hear the slight sound of frictions from Chaos due to deformation, "Kakakaka".

All of a sudden, Zhang Tie felt his upper lip becoming cold while two lines of nosebleed ran out of his nostrils constantly.

It was blazing white light in front of his eyes, which indicated that the temperature of the magma had reached above 1,000 degree Celsius. Zhang Tie looked around and found it was a vast magma sea; additionally, the bottom of this magma sea should be deeper than 100,000 m.

Han Zhengfang was also bearing the high temperature and pressure 30 m away. His protective battle qi was also less than 1 m away from his body; however, he was much better than Zhang Tie; at least he didn't run nosebleed constantly.

With 30-m scorching magma between them, Han Zhengfang

couldn't see Zhang Tie; however, he could clearly sense Zhang Tie's physical and spiritual situation.

"How about that, do you start to run nosebleed? Haha, it's just a start. Even knights could not bear the great pressure from the magma. Nosebleed is just an omen for your body to lose blood. Gradually, your eyes will be filled with blood; your eyeballs will jump out of your eye sockets; your innards will push your blood out of your body like squeezing water out of the sponge. When your protective battle qi finally collapses, your brains will spurt out of your ears, eyes, nostrils and mouth; your belly will blow up; your intestines and guts would be burned into ashes in the magma.

"I don't care who you're. This magma sea is your graveyard. Even being injured, a tiger is still a tiger; I could not be bullied by an ordinary earth knight, even though you're a divine dominator. You will become the first earth knight that I kill..."

Han Zhengfang said as he continued to dive downwards. In the blink of an eye, the two people had reached over 30,000 m in depth.

All of a sudden, the blazing white light suddenly turned bloody. It was not because the temperature here suddenly fell; Zhang Tie knew that his eyes had started to be congestive while some blood capillaries in his eyes had started to crack. Zhang Tie knew that his eyes must be filled with blood streaks. Each time Zhang Tie's heart beat, he would feel being a kid walking with 1,000 kg's burden on his back.

If it was just a small lake, Zhang Tie could still teleport all the magma here into Castle of Black Iron in order to reduce the pressure around him and make Han Zhengfang abandon his plan. However, it was a vast magma sea. Even if he opened the siphon tunnel linking this magma sea to Castle of Black Iron, it was also almost in vain; before he dried up the magma sea, he might have already been crushed into pieces by the great pressure, not to mention the sequela that he might face after exposing the trump

card of Castle of Black Iron.

This was almost the most dangerous moment for Zhang Tie. In such a desperate situation, almost all the trump cards of Zhang Tie became ineffective at once.

'I couldn't enter Castle of Black Iron, neither could I use the ability of a divine dominator. Will I be killed by Han Zhengfang? Couldn't I even kill a severely injured shadow knight?'

Some alveoli had started to crack while Zhang Tie almost spurted out a mouthful of blood; however, he gritted his teeth and swallowed it forcefully.

'No, never, I will never die here!' Zhang Tie roared inside.

In desperation, a firm belief occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. When his head was almost crushed, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled the scene when he manifested his virtual image of king roc for the first time when he promoted to an earth knight. He sensed the domineering realm of King Roc Sutra once again.

'For free! For free! For free!' This was what rocs pursued for the rest of their lives.

'Who could restrict my freedom?'

'If the earth restricts me, I will break the earth by foot!'

'If the sky restricts me, I will tear up the sky and break the void!'

'If I flap my wings, everything will succumb to me!'

'Who could restrict my freedom? Who could restrict my freedom? Who could restrict my freedom?'

With bloody eyes, Zhang Tie roared towards the sky as he punched against his own lower abdomen by two hands at the same time...

'In the universe, who could make the emperor succumb to him?'

'Ka...'

A crow sounded in the hot sun in the battle qi void of his lower abdomen. Closely after that, the hot sun gave out dazzling light, manifesting the virtual image of king roc. With another crow, a bizarre golden rune flew out of the king roc's mouth and disappeared in Zhang Tie's two chakras.

At this moment, Han Zhengfang suddenly became still as he changed his face greatly.

Just now, Han Zhengfang felt like pulling a car by tank using a rope; at this moment, he felt the car that he pulled suddenly became a mountain. No matter how he tried, he couldn't move it anymore.

'Lock of bloody chakras is a secret skill of Bloody Soul Sutra , I could have defeated all the low-level enemies in it.'

'No way, no way. How could that be? How could that be? Nobody in Bloody Soul Temple had encountered such an exception since the establishment of Bloody Soul Temple.

Han Zhengfang suddenly became puzzled.

If he could, Han Zhengfang really wanted to see what happened to Zhang Tie. Pitifully, Han Zhengfang's vision was completely blocked by the dozens of meters thick scorching magma. He could feel the external situation of Zhang Tie; however, he couldn't feel the situation inside Zhang Tie's body. Additionally, he couldn't approach Zhang Tie any more due to the existence of the lock of bloody chakras. Actually, the distance between them had been fixed.

Zhang Tie moved and took the initiative, followed by Han Zhengfang. As a result, Han Zhengfang became the locust being shackled by the lock of bloody chakras and experienced what Zhang Tie experienced just now. Just now, Han Zhengfang pulled away a "sedan" by a "high-horsepower tank"; in the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie became as powerful as a steam turbine. How could a tank's engine match that of a warship?

At this moment, Zhang Tie was in a special realm where he could clearly sense the marvel when his chakras were bound to that of Han Zhengfang by the secret skill of Bloody Soul Temple.

'He has 3 chakras. I only have 2; however, my 2 chakras are bigger than his 3 chakras. Therefore, Han Zhengfang's 3 chakras are covered by my 2 chakras.'

Just now, Zhang Tie was negative; however, now, Zhang Tie took the initiative.

All of a sudden, a whim occurred to his mind. 'Previously, I couldn't refine the enemy's chakra unless I touched his body by my palms; now, as my chakras have already touched his and I took the initiative, whether could I trigger the Purgatory Samsara Method in this situation?'

The moment this whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, it had become as scorching as the surrounding magma.

'Just do it. Whatever, it's just a trial. I will not lose a hair.'

Closely after that, Zhang Tie triggered his Purgatory Samsara Method directly.

Zhang Tie's two chakras immediately drew Han Zhengfang's water chakra and shattered it like two parts of a huge mill and a merciless grinder...

The moment he triggered it, Zhang Tie had realized that he had made it. In this situation, his secret method could directly act upon on the opposite chakras through the tie between their chakras. The effect was absolutely out of Zhang Tie's imagination. In this situation, the efficiency of Purgatory Samsara Method could reach dozens of times that of before. It was similar to the difference between steam spinning machine and manual spinning wheel.

Zhang Tie was so thrilled that he quivered all over. He had not imagined about such a terrifying effect after combining Purgatory Samsara Method with the lock of bloody chakras of Bloody Soul

Temple.

After succeeding in the first trial, Zhang Tie immediately exerted the Purgatory Samsara Method to the utmost. Like a ferocious beast that bit the blood vessels on the throat of the prey, he spared no chance for Han Zhengfang to launch a counter-attack and escape.

Zhang Tie was very scared about the means of this master of Heavens Reaching Church.

Due to the sudden collapse of his water chakra, Han Zhengfang was immediately severely injured as he spurted out a mouthful of blood at once. At the same time, his protective battle qi also shrunk greatly. Han Zhengfang screamed towards the direction of Zhang Tie at his full efforts with a terrified look as if he had seen a ghost, "Purgatory Samsama..."

Han Zhengfang could never imagine that the guy who already fell into his trap and was shackled by his lock of bloody chakras could grasp the secret method of Purgatory Samsara Method and trigger it in this situation. Even the alchemist demon had not heard about such a talent.

However, Han Zhengfang didn't have time to be amazed anymore. The moment Zhang Tie triggered his Purgatory Samsara Method, the situations between them was utterly reversed. The Purgatory Samsara Method not only shattered his chakras but also completely froze his spiritual energy.

In legends, the real purgatory was filled with magma and flames; at this moment, Han Zhengfang was in the realm purgatory.

After shattering and absorbing Han Zhengfang's water chakra, Zhang Tie started to shatter his earth chakra...

Han Zhengfang didn't know that Zhang Tie couldn't even stop it. As long as the Purgatory Samsara Method and the secret skill of Bloody Soul Temple combined with each other, the effect was as

berserk as a buffalo that had just rushed out of the lair...

When his earth chakra was shattered, Han Zhengfang's protective battle qi was collapsed. He had been fully used up. Before he uttered a sound, he had been burned into ashes by billions of tons' high-temperature magma.

This magma sea became the graveyard of Han Zhengfang; instead of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie forcefully swam over there and caught that token. Closely after that, he teleported the token into Castle of Black Iron.

Soon after he teleported the token into Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie had felt dark in his eyes as he spurted out another mouthful of blood. As his protective battle qi was almost collapsed, Zhang Tie couldn't bear such a desperate situation anymore. He had long been severely injured. Therefore, Zhang Tie targeted that arch door in his mind sea and entered Castle of Black Iron

After entering Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie saw the palace tree, the small tree and the familiar and concerned face of Heller...

"I finally survived back..." Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile. Closely after that, he felt dark in his mind like having shaken off a heavy burden before falling down...

Before he passed out, Zhang Tie heard Edward and his three servants' exclamations...

...

On the evening of November 15th, the 903rd year of Black Iron Calendar, Xuanyuan Hill was in chaos. After a few hours, bloody figures wreaked havoc in 78 provinces of Taixia Country. As a result, the entire Taixia Country was covered with battle flames and smokes. From then on, Taixia country was involved in the 3rd holy war between humans and demons in an all-round manner...

Chapter 1173: A New Start

Castle of Black Iron was the ultimate shelter that Zhang Tie prepared for his family members and friends, also the resting place of Zhang Tie himself!

This time, Zhang Tie fell asleep 4 days.

Sleep was the best way for Zhang Tie to recover his injuries and vitality. Additionally, when he was in deep sleep, Heller fed him a vial of senior recovery medicament. When Zhang Tie woke up 4 days later, he had completely recovered his injuries and vitality.

After waking up, Zhang Tie felt completely relaxed instead of being thrilled. He had not been such relaxed for a long time.

Lying on the big bed of his own room in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie felt returning to the past. In the past, the holy war had not broken out yet. His life in Blackhot City was tranquil and peaceful. Each weekend, his mom would let him have a lie-in on the bed in his own attic. Therefore, Zhang Tie had been used to linger in his bed in the morning of each Saturday and Sunday.

In winter, he would stay in his warm quilt lazily. In summer, the warm sunshine would cast onto his butt through the window of the attic. Each weekend, Zhang Tie would have a pretty good sleep. He would not get up until he smelt the fragrant breakfast that his mom prepared or heard his belly coo or couldn't hold his urine...

The previous insipid life felt pretty happy now.

After killing Han Zhengfang, the top enemy of Zhang Tie and Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie became relaxed at once. He didn't have any concern anymore. What was more, after experiencing this hardship, Zhang Tie grew more mature.

Han Zhengfang was the first shadow knight that Zhang Tie had killed! It was a milestone for Zhang Tie. After getting the invitation card, Zhang Tie came to Xuanyuan Hill to set a plot;

after that, he lit the fuse at the critical moment; finally, he had a close combat with Han Zhengfang. Zhang Tie didn't just have a fight and gnosis about battle realm; instead, he received an all-round baptism and metamorphosis including intelligence, insight, ability and means. After such a baptism and metamorphosis, the former sapling was growing into an unshakable towering tree.

Zhang Tie manipulated the entire process. All the results had met his anticipations—the finance minister of Taixia Country was dead; his identity as the master of Heavens Reaching Church was exposed; Han Clan was uprooted; Meng Shidao was used by him; the Gobbling Party became antagonistic against the Heavens Reaching Church. The local and central patterns of Taixia Country would have great changes—he accomplished all this with his own efforts. He might be a bit lucky; whatever, it was already a big success.

After lingering in the bed and recalling the precious happy and tranquil days for a short while, Zhang Tie felt a bit hungry. Smacking his lips, Zhang Tie got up and came to one window of his room.

Zhang Tie's room was in the highest location of the palace tree. Through the windows of his room, he could easily overlook the entire Immortal Mountain and the habitation in the far.

The sky of Castle of Black Iron was a bit dim. However, the dim colorful clouds in the eastern sky had revealed glowing halos. There was no sun inside Castle of Black Iron. the halos being similar to sunglow referred to the morning of Castle of Black Iron. Such a scene also indicated the start of a new day in Taixia Country.

Some smokes rose in the horizon in the far, bringing a special vitality to Castle of Black Iron. People in Castle of Black Iron started a new day.

The smokes covered the villages being surrounded by hills and

woods. A large area of land on the plain near the villages had been reclaimed. People had built crisscrossed water channels near the riverside so as to provide those farming lands with abundant water.

With lotus-flower eyes, Zhang Tie could see some kids running and frolicking on the ridges of those farming lands jubilantly in the early morning. Many teenagers were practicing various battle skills seriously under the guidance of some elders on the squares in the middle of those villages. Zhang Tie had people deliver those secret methods to them. In Zhang Tie's opinion, the battle skills of those teenagers even their instructors had many loopholes; however, it was already something for commoners.

'Although I couldn't enjoy such a happiness and tranquility anymore, I could grant this happiness and tranquility to others and watch them enjoy it.' Zhang Tie became reassured when he thought in this way.

When it broke completely, the bell ring from the heirons started to resonate among these villages. After hearing the bell rings, all the people gathered in the hierons or the squares near the hierons in the villages, male or female, old or young, including those kids who were having fun and those teenagers who were taking rest after their exercises.

At this moment, some people in white robes walked out of the hierons and hosted a very religious rite. Closely after that, those people in white robes knelt down in front of the hierons and started to pray by putting their palms together and muttering prayers devoutly, followed by all the others.

Of course, the deity being consecrated in the hierons was Zhang Tie's sculpture...

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie touched his nose as he revealed a self-deprecating smile. Closely after that, he moved his eyes away from them.

His Chaos had been taken off by Heller and his three servants. The clothes inside the Chaos had not been taken off. There were still blood stains on his clothes. Heller and the other three servants knew Zhang Tie's custom. As Zhang Tie was not suitable to be served by some men, they didn't change clothes for him during the past 4 days.

It was indeed not comfortable without the care of women. However, Zhang Tie refused the suggestion of Heller and the three servants. Because Zhang Tie felt that it would be more troublesome if he let people send women onto the Immortal Mountain. Therefore, he just tried to look after himself.

After taking off his clothes, he took a bath in his room. After that, he put on a set of clean clothes.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie felt much better at the sight of the handsome teenager in the mirror. He pulled his face against the mirror before leaving his room.

Heller, Edward, Agan, Aziz had long been waiting for him outside his door respectfully.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the four people revealed a smile at the same time. Heller's smile was still implicit and elegant with a sincere pleasure in a dignified and perfect way. Zhang Tie felt that each facial expression and movement of Heller could be taken as an imperial etiquette training mode. However, sparkling tears started to well up their eyes out of excitement.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Tie asked Agan in front of him.

"It's a great pleasure for us to see you wake up, Castle Lord. Heller told us that Castle Lord has made a fruitful harvest this time after killing a powerful enemy. Castle of Black Iron will have a lot of changes. But Castle Lord could barely come back..." Agan said while wiping his tears. At the same time, Edward and Aziz nodded forcefully.

Watching the sincere looks of Agan, Aziz and Edward, Zhang Tie felt a bit warm and touched. 'I remember that Heller told me that I would have a surprise in Castle of Black Iron. Did I really get some rarities from Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong this time?' Zhang Tie thought inside. However, he didn't ask Heller about it right away; instead, he told Agan, Aziz and Edward genially, "Well, don't cry. I just met a bit danger this time. However, I've gained a narrow success. I will not meet the same danger later on. Therefore, you don't need to worry about me anymore. And oh, I've not tasted your food for a long time. I'm so hungry!"

"I've prepared the breakfast for you, Castle Lord. It's all your favorite food!" Edward said.

"Thank you so much!" Zhang Tie threw a deep glance at Edward. Edward indeed helped Zhang Tie a lot in Castle of Black Iron.

"It's my honor!" Edward slightly bowed towards Zhang Tie.

Closely after that, Zhang Tie followed Edward into the dining hall of the palace tree.

As Zhang Tie had not eaten food for a few days and had consumed too much physical strength this time, Zhang Tie was starving this time. He needed some food to make him full. No medicament could replace food.

On the long dining table being covered with a piece of snow-white cloth, there were delicate tableware and various food, including the roasted flesh of huge deep-sea monster, steak with nectar, cheese, sausages, honey tea, various bread, nuts, dozens of fruits and juices and two spirits. This food could feed 10 tough men; however, it was only available to Zhang Tie himself. How luxurious it was!

Heller was directing Edward, Aziz and Agan to serve Zhang Tie from one step behind him.

It took Zhang Tie 1 hour to finish his breakfast, leaving the

greater part of the food. Watching Zhang Tie wiping his mouth using a napkin, Heller clapped his hands while another one entered the dining hall.

After coming to Zhang Tie's front, that one immediately knelt down and kowtowed three times loudly towards Zhang Tie, "It's this old slave's honor to see master!"

Chapter 1174: Old Slave Zhang Gui

'The familiar qi; the strange face of Zhang Tie became dumbfounded!

Zhang Tie was familiar with the qi of this man who kowtowed towards him and called him master. It was the qi of the very earth knight that he captured from the airboat of Han Yuanhong. However, this man's look had changed greatly as if it had been disguised. His original face was thin and long; however, it turned round. He looked like an old neighboring man. 'But why did he call himself this old slave?'

"Previously, this old slave was misled into the evil way and almost lost my life. Thanks to you, my master, this old slave gained a chance to be a good man. This old slave has already understood the universal laws and fortunes. You almost gave this old slave a new life. This old slave might not pay you back for the rest of my life..." The man explained while dropping off tears out of his control.

Zhang Tie listened to his explanation in a dumbfounded look as if he was dreaming. He threw a glance at Heller. Heller blinked his eyes to Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie understood that it was the meritorious service of Heller. 'Now that Heller has already handed this man to me, he must be reliable. Additionally, an earth-knight level old slave would indeed help me a lot. It's an earth knight. Several years ago, Zhang Tie could not even imagine that he would have an earth-knight level slave.

"Ahem...ahem..." Zhang Tie pretended to cough twice as he rubbed his face and said in a perfunctory manner, "Erm...let the bygones be bygones. Hopefully, you could follow my orders in the future!"

"Thanks, master, this old slave is called Xiao Longfei. This name is too sinful. From then on, Xiao Longfei has died, this old slave

has gained a new life. Please gift another name to this old slave, master!"

"My surname is Zhang, you will follow my family name. From now on, you're Zhang...Zhang Gui, which means rich!"

Honestly, the name Zhang Gui was really ordinary and extremely vulgar. However, after hearing this name, the one kneeling down in front of him was very happy and solemn as if he had accomplished a religious rite of gaining a new birth. He seriously kowtowed towards Zhang Tie three times once again before saying, "Thanks for the name, master. From now on, this old slave is Zhang Gui!"

"Alright, stand up!" Besides the enemy that was under his foot, Zhang Tie was really not used to see someone kneeling down in front of him. "From then on, no need to kowtow in front of me anymore!"

"Yes, master!" Zhang Gui stood up. Heller waved his hand towards him. Zhang Gui then left the dining hall in a respectful way.

After Zhang Gui left, Zhang Tie turned around and asked Heller, "What happened to him? Did you control him by a secret method?"

Heller shrugged as he replied innocently, "Castle Lord, do you think that one could only be controlled by a secret method? So many people would like to rebel with ambitious ones regardless of the lives of their wives and children; so many people would like have their family members take drugs and commit suicide with them after joining a heresy; so many people in Ice and Snow Wilderness treat Castle Lord as their deity. Do you think that they are also under the control of secret methods?"

"Can you explain it in details?"

"I just talked with him for a few times and showed him the marvelous Castle of Black Iron. After that, he surrendered to Castle

Lord completely. As Castle Lord came back with the belongings of Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong, after knowing that Han Clan was uprooted by Castle Lord, this man realized that it's his greatest honor to follow Castle Lord. The greatest secret method is to control one's heart. You could control one's heart in many means. Someone one would be convinced by some words. As long as you help him find the truth and belief in his life, he would prostrate himself in worship sincerely."

Heller put it simply; however, his words still reminded Zhang Tie of those believers being brainwashed by false pastors in churches and those unsophisticated youths who believed that they could make a fortune after joining a pyramid marketing organization. 'Heller could definitely brainwash them much more effectively than those false pastors and instructors.'

"Has he been disguised?"

"Disguising is temporary. You could reach the same effect only by using some medicine or making an orthopedic operation; additionally, it's permanent!"

"What about his battle skills and secret methods? Won't they expose his original identity and the relationship between him and Heavens Reaching Church?"

"He cultivates a viscount-level secret method. In the beginning, he was just a member of a small sect in Taixia Country. The small sect has long disbanded. After promoting to a knight, he sought refuge with Han Zhengfang. The viscount-level secret method that he cultivates has lasted for a long time in a large range in Taixia Country. More than one sect and clan have such a secret method. Therefore, nobody could recognize his original identity from the secret method that he cultivates. Additionally, when in Heavens Reaching Church, he just served Han Clan and was always low-key. He even gained some secret methods from Han Clan. Few people know him!" Heller replied.

"Is it okay for him to stay in Castle of Black Iron?"

"No problem. He would not leak your secrets at any time, Castle Lord. Although I've not controlled him using a secret method, I've made a precaution on him. When in need, he would blow up!"

Zhang Tie became reassured, 'Heller is always considerate.' Zhang Tie wanted to bring Zhang Gui out of Castle of Black Iron; therefore, he had to know some details. If he just kept such an earth knight in Castle of Black Iron, it would be too wasteful.

"Is that the surprise that you referred to?"

"It's just a small part. The real surprise is in the parlor of the palace tree!" Heller smiled, "Castle Lord, you need to review your achievement!"

...

It took Zhang Tie less than 1 minute to arrive at the parlor of the palace tree from the dining hall. Although Zhang Tie was curious about that, he still walked casually and calmly towards there. He didn't need to be anxious anymore. After all, the booties were in Castle of Black Iron and would not escape away themselves. He had already slept 4 days; therefore, he didn't need to save such a few seconds.

That item was higher than 2 m. It was a huge polyhedral crystal. Floating in the parlor of the palace tree quietly, it was giving out the brilliance and constantly changing its color like a rainbow. Like huge shadowy, colorful lamps on the stage, it made the entire lobby of the palace tree colorful and dreamlike.

The entire lobby was filled with surging four elements.

"A piece of God's Star!" At the sight of this dreamlike crystal floating in the air, Zhang Tie couldn't stand crying out.

It was too shocking. Zhang Tie had not imagined that the surprise referred to a piece of God's Star. This piece was much larger than that one he saw in Ice and Snow Wilderness;

additionally, it had different colors. Of course, it had different functions.

Being thrilled, a possibility occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, 'Was that piece of God's Star which was going to be auctioned in Gold and Power Market purchased by Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong?'

Zhang Tie looked at Heller. Heller nodded towards him before saying, "This piece of God's Star indeed comes from the space-teleportation equipment of Han Yuanhong!"

'No wonder few people could see this piece of God's Star since the beginning.' Zhang Tie immediately figured out the reason. As the master and bright golden master of Gold and Power Market respectively, Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong were both ambitious. Of course, when they met the piece of God's Star, they would get it in any way. Han Clan was qualified to gain it. How could the original owner of this piece of God's Star withstand the allure and power of Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong?

Zhang Tie closed his eyes as he immediately injected his spiritual energy into the piece of God's Star.

Previously, Castle of Black Iron was isolated from the Elements Realm. Zhang Tie could not absorb elements from Elements Realm in Castle of Black Iron. If he wanted to cultivate, he had to absorb element crystals. However, with the existence of this piece of God's Star, Zhang Tie could feel that the entire lobby of the palace tree was filled with surging elements ubiquitous.

After sensing it for a short while, Zhang Tie opened his eyes with a bit doubt in his eyes. Besides Gold and Power Law, each top sect of Taixia Country should at least have a piece of God's Star that could gather a single element and act upon knights effectively. That piece of God's Star in Ice and Snow Wilderness could gather 4 elements into the source of berserk energy; however, this one could form a sea of 4 elements instead of a single one. Although the

4 elements were plentiful, they were very berserk and couldn't be controlled easily. As for the cultivation of knights, this piece of God's Star was definitely more effective than an ordinary elements gathering matrix. However, the elements just mixed with each other instead of being separated. Therefore, the effect of this piece of God's Star would be sharply reduced; perhaps, this was the very reason that the clan which owned this piece of God's Star would like to sell it in terms of the auction.

'Whatever, better than nothing. At least I could continue my cultivation in Castle of Black Iron without elements crystal.'

"Castle Lord, are you thinking about cultivating with this piece of God's Star in Castle of Black Iron in the future?" Heller asked as if he had already known what Zhang Tie was thinking about.

Zhang Tie nodded, "Right, I was thinking about that. This piece of God's Star is indeed a great achievement!"

"If Castle Lord really thinks so, I think you could not make full use of this piece of God's Star. It would be wasteful if you just cultivated with it!" Heller said seriously.

Chapter 1175: Elements Tunnel

"Isn't the piece of God's Star used for cultivation?" Zhang Tie asked out of amazement.

"It is for knights!" Heller said in a calm look, "However, in Castle of Black Iron, the piece of God's Star could have another purpose!"

"What purpose?"

"If Pool of Chaos could devour and integrate with the piece of God's Star, the Pool of Chaos could advance to a higher level. The entire Castle of Black Iron would have a great change by then!"

'Advance the Pool of Chaos?' Zhang Tie became stunned by Heller's words as he had not imagined that the Pool of Chaos could advance to a higher level. He became interested in it right away, "How? Go ahead!"

"Castle of Black Iron is an independent world. This world is not connected to the Elements Realm. Castle Lord, you must know this!"

"Yes, I know!"

"Pool of Chaos could convert everything into the basic energy, which is what Castle of Black Iron's expansion relies upon!"

Zhang Tie nodded once again.

"Castle Lord could connect Castle of Black Iron with the Elements Realm using the piece of God's Star as an element transfer tunnel. After devouring and integrating with the piece of God's Star, the Pool of Chaos could automatically and constantly withdraw elements from the Elements Realm and convert the elements from the Elements Realm into the basic energy for the expansion of Castle of Black Iron!"

'Automatically? Constantly?' The two words were captured by Zhang Tie sensitively. After being silent for a second, Zhang Tie

asked carefully, "You mean...if the Pool of Chaos could devour and integrate with this piece of God's Star, it's equal to connecting a free pipe between the Elements Realm and Castle of Black Iron. Elements could constantly flow into Pool of Chaos from Elements Realm for the expansion of Castle of Black Iron!"

"It's a vivid metaphor, Castle Lord!" Heller nodded.

Zhang Tie tried to become reassured as he took in a deep breath and asked, "After integrating with this piece of God's Star, how many enemies could the Pool of Chaos withdraw from the Elements Realm per day? How large the area of land could these energies be converted to for Castle of Black Iron?"

"This is a constant process. Therefore, its efficiency is very high. After integrating with this piece of God's Star, the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron could convert the basic energy that it withdraws from the Elements Realm to about 20 square miles' land a day!

"Won't such constant withdrawal affect the Elements Realm?"

Heller couldn't help laughing as he looked at Zhang Tie seriously and said, "Castle Lord, the entire world that you're in, including the sun, moons and stars in the sky, the planets, the entire material universe that commoners could sense and see, including the bright substances and dark substances in the universe are composed of elements in the Elements Realm according to different rules. How large is this planet? How large is this galaxy? How large is this universe? As for the Elements Realm, even if Castle of Black Iron becomes 100 times even 10,000 times larger than the entire Eastern Continent one day, the bit loss of the elements is just a drop of water in the ocean; additionally, the Elements Realm and the Material Realm could balance. Implies with the law of balance. No matter what, Castle of Black Iron could not influence the balance between the Elements Realm and the Material Realm."

"After the Pool of Chaos devours and integrates with the piece of God's Star, could I cultivate in Castle of Black Iron using the piece of God's Star?"

"You could as long as you're near the Pool of Chaos. Some elements would spill out of the Pool of Chaos automatically. Of course, the densities of those elements could not match that of the elements that were gathered by this piece of God's Star. It might be equal to that of elements which could be sensed by knights in the Physical Realm without the help of the elements gathering matrix. Common knights could accept such a cultivation environment; however, it's too weak for Castle Lord!"

"How long will the Pool of Chaos take to integrate with the piece of God's Star?"

"Very fast, within 1 hour!"

Zhang Tie immediately sprung up. Closely after that, he pulled Heller's arm and walked towards the gate of the palace tree before saying, "Let's go. Right now. What are we waiting for?"

Zhang Tie remembered how difficult it was for him to pour some slags into Castle of Black Iron when he attended the survival training in Wild Wolf Valley. It was like smuggling. At that time, he would smell stinky and be extremely fatigued everyday only for increasing a bit basic energy for Castle of Black Iron. After promoting to a knight, even though he could open the siphon tunnel of Castle of Black Iron to absorb seawater at a fast speed, the basic energy of seawater could only be available for expanding the terrain of Castle of Black Iron.

Being limited to the supply of basic energy, the space of Castle of Black Iron was still small until now. Sometimes, Zhang Tie even felt that he had wasted such a treasure. If not revenge Han Clan, after returning to Youzhou Province, Zhang Tie even planned to absorb some more water from the ocean.

The appearance of this piece of God's Star almost broke through

the bottleneck of the expansion of Castle of Black Iron due to insufficient basic energy storage. As a result, Zhang Tie could have a great amount of basic energy storage which could be converted to about 20 square miles' land a day. Although 20 square miles were not a big figure; it would become considerable day by day.

Given the great consumption of elements to form a chakra of the emperor-level secret method, Zhang Tie had long determined to use Purgatory Samsara Method to form his chakras. He even felt it a bit slow to absorb element crystals now. Of course, he ignored the weak effect of the piece of God's Star.

Zhang Tie had long given up absorbing element crystals from the Elements Realm. Now that it was available to absorb elements from the Elements Realm in Castle of Black Iron now, even if Zhang Tie ignored it, the others might use it in the future. Zhang Tie thought that this cultivation method could at least help those knights in Castle of Black Iron promote to higher levels if there was one day when he teleported his family members to Castle of Black Iron.

'If this piece of God's Star could meet the possible demand for cultivation in Castle of Black Iron and break the bottleneck of the insufficient basic energy in Castle of Black Iron, why not have the Pool of Chaos devour and integrate with it?'

Zhang Tie wanted it right away.

...

A few meters away from the palace tree, there was a stone path leading to the back of the mountain. After walking down the stairs, Zhang Tie came to the side of the Pool of Chaos.

The former Pool of Chaos had already become the Abyss of Chaos, a part of the Immortal Mountain. However, in Zhang Tie's mind, this Abyss of Chaos was always the Heavenly No. 1 garbage disposal plant.

The platform where Zhang Tie accepted the baptism of the Heavenly Waterfall was still on the side of the Abyss of Chaos. However, after a few years, that platform had been covered with mosses. There were some marks on the platform——some sword traces and the marks of his butt. The beech trees on the side of that platform also grew high and sturdy. The shades of the beech trees covered a small half of that platform. If it was a hot day, this place could become a nice place to prevent from sunstroke.

The nestle of the little black beetle was on the cliff of the Abyss of Chaos. After sensing that Zhang Tie was back, the little black beetle immediately flew out of the nestle and flew around Zhang Tie jubilantly. Soon after that, a sonic boom drifted from the sky while an extremely imposing thunder hawk descended as fast as a lightning bolt. The strong wind brought by the wings of the thunder hawk directly blew away the little black beetle, sending it rolling far away.

The thunder hawk was almost as tall as Zhang Tie. It kept rubbing its head against Zhang Tie's arm like a spoiled baby.

After braking itself, the little black beetle flew back stubbornly once again. It flew around the thunder hawk for a short while as if it was protesting how the thunder hawk maltreated him. However, the thunder hawk ignored it in a distant look. Finally, the little black thing directly fell onto Zhang Tie's hair as it wanted to find back its position. The thunder hawk threw a glare at it as it uttered a muffled-thunder like sound. Closely after that, it stretched out its neck and wanted to peak the beetle. The little black thing was so scared that it flew away at once.

Insects were born to be afraid of birds, even though the little black beetle was not ordinary; however, the thunder hawk was not an ordinary bird either.

The scene that the little black thing strove for Zhang Tie's favor with the thunder hawk was very interesting. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter. He stretched out his hand to

stroke the metallic, smooth and tidy feathers on the neck of the thunder hawk as he called back the little black thing onto his collar before saying, "It's fine; it's fine. You two are both my good partners. Little Thunder, you're large, don't bully Little Black. When you were not here these years, Little Black had helped me a lot."

The thunder hawk squawked in a dissatisfied way, which meant, "If I'm here, I could definitely help you more." The little black beetle raised its shell in a pleasant way which meant that "I could fly too".

After soothing the two little things, Zhang Tie waved his hand towards Heller before saying, "Let's start. I want to see how the Pool of Chaos devours and integrates with the piece of God's Star!"

Heller just revealed a smile while the piece of God's Star as colorful as rainbow behind him immediately flew into the Abyss of Chaos and was devoured by the black mist in the Abyss of Chaos.

The black mist and the black silt-like chaos beneath the mist of the Abyss of Chaos immediately rolled and formed a huge swirl. When the swirl rotated, the black Abyss of Chaos immediately gave out colorful brilliance...

Chapter 1176: Spatial Change

It only took the Abyss of Chaos less than 1 hour to devour and integrate with the piece of God's Star as was told by Heller. Actually, it was at most 40 minutes. When a dreamlike light curtain like polar light twisted and replaced the original black mist that covered the Abyss of Chaos, the entire process came to an end.

As a result, besides being black, the original Pool of Chaos which was as black as hundreds of millions of years old swamp was also covered with light bands in yellow, blue, cyan and red and swirls in different sizes. Colorful lights were spilling out of the Pool of Chaos while massive elements were surging into the Pool of Chaos like a great river or an ocean. The 4 elements were constantly devoured and converted into the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron by the Pool of Chaos.

The Abyss of Chaos could devour too many elements per second. Therefore, some fine particles of elements escaped out of the Abyss of Chaos and loomed in the air. Numerous floating light spots were flying around the Abyss of Chaos like colorful fireflies. As a result, the lifeless Abyss of Chaos became vigorous and dreamlike. Zhang Tie was really stunned by this scene.

It was dreamlike and shocking even in the daytime. In the evening, the scene here would be more romantic and brilliant.

After sensing the 4 elements, the little black beetle on Zhang Tie's collar flew off at once out of ecstasy. After flying around Zhang Tie for a short while, it hurriedly chased after those looming light spots of 4 elements in the air. After that, it rapidly flew back into his nestle on the cliff of Abyss of Chaos. The little beetle immediately felt that its nestle became a sea-view mansion.

"Is it still the Abyss of Chaos?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

Heller replied with a smile, "After devouring a piece of God's Star, this Abyss of Chaos has already evolved once, Castle Lord

could rename it!"

After naming an earth knight, Zhang Tie said without any hesitation, "Just call it Abyss of Elements from then on!"

Zhang Tie was so happy that he zoomed in the window of the basic attributes of Castle of Black Iron which he had not checked for a long time.

After expanding the terrain and space of Castle of Black Iron for a few times, the contents in the window of basic attributes of Castle of Black Iron had been adapted to Zhang Tie's recognition and demands much better in a more intelligent and human-friendlier way.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether they were adjusted by Heller on purpose. For instance, the units of length and distance had been changed to "meter" and "kilometer" which were universally adopted by humans in that times.

Additionally, the items "length" and "width" also turned into "land area" and "average thickness of crust", which sounded more three-dimensional and plentiful.

Because of these changes, the window of basic attributes of Castle of Black Iron in front of Zhang Tie looked a bit fresher.

Castle of Black Iron

——Land area: 2500 square miles

——Average crustal thickness: 200 m

——Aura value: 86928703

——Merit value: 172587664

——Basic energy storage: 3985210

...

Zhang Tie had not checked the window of basic attributes of Castle of Black Iron for a long time. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie

found that the aura value of Castle of Black Iron had already reached over 80 million points while his merit value had reached 150,000,000 points. Of course, the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron was still the least since last large-scale terrain and space renovation as he didn't spare any time to increase the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron during the past years.

However, what made Zhang Tie reassured was that figure of the basic energy storage started to rise rapidly like that on the water meter. It indicated that Castle of Black Iron had been able to gain basic energy from Elements Realm constantly.

Zhang Tie then clicked the logs of merit value.

——Eliminating the evil doers and encourage people to do good is the biggest mercy of creator among humans; respect the universal laws and love people is the nearest staircase for laities to return to the heavens; fortunate ones, one your way back to the heavens, please show the mercy of creator across the world so that the gods in the heavens could understand your sincerity; please receive the sincerest pleasure and gratitude from hundreds of billions of living beings; please end the evil souls and dark forces; when you become the light of your own, you will walk on the light for sure as a brilliant road would be spread under your foot.

The above paragraph was on the top of the log about merit value. It still made Zhang Tie hot boiled even now. Below this paragraph, there were concrete logs about merit values.

There were many logs about merit value lately. The front logs were all about setting free hairy shellfish and gulf shrimps which indicated that Paul was still carrying out the task strictly. Behind these logs, Zhang Tie saw the logs about killing Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong.

Zhang Tie clicked the log about killing Han Zhengfang.

——In the midnight of November 16th, the 903rd year of Black Iron Calendar, Castle Lord killed Han Zhengfang the master of

Heavens Reaching Church in the magma sea and gained 32358410 merit value points.

'Over 30 million merit value points?' Zhang Tie took in a deep breath.

He then read the earlier log.

—On November 15th, the 903rd year of Black Iron Calendar, Castle Lord killed Han Yuanhong the young master of Heavens Reaching Church in Xuanyuan Hill and gained 752,100 merit value points.

The merit value points for killing Han Yuanhong were much smaller than that of Han Zhengfang. It indicated the sharp difference between the two people in positions and abilities. In another word, Han Zhengfang had done greater harm to Taixia Country and made more wicked deeds than his son.

The last log was recorded on November 15th too.

—On November 15th, the 903rd year of Black Iron Calendar, Castle Lord unveiled the plot of Heavens Reaching Church in a secret method of the Great Wilderness Sutra in a wise and brave way and caused a series of chain reactions. As a result, Castle Lord gained 115,870,016 merit value points.

'After unveiling the real identity of Han Zhengfang in Xuanyuan Hill, I gained over 100 million merit value points? It's even higher than killing Han Zhengfang?'

Zhang Tie was shocked for quite a while before recovering his composure, 'If the merit value points that I gained by unveiling the real identity of Han Zhengfang is higher than killing Han Zhengfang himself, does it mean that what I easily did by those swans in Xuanyuan Hill was more influential and meaningful than that I killed Han Zhengfang at the risk of my life? Even though I've not killed Han Zhengfang, I've also gained over 100 million merit value points only by manifesting the 12 huge words using swans.'

When he thought about this, Zhang Tie moved his eyes onto the paragraph on the top of that log about merit value points. After understanding it for a short while, Zhang Tie closed the window about the basic attributes of Castle of Black Iron only by a click.

Standing beside the Abyss of Elements for a short while silently, Zhang Tie looked at Heller, "Does it mean that the space of Castle of Black Iron could be constantly expanded as long as I could provide enough merit value points?"

"Yes, aura value could be constantly produced by plants in Castle of Black Iron; basic energy could be constantly gained from the Abyss of Elements. As long as Castle Lord has enough merit value points, you could expand the space of Castle of Black Iron constantly. Therefore, if Castle Lord has a long-term plan about expanding Castle of Black Iron, you'd better pay attention to the provision of merit value!"

"Oh, you mentioned that Abyss of Elements could provide 20 square miles' land for Castle of Black Iron every day. What's the thickness of the earth's crust? Is it still 200 m?"

"Not 200 m, but 50,000 m, the minimal depth of crust which is required for producing natural mineral veins and ores in Castle of Black Iron!" Heller continued with a smile, "Castle Lord has really underestimated the power of the combination of this piece of God's Star and the Abyss of Chaos!"

Zhang Tie immediately remembered what Heller told him when he had Castle of Black Iron form this terrain last time——If you could produce an ocean or a piece of land that covers over 600 square miles and is over 30 miles in thickness as an initial earth crust, Castle of Black Iron might automatically produce one or more natural mineral veins or ores in the process of the formation and renovation of the space and terrain...

"You mean, I might gain one or more ores by expanding the land area of Castle of Black Iron by 600 square miles per month?" Zhang

Tie became spirited at once.

"Principally, yes..."

Chapter 1177: Counting the Booties

"Principally yes?" Zhang Tie knew that it was not that easy given the tone of Heller.

"Yes. Castle Lord, you have to know some points!" Heller said calmly, "The daily output of the aura value couldn't match the basic energy that could be gained by the Abyss of Elements each day. If not include the aura value points that you have accumulated over the past years, the daily aura value increase that could be produced by plants in Castle of Black Iron could only form 0.16 square mile's land which could contain ores. Unless you expand the current land area of Castle of Black Iron by over 30 times, namely having it reach at least 7,000 square miles while being covered with a wood on its surface could the daily aura value increase match the daily basic energy increase and meet the constantly expansion of the space of Castle of Black Iron. The premise is that Castle Lord has to provide enough merit value points!"

"Besides, Castle Lord needs to know some more tips. First, the ores are produced optionally in the process of the formation of the earth's surface; 160 square miles' land is just the minimal requirement for the formation of ores, which are of the lowest qualities. They might even not be formed sometimes. Even though it is a gold ore, don't expect that you could gain hundreds of tons of gold from it. You could gain at most a few tons of gold from it in the earth on such a scale. The greater land area you could form for a time, the more varieties and amount of ores could you gain."

"Second, there are merely less than 10 templates about the varieties of ores that could be formed in Castle of Black Iron. The former two kinds are the low-quality iron ores and crystal ores that you gained in Wild Wolf Valley. The other ores originate from those crystal ores and ordinary ores that Castle Lord gained from the Earth-elements Realm casually. If Castle Lord wants more

varieties of ores in Castle of Black Iron, you have to provide the corresponding templates. The higher level the ore is, the more aura value and merit value would it require. Additionally, as Castle of Black Iron form ores randomly, even if Castle Lord inputs a great amount of aura value and merit value in forming it, you could not gain high-level ores for sure. The more aura value and merit value you input in, the more possible it will be for you to gain high-quality ores. Additionally, the possibility has an upper limit..."

Whenever Heller "woke up" Zhang Tie, he would become very serious like a set of precise difference engine.

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie indeed knew it much better. However, he didn't give up his thought completely.

"I've purchased plant seeds. But I've not imagined that I could gain a piece of God's Star this time. Therefore, the bottleneck of basic energy storage is solved at once. The insufficiency of aura value that you mentioned just now is indeed a problem; however, it doesn't mean that I couldn't solve it!" Zhang Tie said as he started his multi-tasking ability and gained a figure at once, "The basic energy storage that Castle of Black Iron absorb per month could be used to expand 160 square miles' land in the thickness of 50,000 m. As long as I maintain the current earth thickness of 200 m, I could expand 160,000 square miles' land per month. Is that right?"

"Yes!"

"Can't the current aura value and merit value in Castle of Black Iron meet such an expansion one month later?"

"Castle Lord, your merit value is enough for it; however, even one month later, the aura value in Castle of Black Iron could only meet the expansion of about 9,000 square miles' land!"

"Well, just 9,000 square miles' land!" Zhang Tie forcefully waved his hand as he determined his mind in a split second. He added,

"Whatever, there're only a few people in Castle of Black Iron. They don't pose a great demand for ores. Let's make a thin pie first. After that, we will spread plant seeds over it. We only need to make the increase in daily aura value match the increase in daily basic energy as fast as possible and constantly meet the expansion of Castle of Black Iron. After solving this problem, I will further solve the provision of merit value!"

"Castle Lord, do you plan to expand and improve Castle of Black Iron as fast as possible in the future?"

"Yup. After this event in Xuanyuan Hill, I'm afraid that Taixia Country would be increasingly chaotic. I might have to live in here with my family members and those people that I could save. Therefore, I should make some preparation now!"

Zhang Tie then negotiated with Heller about the details of the expansion of Castle of Black Iron 1 month later beside the Abyss of Elements. After the negotiation, Zhang Tie suddenly thought about something as he asked Heller, "Oh, Han Yuanhong and Han Zhengfang should not only carry one piece of God's Star. I saw a tan token when Han Zhengfang died..."

"They indeed carried many more items. Castle Lord makes unimaginable achievement this time. Those items are in the treasure bank of the palace tree. Castle Lord, you should review them by yourself. You might have a surprise!" Heller said with a meaningful look.

'The last surprise that Heller mentioned referred to the piece of God's Star, what about this one?'

Zhang Tie's curiosity was aroused by Heller at once. He patted the thunder hawk to have it fly off before saying, "If you say so, I have to count my booties!"

"I think Castle Lord will not be disappointed!" Heller replied with a smile.

After throwing another glance at the Abyss of Elements in front of him, Zhang Tie left...

...

A few minutes later, Heller and Zhang Tie returned to the lobby of the palace tree. Zhang Tie looked around the small tree before entering it.

This fruit of brilliance almost became dark as if it could absorb the surrounding light. In the dark, the fruit contained a bizarre spiral light band which looked like a galaxy in the universe. Zhang Tie had not seen such a fruit of brilliance; however, he could sense the terrifying spiritual energy in this fruit of brilliance, which was far greater than that of any fruit of brilliance that he had ever taken.

There were 3 fruits of judgment on the side of this fruit of brilliance.

Zhang Tie knew that these fruits of judgment were of the same skill——body-separation skill. At the sight of the three fruits of judgment, Zhang Tie had known that his body-separation skill would advance to a super level from preliminary level. After taking the 3 fruits, the final fruit of judgment would advance his body-separation skill to master-level.

A red and black fruit of bloodline was hiding in the dense leaves of the small tree in the shape of a bizarre 16-side crystal gem. He could almost not discover it if he didn't look at it carefully. Like that pitch-dark fruit of brilliance, this fruit of bloodline also manifested something special. This one was larger than the former ones; colorful lights were flashing by inside the fruit of bloodline now and then.

'When I killed Old Monster Qi, I've already gained a fruit of bloodline, which contained 1784 points of bloodline energy. I spent 67 points in activating a fundamental "spear affinity". There are still 1717 points of bloodline energy left. This fruit of bloodline

definitely carries much more bloodline energy points than the former one. I could gain 1784 points of bloodline energy by killing an earth knight when I was a black iron knight. This time, after killing a shadow knight as an earth knight, I should at least gain two more times bloodline energy than the last time.

Besides these fruits, there were two more fruits of redemption on the small tree.

Watching those bizarre fruits, Zhang Tie knew that he had made a fortune. After taking these fruits, his overall strength would definitely rise greatly once again, as the fruit of brilliance, the fruit of bloodline and the 3 fruits of judgment were all of the unusual effects.

'Besides these fruits, I've not fully converted the water elements that I gained from Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong into my own chakra.'

Zhang Tie revealed a brilliant smile. He was not anxious about taking them right now; instead, after circling around the small tree and counting those fruits, he left the small tree and followed Heller into the treasure bank of the palace tree.

Zhang Tie's treasure bank was at the bottom of the palace tree. The entire treasure bank covered about 60,000 square meters and was higher than 50 m. There was a golden fluorite crystal lamp in each a few meters, which illuminated the entire treasure bank. The entire treasure bank was divided into 4 regions. Each region was filled with various rarities that Zhang Tie plundered from subcontinents and continents. If a commoner entered the treasure bank for the first time, he might be thrilled too much and have a heart attack at the sight of so many treasures. It was like the legendary paradise where was covered with treasures.

Precious metals such as gold and silver were the most ordinary items in the treasure bank. Zhang Tie didn't pack gold in crates, but in piles like the piles of wheat straws on the threshing grounds

in rural areas. Each pile of gold was about 4-5 m high like a golden Mongolian yurt. The moment one entered the treasure bank, he would see dozens of rows of tidy golden Mongolian yurts extending all the way towards far...

Chapter 1178: Bloody Soul Sutra

The treasure bank contained all the wealth that Zhang Tie plundered from the 18 Three-eye Association clans in Waii Subcontinent, which were robbed by the latter from the northern countries in Waii Subcontinent.

Zhang Tie didn't feel like counting the value of the gold and silver in the treasure bank. He had been numb about them. The largest region of the treasure bank was used to store these gold. There were over 300,000 tons of silver, all of which were put in the underground warehouse as they were less valuable than gold.

As for the other 3 regions in the treasure bank, the second region was used to store other precious metals, gems and top-quality crystals. Mithril, abyss magical iron, mountain copper, violet gold, ruby, sapphire, cat's eye and diamonds were packed in crates in terms of categories. These treasures covered over 30,000 square meters. In order to store these items, Edward even made high metal racks. Like books in the library, these crates were put on the high metal racks. If a person couldn't fly, he had to use a professional mobile bridge ladder.

The third region of the treasure bank was used to store cultural relics, rare curios, jewelry and artworks of each human age. Many things were strange to Zhang Tie. However, now that those Three-eye Association clans collected these things seriously, he robbed away all of them, including some boring sculptures, oil paints and antiques.

The 4th region of the treasure bank contained what Zhang Tie could use now. They were of the highest value, including more than 10 silver secret items, over 10 secret pearls that had not been opened, some vials of rare medicaments on special medicament racks, some weapons and armors on the armracks and batches of element crystals that were placed in categories.

The footsteps of Zhang Tie and Heller were reverberating around the entire treasure bank. The resources in the treasure bank were as rich as a country; especially those silver secret items and space-teleportation items; even top clans in Taixia Country could not have such luxurious furnishings.

In the beginning, after coming here, Zhang Tie would not feel like leaving anymore. Several times later, he would still feel thrilled. Gradually, Zhang Tie had been used to it. Now, Zhang Tie had been numb about this shiny treasure bank.

When he passed by the 3rd region, he didn't even throw a glance at those priceless items over there. After passing by the 3rd region, Zhang Tie glanced at a golden mountain in front of him for a short while.

The golden mountain was genuinely a mountain of gold coins.

This golden mountain was in the center of the treasure bank. The entire golden mountain was composed of gold coins with various patterns. From a distance, it was like a pyramid made of gold coins. The golden mountain was 40 m in height. After being spread over the ground, they could cover a circular area whose diameter was almost 100 m. There was a huge pit as deep as dozens of meters beneath the golden mountain, which was also filled with gold coins. Under the lamplights, numerous gold coins were sparkling and dazzling.

It was very vulgar to put a pile of gold coins in the treasure bank. However, Zhang Tie stuck to it. Because this was one of his biggest life dreams when he was young. Zhang Tie had tried to sleep and roll on the golden mountain. After gradually losing his interest in it, Zhang Tie discovered that it was actually not comfortable to lie on gold coins; at least it was not as comfortable as lying and rolling on sand and bed. If he rolled too excessively on it, he might be buried by the gold coins that slid off the top of the golden mountain like an avalanche. Although it was not fatal, it was not funny.

When he didn't have such wealth, Zhang Tie thought that he would be very happy with them; however, after owning them, Zhang Tie found that what could make him really happy were not these gold coins but the rice brew that was made by his mom when he was young.

The brilliance and prosperity would finally return to plain and pureness. When one really understood what were the most precious things in his life, he had reached a higher life realm.

'Beloved ones are most precious for people; those who love a person the most is his or her parents.'

At the sight of that golden mountain that he was always dreaming about when he was young, a whim flashed through Zhang Tie's mind, 'After a few more days, I will be able to return home in front of the public.'

...

The moment Zhang Tie entered the 4th region, he had noticed the change. There were 3 most evident changes. First, there were 4 more secret weapons here. Second, there were batches of element crystals. Third, there were 3 more space-teleportation items on the rack.

Zhang Tie and Heller walked towards the rack of space-teleportation items.

It was great for any knight to have a space-teleportation item. However, there was one row of space-teleportation items here which looked like jewelry being waited to be selected and waiters to be called by Zhang Tie.

Over 10 space-teleportation items were placed in a row on a table which was covered with green goose down. They were what Zhang Tie had achieved over these years. Some of them were plundered; some were from secret pearls. After a casual glance at them, Zhang Tie had discovered 3 new items. He only had an impression of the

tan token that was left after Han Zhengfang disappeared in the magma sea.

However, Heller introduced the other two to him first.

"This finger ring and waistband are two portable space-teleportation items from Han Yuanhong. As the host of Gold and Power Market, Han Yuanhong put a lot of good things in the two space-teleportation items. They contain many anonymous gold checks and documents of drawing rights of 12.8 billion gold coins in total, 43,654 earth-element crystals, 21,250 water-element crystals, 8,500 wind-element crystals and 4,000 fire-element crystal, over 1,200 vials of medicaments of different categories, some bronze secret-level armors and helmets, two quality high-level elements gathering towers and some food and drinks..."

'I made a fortune! F*ck!'

The figures reported by Heller shocked Zhang Tie a bit. Although he knew that Han Yuanhong would carry some special items when he escaped, Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could carry so many valuables with him.

'12.8 billion gold coins. What does that mean? The entire Guan Clan could hardly gather 700 million gold coins in a short period, 12.8 billion gold coins could be used to build over 100 cities or a prosperous prefecture in Taixia Country. Did Han Zhengfang prepare to use such a great amount of gold coins to recover Bloody Soul Temple or establish a country somewhere one day?'

Zhang Tie turned around and looked at the piles of elements crystals. Zhang Tie didn't know whether other clans could have so many elements crystals, he knew that Huaiyuan Palace didn't have so many elements crystals. It was Zhang Tie's first time to see a knight carrying so many elements crystals with him.

Zhang Tie took up that finger ring left by Han Yuanhong casually. It was actually a private seal of Han Yuanhong as Han Yuanhong's name was sealed on it. After injecting his spiritual

energy into it, Zhang Tie found that the area of finger ring was approximately 300 cubic meters, which indicated that it was a top space-teleportation item.

The belt buckle was a dragon head as large as a half palm. Given the two eyes of the dragon head, Zhang Tie knew that it was special. Because the two eyes were made of top-class alchemist's gems. There were 7 flowers on the gems. Such gems were definitely carved by an alchemist master. What was more, this pair of alchemist's gems were rare sun gems.

Zhang Tie checked the function of this pair of alchemist's gems. Closely after that, his face turned strange. 'F*ck, this pair of alchemist's sun gems could activate the surging points on man's kidney and perineum. To put it simply, they could tonify one's Yang.

"F*ck, the two sons of Han Zhengfang are nothing different."

Zhang Tie felt a bit disgusted; however, he also knew that this item was not good or bad. In the eyes of those who needed them, this item was priceless, especially that pair of sun gems.

The space inside the belt buckle contained over 1,000 square meters, which indicated that it was also a top space-teleportation item.

After putting down the belt buckle, Zhang Tie took up that token of Han Zhengfang.

This token was almost as long as his palm. Although it looked like being made of copper, it wasn't. Because the token was heavier than mithril. Besides, there were complex and mysterious grains on the token. Zhang Tie could recognize a sealed word "Decree" in the middle of these grains. The moment Zhang Tie held the token, he had felt being sober while the spiritual energy in his mind sea became tranquil at once. He felt pretty comfortable. 'This token could lubricate one's spiritual energy. How marvelous it is!'

Zhang Tie looked at it for a short while before asking, "What's inside?"

"I've not taken the items out of it yet. Castle Lord could review it yourself..."

After hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie immediately injected his spiritual energy into the space of the token...

The token had a large space. It was the space-teleportation item with the largest space that Zhang Tie had ever seen besides Castle of Black Iron. It was even two times larger than that of Xuanwu Secret Warehouse of Bloody Soul Temple.

A 3-storey pavilion made of violet gold was floating inside the space.

On the pitch-dark metal tablet of the pavilion, there were some bloody words——Bloody Soul Sutra Enlightenment Pavilion.

At the sight of these words, Zhang Tie's heart almost stopped beating in a split second.

However, closely after that, Zhang Tie recovered his composure as he injected his spiritual energy into the sutra enlightenment pavilion.

It was hollow in the 3-storey pavilion. As there was no sundry and redundant decoration inside it besides an eye-catching black round high platform in the middle, a high caisson-shaped dome came into being. Beneath that black high platform, there were 9 steps being embedded with top-class fire-element crystals. There was only one item lying on the high black platform quietly which looked very solemn and eye-catching. As if the entire pavilion was built for that item on the platform.

The moment Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into this pavilion, he had been attracted by that item on the high platform in the middle.

Closely after that, Zhang Tie had taken that item out of there.

Lying on Zhang Tie's hand, it gave out a mysterious brilliance...

That item was strange as if it was composed of two circles. The item was composed of 4 snakes that devoured each other's tail. Each of the two snakes formed a circle. Zhang Tie found that the 4 snakes were movable and could be dismantled. As long as they were put in the original places, they would bite each other's tail tightly too.

After observing this item for quite a while, Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into it; however, he got no response from it.

In Zhang Tie's impression, all the senior items would make a response to him as long as he injected his spiritual energy into them.

'How could Bloody Soul Temple and Han Zhengfang put such a worthless item in the Bloody Soul Sutra Enlightenment Pavilion in such a solemn way?'

Zhang Tie observed this item carefully and found that the 4 snakes being connected with each other formed a pattern with a marvelous meaning. In the Western Continent, it represented the never-ending samsara between life and death both physically and spiritually. The pattern of two snakes biting each other was still preserved in some hospitals in the Western Continent; in Eastern Continent, the pattern of snakes biting each other could actually be seen everywhere too. However, it changed a bit. Hua people had replaced snakes with fish or dragon and tiger. The more abstract symbol of this pattern was the taichi diagram of Hua people.

Zhang Tie gradually felt that this item was like a headband. Therefore, he directly put it on his head.

Soon after that, the spiritual energy in Zhang Tie's mind sea shocked as the spiritual energy of this item had been connected with that of Zhang Tie, manifesting three unimaginable huge words in Zhang Tie's mind sea——Bloody Soul Sutra!

Chapter 1179: Skyrocketing Overall Strength

On December 1st, the 903rd year of Black Iron Calendar...

At this moment, the sky was a bit white while the ground within 30,000 square miles was covered with rising vapor as usual. As the first ray of sunlight reached the smoking crater, two figures broke out of the gurgling magma. After reaching high above the volcano, they suspended in the sky.

They were Zhang Tie and his old slave Zhang Gui.

It was really a great achievement. After Zhang Tie woke up, it took him 11 days to digest all the booties.

Although it was less than 2 weeks, Zhang Tie had been greatly different than when he followed Han Zhengfang here 2 weeks ago.

2 weeks ago, Zhang Tie formed 38 scales on his water chakra and had just reached 1 change earth knight realm. 2 weeks later, Zhang Tie had already formed 161 scales on his water chakra and entered 4 change earth knight realm.

From 1 change realm to 4 change realm, Zhang Tie had strengthened his ability as an earth knight for 3 times. As a result, his overall strength had been increased by 30%, including his battle strength.

As Zhang Tie killed Han Zhengfang in the deep magma sea, he was severely injured under the great pressure of the magma. After strengthening himself 3 times, the protective force of Zhang Tie's protective battle qi and his anti-striking ability surged once again. Zhang Tie had tried some times during these days and found that his protective battle qi and anti-striking ability had been intensified by about 40%.

Additionally, Zhang Tie's strength, speed and sensing capability of knight's consciousness had increased by 20% to 30%. What Zhang Tie was most interested in was that his battle qi started to

become denser, more compact and more powerful. Additionally, his battle qi started to be solid from virtual.

The fruit of judgment enabled the last body-separation skill of his immortal rune to promote to a super realm. The super body-separation skill could never be matched by the preliminary body-separation skill in all aspects.

The latest fruit of bloodline brought Zhang Tie 15,687 points of bloodline energy; plus those of the former fruit of bloodline that he had not used, Zhang Tie could activate 17,404 points of bloodline energy in total.

Because Zhang Tie had not considered which bloodlines to activate with these bloodline energy points, he didn't use them for the time being.

After taking that fruit of brilliance which contained super strong spiritual energy, Zhang Tie could launch an attack by that secret item-level Thor's Hammer with the ability of divine dominator much easily. At this moment, even Zhang Tie himself couldn't imagine how strong was his spiritual energy.

However, compared to all the above improvements, Zhang Tie felt that his largest achievement was the Bloody Soul Sutra .

Zhang Tie spent a few days in browsing the contents of the Bloody Soul Sutra . The secret methods, knowledge and cultivation system in the Bloody Soul Sutra had greatly widened his horizon.

Evidently, it was impossible for Zhang Tie to grasp those great secret methods and battle skills in the Bloody Soul Sutra in such a short period. If not enter a secluded cultivation for dozens of years, he could never make any great achievement about this classic. However, after reviewing the former Soul Forbidden Method that he had cultivated referring to the original contents in Bloody Soul Sutra , Zhang Tie's Soul Forbidden Method had entered a wholly new realm.

After browsing Bloody Soul Sutra, Zhang Tie realized how lucky he was on that day. Han Zhengfang was a heavenly knight. In the Sincerity Garden of Xuanyuan Hill, Han Zhengfang used a secret skill of Bloody Soul Sutra to elevate his level to the semi-sage realm. After escaping away from Xuanyuan Hill, his vitality had been severely weakened, causing Han Zhengfang to directly decline to shadow knight from heavenly knight. Therefore, Zhang Tie got a chance to kill him. If Han Zhengfang's realm didn't decline or after he cultivated for a period, Zhang Tie would not have such a chance anymore. That was God's will.

'The secret skill of lock of bloody chakra is also recorded in the Bloody Soul Sutra . This secret method could coordinate with Purgatory Samsara Method pretty well. However, it's not easy to practice this secret skill. I couldn't practice it until I promote to a shadow knight. Additionally, one has to suffer a great loss for using this secret skill. If not being flurried, Han Zhengfang would never use this secret skill at the risk of his own life.'

If Zhang Tie was free or in a secluded cultivation, he didn't mind spending 10 years in studying the secret skills in Bloody Soul Sutra. However, Zhang Tie knew that it was not the right moment for him to enter a secluded cultivation somewhere. After making big trouble in Xuanyuan Hill 2 weeks ago, Zhang Tie knew that it must have been in a large-scale turmoil outside. Therefore, Zhang Tie could only hurriedly form his water chakra and take a lot of fruits before leaving Castle of Black Iron.

After flying out of the crater, Zhang Tie immediately contacted with his elder brother and Bai Suxian by the remote-sensing crystal.

As it was another space in Castle of Black Iron, the remote-sensing crystal was not available inside it; neither was it available in portable space-teleportation equipment.

Soon after contacting with Zhang Yang his elder brother and confirming the identities in jargons, Zhang Tie had received a lot

of words.

"You're not in Xuanyuan Hill?"

"Are you alright these days?"

"I could not contact with you these days, I was worried about you very much!"

"It's chaotic across Taixia Country. Youzhou Province has entered a state of emergency as a whole; Yanghe Prefecture is in the state of siege. Our parents are worried about you so much, but I dare not tell them about your news!"

"I was always sleepless these days as I was afraid that I couldn't receive your news when in deep sleep."

"Whether you had long known that there was going to be a turmoil in Xuanyuan Hill? Otherwise, why did you tell me to leave in advance?"

Zhang Yang's news arrived so fast even before Zhang Tie asked him about the latest situation. Zhang Tie could imagine how anxious was his elder brother, which enabled Zhang Tie to sense a bit brotherhood and warmth.

Of course, Jinwu Business Group would not miss such an important occasion of Treasures Meeting in Xuanyuan Hill, because this was the best stage for expanding the popularity of all-purpose medicament. When Zhang Tie was in Xuanyuan Hill, Zhang Yang was actually in Xuanyuan Hill too. The two people were busy doing their businesses. Zhang Tie didn't go to find Zhang Yang as he was afraid of bringing trouble to Zhang Yang. One day before his revenge, Zhang Tie told Zhang Yang to leave Xuanyuan Hill for Youzhou Province by airboat without landing in any intermediate cities in the way as soon as possible through remote-sensing crystal without telling him about the reason.

Zhang Tie left Xuanyuan Hill by airboat on the morning of November 14th. On the evening of November 15th, Zhang Tie

started his revenge, sending the entire Xuanyuan Hill into big chaos. As a wise man, of course Zhang Yang could guess that Zhang Tie must know something before telling him to leave Xuanyuan Hill. Therefore, Zhang Yang couldn't stand asking about that. Actually, he had been fermenting this question for over 2 weeks. As he couldn't contact Zhang Tie during the past 2 weeks, he became a bit anxious.

"I'm fine. I've not even lost a hair. Don't worry about me, elder brother!"

"Let's talk about Xuanyuan Hill later!"

"Additionally, I've already exposed my real identity to Bai Suxian and the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect. They know that Cui Li and Zhang Tie are the same. I don't need to use the identity of Cui Li anymore!"

Zhang Tie replied 3 messages too.

The first 2 messages were within the expectation of Zhang Yang; however, after reading the 3rd message, Zhang Yang became silent for quite a while before replying Zhang Tie as if he didn't believe that Zhang Tie could make such a sudden decision.

"You've exposed your real identity to all of your disciples?"

"Yes, even Chengze and Chengxu have known about it. None of my disciples have carried any remote-sensing communications device. They are still in Zhongzhou City; but when we return to Youzhou Province, all of them should know that I'm Cui Li!"

"Are you sure?"

"Yes, I'm sure!"

"Whether the one who set you up is Han Zhengfang?"

"Yes, I've already killed Han Zhengfang! Elder brother, you're the 2nd people who know this news besides me, don't expose it to others!"

After hearing that Zhang Tie had killed Han Zhengfang, Zhang Yang, being in Youzhou Province, was shocked once again. Zhang Tie didn't know that all the news about Han Zhengfang had shocked the entire country over the past days.

Who was Han Zhengfang? The former finance minister of Taixia Country; a super powerhouse who had promoted to a heavenly knight; the master of Heavens Reaching Church who aroused turmoils in Taixia Country; the culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City; the public enemy of Hua people; the one who could escape from Meng Shidao who had promoted to semi-sage realm and couldn't be blocked by anyone across Xuanyuan Hill. Unbelievably, he was killed by Zhang Tie.

Only after a few days, the alchemist demon Zhao Yuan had dropped to the second place on the wanted list of Supreme Court of Taixia Country while Han Zhengfang the master of Heavens Reaching Church ranked first. 'My brother killed the heavenly knight who ranked first on the wanted list of Taixia Country.'

Zhang Yang became muddle-headed; however, he knew that Zhang Tie would not make fun of him.

After a few seconds, Zhang Tie received another message from Zhang Yang.

"Do you know the reward for...Han...Zhengfang's head by Xuanyuan Hill?"

Zhang Yang must be thrilled at this moment as even his message was not incoherent.

"What's that?"

"Anyone who could kill or catch Han Zhengfang alive would be conferred with the hereditary title of nobility of human duke and be rewarded with a bounty land along with the guard of honor as same as that of top three chancellors and a promise in cinnabar on iron sheet, with which all the death penalties of him and his family

members would be remitted!"

Chapter 1180: Opportunity in the Chaos

The only way for a person to be regarded as a "noble" in Taixia Country was to be conferred as a duke after killing demons, which referred to the narrow sense of demons and those lackeys of Three-eye Association who cooperated with demons. It had long been proved that Heavens Reaching Church colluded with demons and cause turmoils in the world. Of course, Han Zhengfang, as the master of Heavens Reaching Church, was the most abhorrent demon of the demon.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Xuanyuan Hill could provide such a high reward for catching Han Zhengfang.

The bounty land of one province; the hereditary dukedom, the treatment of three chancellors; the promise in cinnabar on an iron sheet which could remit the death penalty of all of his family members...With this reward, anyone who killed Han Zhengfang could enter his heyday in a split second.

If it were before, Zhang Tie would definitely be touched by such a great reward; however, he was only amazed about it now. He had just set a plot to push the Gobbling Party to the opposite side of Heavens Reaching Church. However, could he jump into this trap once again only for such a bit reward?

'With one more province's bounty land, I will not eat 10 times more than now or sleep in a room which was 10 times larger; the dukedom could not accelerate my cultivation; the honorable treatment of three chancellors could not make me like a king at once; neither am I ambitious and interested in rebellion; the promise in cinnabar on the iron sheet is just an iron sheet for me. Across Huaiyuan Palace, nobody else needed to be remitted except for me, whose case has just been redressed.'

Therefore, the reward from Xuanyuan Hill became meaningless for Zhang Tie.

"Elder brother, this reward is a red-hot iron. Neither could I nor Huaiyuan Palace bear it. Additionally, Han Zhengfang didn't even leave any bones. It's difficult for me to prove that I've killed him; additionally, nobody would believe that. I'm afraid that Xuanyuan Hill mostly wants to unite the other 6 top sects and some top clans of Taixia Country to deal with Han Zhengfang and Heavens Reaching Church. We'd better not be involved in it!"

After removing his covetous thoughts and worries about gains and losses, Zhang Tie immediately saw through the purpose of Xuanyuan Hill behind this reward. The biggest function of this reward was to inspire morale and make clear the attitude of Xuanyuan Hill towards Heavens Reaching Church and demons. No matter what, Han Zhengfang was the former finance minister of Taixia Country. Such a person as a mole of demons really affected Taixia Country too much. He had to be eliminated; however, only the top sects and a few clans in Taixia Country could kill a heavenly knight on the premise that few people knew the sequela of Han Zhengfang after using the secret method of Bloody Soul Sutra . Therefore, this reward was actually prepared for these super forces——

'I won't be touched by it, but it doesn't mean that the others won't be touched by it either. Just let those people look for Han Zhengfang across the world!' Zhang Tie thought.

After being reminded by Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang recovered his composure too. When he heard that Zhang Tie killed Han Zhengfang, Zhang Yang who had been dreaming about reinvigorating Zhang Clan immediately remembered that reward. After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Zhang Yang also realized that even Huaiyuan Palace as a whole could not bear such a reward, not to mention their family.

"I see, only you and I know this secret!"

"Cui Li is my incarnation. Elder brother, you can tell our parents about that in case of their concern now. I will return to Youzhou

Province in a few days. After arriving at Youzhou Province, I will go to Jinwu City right away!"

"The culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City has died. You came back too. Our parents could finally be reassured! And, don't forget to notice Huaiyuan Palace about your incarnation. Even your disciples have known your real identity, if you don't notice these elders in Huaiyuan Palace before you return, you might be blamed for estranging your relatives!"

"Elder brother, you can notice Huaiyuan Palace about that when you're free. You only need to tell them that Cui Li is my incarnation. We will talk about other things when I come back!"

"Sure!"

"And oh, what major events have happened in Taixia Country from November 15 till now? I was ill-informed over the past 2 weeks. What response have Heavens Reaching Church made?"

"Taixia Country is in great chaos just like when the holy war broke out in Waii Subcontinent. Over 60 provinces of Taixia Country have been afflicted by bloody figures. The entire territory of Taixia Country has been involved in it. What happened in Zhongzhou Province 2 months ago is repeating across Taixia Country now!"

"Including Northeast Military Region?"

"Yes, the Weiyuan Prefecture in Tongzhou Province and the Anlan Prefecture in Gaozhou Province have been afflicted by bloody figures. As a result, the entire Northeast Military Region has been in a turmoil. Youzhou Province has been on the alert in an all-round manner. All the corps in Northeast Military Regions have already reached the border for strict defense. Even Elder Muray and Elder Muyu have been dispatched to encircle and annihilate large-scale bloody figure troops. All the other provinces have imposed a curfew. The clans of Heavens Reaching Church are making troubles everywhere across Taixia Country, increasing a

great number of names on the wanted list of Supreme Court. I've not heard any good news in Jinwu City lately!"

This news was within Zhang Tie's expectation; however, Zhang Tie had not imagined that it could arouse so many chain reactions after he exposed Han Zhengfang's real identity to the public.

It was already not important that whether Han Zhengfang sent an order when he escaped to Xuanyuan Hill or the loyal backbones of Heavens Reaching Church made responses after they received the news that Han Zhengfang's real identity was exposed. After hearing that so many places in Taixia Country have been inflicted by bloody figures and remembering the looks of the villages and cities which were affected by bloody figures, Zhang Tie's heart pounded at once.

"Did those places being affected by bloody figures suffer great losses?"

"Fortunately, after the catastrophe of bloody figures broke out in Zhongzhou Province, all the places across Taixia Country have been on the alert by mobilizing all the local garrisons for stricter defense. All the big cities and clans have knight-level powerhouses on their back. The entire Taixia Country is preventing bloody figures over these days. Nobody dares to take a casual attitude about it, official or local major clans. Although the catastrophe of bloody figures broke out in Taixia Country suddenly this time, the chaos and losses on average in each province are less than that in Zhongzhou Province; because all the places have made precautions for that. Although this catastrophe of bloody figures has just broken out for about 2 weeks, all the troops of over 10,000 bloody figures across Taixia Country have been scattered by the knight-level powerhouses. Although bloody figures have greater battle strength than ordinary soldiers in Taixia Country, they've lost their commander; additionally, knights had an overwhelming advantage over these bloody figures. If a knight encounters a troop of bloody figures, he or she would cause a great casualty and

scatter them..."

After hearing Zhang Yang's news, Zhang Tie finally realized why he could get so many merit value points after exposing the real identity of Han Zhengfang in Xuanyuan Hill.

When the entire Taixia Country was preparing for dealing with bloody figures, the catastrophe of bloody figures really broke out. What a coincidence! If the catastrophe of bloody figures broke out a bit earlier before the provinces across Taixia Country were ready for it, the loss suffered by each province would definitely be not less than that in Zhongzhou Province. If the catastrophe of bloody figures happened a couple of years later, Taixia Country as a whole would definitely relax their vigilance about bloody figures. By then, Taixia Country would suffer a greater loss. Additionally, the destructions caused by Heavens Reaching Church when they were ready for that were utterly different than that when they were not ready for that. This catastrophe of bloody figures broke out when the Heavens Reaching Church was flurried. Given the time, it was fortunate for Taixia Country.

In others' eyes, those bloody figures were just devils and killers who could only cause destructions and should be killed as fast as possible; however, in Zhang Tie's eyes, these bloody figures were as nourishing as lobsters and seashells over the rocks after ebb. If he had caught Han Zhengfang alive, he could promote to a shadow knight at the fastest speed with the help of these bloody figures.

"Elder brother, I have one thing to talk with you. No kidding. You don't need to know why because you will know it after I come back. From now on, you will mobilize all the power of Jinwu Business Group and notice Huaiyuan Palace to catch bloody figures as more as possible. I need alive bloody figures. As long as they're alive, the more, the better, even if they had no limbs. Money is not a problem. I want them even at 1,000 gold coins for one bloody figure..."

1,000 gold coins for one bloody figure; 10,000 bloody figures only

cost him 10 million gold coins; 100,000 bloody figures only cost him 100 million gold coins. Such a bit of gold coins was nothing for Zhang Tie; however, if he had 100,000 bloody figures, he could extract the maximal value of these bloody figures with his bloody sacrifice furnace. Zhang Tie felt it even worthwhile to purchase a bloody figure at the cost of 10,000 gold coins, not to mention 1,000 gold coins.

It was Zhang Yang's 3rd time to be shocked by Zhang Tie today.

"Did I mishear it? You want alive bloody figures at such a high price?"

"Yes, elder brother, you didn't mishear it. I won't suffer a loss. I've got another request for you. Before I come back, elder brother could find a place near the territory of Iron-Dragon Sect to build a place for locking bloody figures. The bigger the better. As it was slow to build a city, you don't need to consider whether those bloody figures are comfortable or not; you can directly have people build a super large battle fortress near the territory of Iron-Dragon Sect.

When Zhang Tie said that, he recalled the crystal battle fortress in Selnes Theater of Operations. Given the scale of the crystal battle fortress, it could easily hold 100,000 bloody figures after slight renovation; additionally, those bloody figures could not make trouble or escape from the battle fortress...

Battle fortress was a special building in the holy war. Hua people's battle fortresses were definitely the best. With enough money, he could easily build a battle fortress in Fire-dragon Territory.

At this moment, Zhang Tie realized the significance of money. At least he didn't need to think about the amount of money for doing these things. With enough money, this catastrophe of bloody figures across Taixia Country would be the opportunity for the rise of Iron-Dragon Sect...

Chapter 1181: Arrangement

After contacting with his elder brother, Zhang Tie contacted with Bai Suxian too.

Bai Suxian was still waiting for Zhang Tie in Zhongzhou City.

As the catastrophe of bloody figures had already broken out in Zhongzhou Province, after this catastrophe of bloody figures broke out across Taixia Country, Zhongzhou Province was relatively less affected. Among the 9 immortal provinces of Taixia Country, the catastrophes of bloody figures also broke out in Jinzhou Province, Pingzhou Province, Fengzhou Province and Qingzhou Province besides Zhongzhou Province.

Zhang Tie didn't talk with Bai Suxian too much. He would explain it to Bai Suxian after coming back to Zhongzhou Province. Bai Suxian didn't ask him why as usual. Zhang Tie knew that Bai Suxian, as a wise woman, must have guessed that the event in Xuanyuan Hill was related to him. Because Zhang Tie had told her that it was one of the 9 ministers of Taixia Country who framed him. Soon after Zhang Tie left the airboat, Xuanyuan Hill had met such a storm. Bai Suxian must have noticed the relationship between Zhang Tie and that major event.

After contacting with Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie thought for a short while before contacting Mountain Lifting Hermit. Previously, Mountain Lifting Hermit told Zhang Tie that he wanted to try his fortune in Taiyi City. Given the distance, Zhang Tie estimated that Mountain Lifting Hermit might have not reached Taiyi City yet. 'Taiyi City is in Daozhou Province, which is over 60,000 miles away from Xuanyuan Hill. Mountain Lifting Hermit didn't take an airboat. Additionally, an earth knight couldn't keep flying around the clock. Even if Mountain Lifting Hermit had tried his utmost efforts these days, he could not arrive at Daozhou Province. Additionally, Mountain Lifting Hermit might have already contacted me over these days after knowing what happened in

Xuanyuan Hill; but I failed to receive them.'

Zhang Tie's guess was right. Soon after he established a link with Mountain Lifting Hermit, he had received a message.

"I've heard about what happened in Xuanyuan Hill on November 16th. I tried to contact you; however, I failed. How's everything going?"

"I'm fine. I will tell you about it in details when I meet you. Where're you now, elder brother?"

"I'm in Zhenzhou Province. After Xuanyuan Hill met such a storm, the market where secret pearls could be traded in Taiyi City suspended its business for the time being. When the event broke out in Xuanyuan Hill, I was in Lingzhou Province, which was not affected by bloody figures; however, the catastrophe of bloody figures broke out in Zhenzhou province, which neighbors Lingzhou Province. Therefore, I came to Zhengzhou Province from Lingzhou Province and helped them deal with those bloody figures. These bloody figures afflicted villages and towns greatly. I will stay in Zhenzhou Province and kill some more bloody figures!"

Mountain Lifting Hermit looked cold yet was kind-hearted. As a Hua knight, he would never put his hands in his sleeves and just look at the catastrophe of bloody figures.

"Elder brother, you stay in Zhenzhou Province for a few days. We could keep in touch at any time. I will come for you. We will return to Iron-Dragon Sect together by airboat!"

After a few seconds, Zhang Tie received a message.

"Sure, I'm afraid that the market of trading secret pearls in Taiyi City would not open anymore before the catastrophe of bloody figures was pacified. I will go to Iron-Dragon Sect with you first!"

After hearing Mountain Lifting Hermit's words, Zhang Tie became reassured. As long as Mountain Lifting Hermit returned to Iron-Dragon Sect and officially became the grand elder of Iron-

Dragon Sect after paying a formal visit to the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect, of course, Zhang Tie could have Mountain Lifting Hermit take one small space-teleportation equipment in that atmosphere.

After contacting with Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Tie contacted with Sarlin Pontiff so as to learn the latest news about the expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire.

From Sarlin Pontiff's words, Zhang Tie knew that Elder Gular and old bear Dali had returned to Ice and Snow Wilderness by airboat of Gold and Power Law 2 days ago. They might still be on the way. The expeditionary army of Sacred Light Empire had not set off yet; the Sacred Iceland Kingdom was preparing for the coming war. Besides the weird atmosphere, everything else was normal.

After contacting with the 4 people, Zhang Tie finally became reassured.

When Zhang Tie contacted the 4 people, his old slave Zhang Gui just waited beside him quietly in a steady way for his order at any time.

After putting away the bunch of remote-sensing finger rings, Zhang Tie looked around and didn't find anybody within 10,000 square miles. Additionally, there were massive smoke and water vapor in the air, causing a low visibility. Therefore, Zhang Tie called the huge thunder hawk out of Castle of Black Iron.

The moment the thunder hawk came out of Castle of Black Iron, it had crowed out of excitement for one time before flying around Zhang Tie.

Castle of Black Iron was just a huge bird cage for this thunder hawk. By flapping its wings casually for one time, the thunder hawk could finish a few rounds in Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, after coming out of Castle of Black Iron, the thunder hawk was pretty thrilled.

Zhang Tie immediately rode onto the back of the thunder hawk only by one stride. After sitting well, he waved his hand toward Zhang Gui, "You come here too. We will go to Zhongzhou City. It's a long distance. It would be too time-consuming if we fly towards there ourselves!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, before Zhang Gui replied, the thunder hawk had twisted its body unwillingly in the air as it turned around and looked at Zhang Gui with dissatisfaction.

"This old slave will not sit on it. Slaves are forbidden to sit together with their masters in any family. As this bird is huge, this old slave will just hold one of its claws!" Zhang Gui said in a humble way.

"Fine, your wish!" Zhang Tie shrugged. Now that Zhang Gui was so self-conscious, Zhang Tie didn't need to say anything.

After hearing Zhang Gui's words, the thunder hawk looked at Zhang Gui with a bit tender eye light. Closely after that, the thunder hawk stretched out one huge claw so that Zhang Gui could hold one iron hook-like finger. Closely after that, it flapped its wings and flew off as fast as a lightning bolt. In the blink of an eye, it had flown away from the volcanic region being enshrouded with smoke towards Zhongzhou City.

Zhang Tie sat on the back of the thunder hawk in a calm way. The thunder hawk stretched out one claw backward which formed a freak combination with Zhang Gui who looked like a kite.

If the thunder hawk carried two commoners, it would feel difficult to fly; however, Zhang Tie and Zhang Gui were both knights. They just floated in the air weightlessly and relied on the thunder hawk's speed. Therefore, the thunder hawk could fly easily. Additionally, they both released their protective battle qis to wrap their own bodies so as to reduce the windage to the minimum. In less than 1 minute, with a slight sonic boom, a mushroom-shaped gaseous circle appeared around the thunder

hawk. After breaking through this gaseous circle, the thunder hawk immediately broke the sound barrier. After a few seconds, it reached 2 times that of the speed of sound and became a golden light in the stratosphere.

Sitting on the back of the thunder hawk, Zhang Tie watched the landscape flashing backward under his feet as he felt being an immortal.

'Karma is really marvelous. When it was peaceful across Taixia Country, I lived as poor as a stray dog while being wanted and chased every day. At that time, I was anxious every day. By contrast, when Taixia Country become chaotic as a whole, I've become so relaxed as if the spring is coming. The pendulum has swung back.'

"Zhang Gui, have you learned how to hide your qi?" Zhang Tie suddenly turned around as he asked Zhang Gui who was below the thunder hawk's tail.

The thunder hawk moved faster than the speed of sound in air. If Zhang Tie didn't speak through the secret means, before his sound reached Zhang Gui's ears, the thunder hawk had already flown far away.

"This old slave always did secret tasks before. Therefore, I've learned to conceal my qi!" Zhang Gui replied respectfully in a secret way.

"If so, just show the level of a common black iron knight in the public from then on unless emergencies!"

"Yes, master!" Zhang Gui didn't ask about the reason. Closely after Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Gui's qi had slowly declined and became as same as that of a common black iron knight. "Master, is this old slave okay?"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Zhang Gui as he nodded inside, 'After forming the earth chakra, due to the concealing attribute of earth,

earth knights could hide their qis without even learning any secret method; plus the effect of some secret method, commoners could barely identify that they are earth knights. If my knight's consciousness wasn't strong enough, I couldn't identify that Zhang Gui is an earth knight either.'

"Not bad. Just keep this state. Don't expose your cultivation base and battle strength as an earth knight to the public. After coming back to Youzhou Province, you will be my steward and help me look after my family members and Jinwu City!"

"Thanks for your trust, master. This old slave will exert my full efforts to look after your family and Jinwu City. As long as this old slave is still alive, I will never allow anyone to harm master's family members."

After hearing that Zhang Tie wanted him to be his steward, Zhang Gui's face immediately gave out a brilliance as he expressed his loyalty happily at once.

That was what Zhang Tie wanted, also why Zhang Tie took Zhang Gui out of Castle of Black Iron.

After this event, Zhang Tie realized that the overall strength of his family was too weak. As long as he left home, his home would lack reliable powerhouses, which Zhang Tie was concerned about the most. Over these years, although a knight of Heavens Fortune Sect always resided in Zhang Clan so as to help Zhang family tide over the stormiest days, the knight always belonged to Heavens Fortune Sect. This knight was to perform a task in Zhang Clan assigned by his sect; therefore, Zhang family and this knight always felt a bit estranged; sometimes, it was not convenient either. After bringing Zhang Gui back home, Zhang Tie would solve this problem completely.

As Taixia Country was in great chaos as a whole, Zhang Tie had to pay more attention to the safety of his family members.

'However, the identity of Zhang Gui is too eye-catching in

Youzhou Province. In Youzhou Province, a lower province that has just been established, there are much fewer earth knights than that in other provinces; if I had an earth knight as my servant, Huaiyuan Palace would feel embarrassed about that, not to mention outsiders. Even Zhang Taixuan, the master of Huaiyuan Palace has just promoted to an earth knight for a few years; if an earth knight who calls himself "this old slave" follows me here and there who's the real head of Huaiyuan Palace?'

'Although I have not returned to Huaiyuan Palace yet, I have to consider these questions in advance!'

Chapter 1182: Convergence

If Zhang Gui concealed his real battle strength in the public, besides avoiding from outsiders' disputes and the embarrassing conflicts in Huaiyuan Palace, the biggest benefit was that Zhang Gui could easily deal with more difficult situations at the critical moment.

At any time, concealing one's battle strength would bring unimaginable benefits. A black iron knight was too weaker than an earth knight in battle strength. As long as the opponent underestimated Zhang family's overall strength at the critical moment, Zhang family would be safer and reverse the situation.

After killing Han Zhengfang, Zhang Tie found that he became increasingly "grimmer" and more "cunning" in considering and dealing with problems.

...

The thunder hawk moved very fast and smoothly on the way.

After flying about 2,000 miles away from the volcanic area, the thunder hawk met an unknown airboat in the air. The crew on the airboat might have discovered the thunder hawk, Zhang Tie and Zhang Gui; however, they must be scared by the high speed of the thunder hawk. Therefore, after chasing after the thunder hawk for a few seconds, the airboat soon lost their target as its speed was even slower than the speed of sound in air. Zhang Tie didn't care about it. Whatever, this thunder hawk would always appear in the public in the future. It was nothing strange for others to be curious about it. He didn't need to overreact in others' response.

At this moment, one claw of this thunder hawk had already put on a mithril foot loop which was specially made by Edward like a label on the foot of a homebred pigeon. It indicated that this thunder hawk had its owner; instead of being a mutated wild species. Even if the thunder hawk flew away itself and met a

heavenly knight-level old monster on the way, it wouldn't be robbed away.

Although it was a bit chaotic in Taixia Country, except for b*stards of Heavens Reaching Church, people could still comply well with the basic orders and rules of Taixia Country apparently, including commoners and supreme knights. The "Laws of Taixia Country" were still unshakable in Taixia Country. The imperial court of Taixia Country was still in a ruling position. If not want to enter the wanted list of the Supreme Court, even knights dared not casually kill people and rob people's objects blatantly.

Because Zhang Tie's destination was Zhongzhou Province, which was not far from Xuanyuan Hill, he didn't see any bloody figures on the way. As the traffic arteries and dangerous terrains in the periphery of Xuanyuan Hill were strictly defended by the top 4 armies of Taixia Country, those bloody figures couldn't access to Xuanyuan Hill at all.

The thunder hawk could fly at almost 1,500 miles per hour. At afternoon, after 7 hours' high-speed flight, a class-A city had appeared on the horizon.

Zhongzhou Province was one of the top 9 immortal provinces of Taixia Country. As the capital city of Zhongzhou Province, Zhongzhou city was much more prosperous than ordinary class-A cities. Besides the inside of Zhongzhou City, the entire Zhongzhou City was surrounded by densely populated districts. The radiated urban regions of Zhongzhou City were 5 times larger than that of ordinary class-A cities. After a long-term peaceful life, even if these people didn't settle in the city, they didn't need to worry about any dangers while living at the periphery of the city.

Perhaps, people near Zhongzhou City were still not worried about dangers a few months ago, it was hard for them to persist in the same firm belief now.

Watching airships and airboats setting off and landing at the

airports inside and outside Zhongzhou City, Zhang Tie directly contacted with Bai Suxian and told her to have the airboat drive to 30 miles away from Zhongzhou City. He would converge with them outside the city instead of joining the fun inside Zhongzhou City.

After gaining benefits, making a fortune, exterminating the powerful enemies and screwing Meng Shidao, of course, he needed to be low-key as it was not far from Xuanyuan Hill.

Zhang Tie let the thunder hawk slow down its speed from twice the speed of sound to equivalent to the speed of sound in air. They were not moving as fast as ordinary knights.

Old slave Zhang Gui had already loosened the sharp claw of the thunder hawk and started to fly after the thunder hawk in case of arousing others' attention.

In less than 10 minutes, the thunder hawk had passed through the border of Zhongzhou City, exposing Iron-Dragon Airboat to Zhang Tie, Zhang Gui and the thunder hawk.

The movable deck on the top of Iron-Dragon Airboat had opened while Zhang Tie's disciples were standing on the deck and waiting for Zhang Tie.

With a strong wind, a sparkling golden light and an air-splitting sound, the thunder hawk dove downwards onto the deck, causing them to widely open their eyes as they hurriedly turned around; some female disciples' skirts swayed in the air.

Before they realized what happened, Zhang Tie had already appeared on the deck while an extremely handsome golden bird was standing on Zhang Tie's side. The bird was even taller than Zhang Tie. The huge bird was preening its feathers on its neck as it squinted at the others with a pair of golden eyes in an extremely arrogant way. An old man was standing behind Zhang Tie in a docile way.

Liu Xing recovered his composure as he hurriedly deeply bowed towards Zhang Tie, followed by the other disciples; meanwhile, they said in unison, "Welcome back, Master!"

"Hmm!" Zhang Tie glanced around the deck and immediately understood the progress of the cultivation of the 121 disciples. Curiously, Bai Suxian was not on the deck. 'This is not Bai Suxian's style.'

After straightening up their bodies, at the sight of Zhang Tie, many people's heart pounded as they hurriedly lowered their heads too.

Being limited to their overall strength, although his disciples didn't know what happened to Zhang Tie these days, all of them could sense the change in their master. Their master became more imposing with milder eye light. However, after being casually glanced by their master, they would feel being seen through as they didn't feel like struggling at all.

In only a few days, Zhang Tie had entered 4 change earth realm; especially after taking that fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy had surged to a terrifying level. At this moment, although Zhang Tie didn't mean to release his imposing qi field, his movements could still bring a great stress to his disciples who had not even reached LV 10.

"Zhao Bing, Wu Yinhui, Zhou Xiao, Ma Kuicheng, Linghu Biao, Sunzhan, Zhu Yuanguang, Qian Bingbing, Huang Chongyang, Bai Hua, Zhang Yueshan, Yu Xiaoi", Zhang Tie called 12 disciples consecutively, including 2 females. After being called, all of them became flurried as they hurriedly lowered their heads. However, Zhang Tie's words were out of their expectation, "You've made great progress in your cultivation bases these days; your LV 9 realm have become more complete with denser spiritual energy. This master will enlighten Fire-Dragon Sutra to you tomorrow!"

"Thanks, Master!" After hearing Zhang Tie's words, these

disciples became stunned for a second. Closely after that, they became overjoyed and hurriedly kowtowed towards Zhang Tie. Being imparted with Fire Dragon Sutra through enlightenment, they would feel like having a new birth. None of them had imagined that their master could preach them Fire Dragon Sutra through enlightenment soon after he came back. As a result, they started to feel like climbing towards universal laws. Out of extreme excitement, someone's eyes were even filled with tears at once.

When Liu Xing was preached Fire-Dragon Sutra through enlightenment by Zhang Tie, the others disciples were admiring about him pretty much. They encouraged themselves and expected that they could be that fortunate one day; unexpectedly, that day came so fast.

The 12 disciples that Zhang Tie called had made evident progress in cultivation bases with greatest efforts during these days. Even the other disciples whose names were not called had become spirited and hopeful, not to mention the 12 disciples. With such models in front of them, as long as they would like to make efforts in cultivation, they might be preached with Fire Dragon Sutra through enlightenment in the next round.

"Zhu Dabiao, Wang Pan, Xie Qingfeng. You need to make more efforts in cultivation. Don't lag behind the others!" Zhang Tie called the three guys whose cultivation bases ranked last among all of his disciples. After hearing that, the three people hurriedly lowered their heads with a guilty look and dared not to throw a glance at Zhang Tie at all.

Zhang Tie then glanced around all the disciples before saying, "As for the others, keep it in mind, the road of cultivation is a long-lasting progress, you need to make constant efforts in a modest way!"

"Yes, Master!"

Zhang Tie succumbed all of his disciples only by three sentences.

After that, he asked Liu Xing, "Where's your Uncle Master Bai?"

"Soon after Iron-Dragon Airboat left Zhongzhou City, a maid of Uncle Master Bai had told me that Uncle Master Bai felt a bit uncomfortable and was taking a rest in the cabin!" Liu Xing replied in a solemn look. All the others just looked at the ground silently.

After hearing this answer, Zhang Tie touched his nose lightly. As a knight, of course, Bai Suxian wouldn't feel uncomfortable like commoners. After promoting to a knight, it indicated that she had said goodbye to 36,000 kinds of diseases. Unless being possessed by the devil in cultivation or being poked some holes by a dagger, she would never feel "a bit uncomfortable".

'Bai Suxian must be losing temper. Because she has guessed that the event in Xuanyuan Hill is related to me, she must be blaming me for not having her as an assistant.'

Sometimes, women were narrow-minded, even being a knight.

Chapter 1183: Heading for Youzhou Province

"This is Zhang Gui, my...subordinate. This is my pet mount. Although it looks ferocious, it's human-friendly. As long as you don't offend it, it will not hurt you. Liu Xing, make an arrangement for them. This thunder hawk will eat over 30 kg's raw flesh and 5 vials of all-purpose medicament per day on the airboat..."

In the public, Zhang Gui was Zhang Tie's subordinate.

Subordinate was an ambiguous concept, which could be a domestic general, a myrmidon, a servant or an employee. Although Zhang Gui's real identity was Zhang Tie's servant, Zhang Tie wouldn't treat him as his servant in the public as it was meaningless to be that flamboyant. Even though Zhang Gui as a knight would like to be his pious servant, it was still too eye-catching in Youzhou Province. Few elders in top clans of Taixia Country could enjoy such a luxurious treatment. For instance, Uncle Zhong was Lord Guangnan's myrmidon; instead of his servant...

In the beginning, they were afraid of the thunder hawk as it was tall and imposing. Additionally, it landed so fast in such a cool manner. After hearing that this thunder hawk was human-friendly, they immediately surrounded up to watch such a rarity. Although nobody dared touch its feathers, it should not be a problem for them to watch it from a close distance.

It was bustling in the surroundings. As these disciples were all youngsters, the moment they surrounded up, they had started to comment about the thunder hawk and discuss its kind. The thunder hawk tilted its head to look at them as it raised its wings in an evidently impatient way.

Among the comments, a young female suddenly uttered a loud

exclamation.

"Wow, Master's bird is so huge!"

Soon after the praise, the deck became quiet in a split second. The wind blew over while Zhang Tie's disciples' faces turned weird. They exchanged a glance with each other with a dumbfounded look.

Soon after she uttered, the female disciple had noticed that the atmosphere on the deck became weird. A senior sister apprentice stealthily drew her sleeve which reminded her something at once. Being blushed as the sunglow, she wanted to explain; however, she didn't know how. Such an embarrassing thing could never be clarified at all.

Those disciples didn't know what to say; they just stood still as they dared not burst out into laughter. Such a sudden silence made the junior sister apprentice pretty embarrassed.

"Hahaha, don't stand still over there. Think about how to find a settlement for master's pet. Such a bird couldn't stay on the airboat for too long. We have to have it fly outside for a short while each day. Later on, this bird would be the immortal beast of our Iron-Dragon Sect. We should ask master about the name and the background of this big pet next time. We'd better look after it well. It's my first time to see such an imposing, huge bird..." Zhu Dabiao burst out into laughter at the critical moment in a shameless way, relieving the weird atmosphere.

"Yes yes, junior brother apprentice Zhu is right. we should consider where to raise such a huge bird. I feel that it could live in the lobby as common cabins couldn't hold it."

"Hmm, I feel master's pet is like a hawk; however, its size could match the legendary dragon hawk..."

"Its golden feathers are so beautiful as if they are made of gold..."

They commented one after another as if they had forgotten what

the junior sister apprentice had said just now. The junior sister apprentice threw a stealthy glance at Zhu Dabiao in an appreciative way. At the sight of her appreciative look, Zhu Dabiao revealed a congenital obscene smile at the junior sister apprentice; closely after that, he even threw a customary glance at her well-developed breast self-consciously. Being scared by his glance so much, the junior sister apprentice hurriedly hid herself behind a senior sister apprentice while crossing her arms over her breast.

The casual exclamation of this female disciple became an "anecdote" being stealthily spread among disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect many years later.

...

The moment Zhang Tie returned to the airboat, the airboat had started to move. Only after slightly changing its direction, it headed towards Zhenzhou Province at once.

Although Zhang Tie had deepened into the airboat, he had already heard the talks of his disciples on the deck. Rubbing his weird face, he came to Bai Suxian's room.

Now that Bai Suxian felt "a bit uncomfortable", she would not wait for Zhang Tie in his room, but in her room.

Bai Suxian's room was not locked from inside. Therefore, Zhang Tie directly pushed open her door. The moment he entered Bai Suxian's room, he had already sniffed the special smell that combined rouge, perfume and the special body fragrance.

4 most beautiful maids were in the outer room, at the sight of Zhang Tie coming in, they hurriedly lowered their bodies on one side to hail him.

Zhang Tie nodded as he asked, "Is princess better now?"

Those beautiful maids straightened up their bodies as they stealthily exchanged a glance with each other. "Miss feels a bit uncomfortable. She's...just fallen asleep!" a maid called Qinyin

replied Zhang Tie in a low voice as she lowered her eyes onto the thick carpet.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he raised his hand. Those maids hurriedly exited the outer room by moving backward before closing the door from outside.

Zhang Tie unveiled the bead curtain before entering Bai Suxian's warm bedroom.

All the furnishings inside this bedroom were arranged by Bai Suxian's subordinates according to her daily needs and habits.

The bead curtain of this bedroom was completely made of perfect top-class deep-sea jade beads whose diameter was about 1.6 cm. The ground of the bedroom was paved with 6.7 cm-thick golden goose velvet. Even the toad-shaped violet golden copper furnace was exclusive for airboat. No matter how the airboat fly, the copper furnace would not turn over. Guanghan osmanthus flower charcoal as expensive as gold was burning inside the copper furnace after being treated specially. Everything inside this room could meet the daily needs of the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion.

Lying on the snow-white bed, Bai Suxian's back was facing the door while her body was covered with an extremely thin quilt, manifesting the exquisite and undulating curve from her waist to her butt.

She was breathing evenly. Her enchanting face was reflected in the copper mirror. In a night skirt, she put one hand under her head with closed eyes, exposing half plump breasts as if she had really fallen asleep while feeling a bit uncomfortable.

After coming to the bedside, Zhang Tie sat down. After gazing at her plump butt under the thin quilt for a short while, Zhang Tie put one hand into the thin quilt and started to touch her naked body.

Only after a short while, Bai Suxian's face had turned redder while she started to breathe heavily. After a few more seconds, Bai Suxian who had been gritting her teeth finally couldn't stand uttering "Argh" lightly.

"I was told that you felt a bit uncomfortable. How about my therapy? How do you feel now?" Zhang Tie asked with a smile.

...

Zhang Tie stayed in Bai Suxian's room for a whole day. On the 2nd day, he left her room in high spirits. Bai Suxian became as tame as before in front of Zhang Tie. With a happy look, she was in a pretty good mood.

Zhang Tie didn't explain anything to Bai Suxian, because he knew that women needed to be convinced; instead of being explained.

Did a man have to report to his wife about his plan when he wanted to do something? Of course not!

Zhang Tie just told Bai Suxian that he would take her back home in Youzhou Province to pay a formal visit to his parents. After hearing that promise, Bai Suxian became tame at once.

Zhang Tie then started to preach his 2nd batch of disciples with Fire Dragon Sutra through enlightenment...

...

Those male disciples received enlightenment smoothly. After doing that to Liu Xing and the other 6 disciples, Zhang Tie had been familiar with this process; therefore, he finished this process in a higher efficiency.

Not until the first female disciple Qian Bingbing received the enlightenment did he meet a bit trouble.

During the process of enlightenment, Zhang Tie needed to touch their heads. Although Qian Bingbing was one of the most

outstanding disciples of Zhang Tie and the most acceptable elder sister among those female disciples, she was also the most troublesome one when in enlightenment. Each time Zhang Tie touched her head, Qian Bingbing's face would turn red with unstable and uneasy qi. Zhang Tie had tried for a few times yet met the same problem.

"Ignore everything; stay concentrated..." As Zhang Tie's sound drifted into Qian Bingbing's mind through a secret method of Bloody Soul Temple, Qian Bingbing's finally became stable spiritually as she closed her eyes and slowly entered the state.

Zhang Tie put his palm onto Qian Bingbing's forehead once again.

Qian Bingbing's forehead felt as icy as her name while being covered with fine sweat drops although being a bit hot just now...

After the process, Qian Bingbing opened her eyes as she watched Zhang Tie who was sitting opposite with complex sparkling eyes. After that, she bit her lips as she put her hands onto her forehead and approached her forehead to the ground in an extremely respectful manner as a disciple, "Master, thanks for paving the steps towards the universal laws for Bingbing..."

"It's fine, call in Huang Chongyang..."

"Yes, Master!"

Qian Bingbing stood up before leaving the back room.

Watching Qian Bingbing's back, Zhang Tie looked a bit weird as he sighed inside, 'Qian Bingbing is really a smart girl. After being preached with Fire Dragon Sutra, she called herself Bingbing in front of me, in which way, she had drawn herself closer to me.'

Closely after that, Zhang Tie shook his head as he revealed a faint smile, 'Perhaps, I've thought too much. Girls always like to call themselves in that way...'

...

On December 6th, Iron-Dragon Airboat arrived at Xiushan Prefecture of Zhenzhou Province. After converging with Mountain Lifting Hermit over there, Iron-Dragon Airboat headed for Youzhou Province...

Chapter 1184: Welcome Back

Due to the heavy snow in the chilly north wind, it had been snowwhite within 3,500 miles. Even though, Iron-Dragon Airboat was not affected at all as it marched forwards rapidly and steadily in the heavy wind like an iron-armor battleship that rode the wind and waves.

At this moment, a gold light and two humans landed on the entrance of the stern of Iron-Dragon Airboat in the heavy snow.

After they returned with the thunder hawk, the movable dome on the deck of the stern slowly closed.

"Look at you. Didn't you tell me that you were just going to take a look outside with elder brother? Why did you come back so late?" Bai Suxian walked towards them in winter clothes and a brilliant ferret cloak. Although there was not a bit snowflake on Zhang Tie's clothes, Bai Suxian still came forward to pat his clothes like his virtuous wife.

Lately, as Iron-Dragon Airboat gradually approached Youzhou Province, Bai Suxian became more and more virtuous like a good wife and mother. 2 days ago, Bai Suxian even washed Zhang Tie's clothes. However, it was her first time to do laundry. Finally, although Zhang Tie's priceless boa silk robes became clean, after being dried, they would become mops if being bound to wooden clubs.

Watching Bai Suxian leveling a corner of his garment by drawing it, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Mountain Lifting Hermit with a helpless look. Mountain Lifting Hermit then burst out into laughter.

"You've killed someone?" Bai Suxian stood up and asked Zhang Tie.

Due to her sharp knight's consciousness, Bai Suxian could notice

the faint blood smell over Zhang Tie. Although there was no blood on Zhang Tie's clothes, it still carried a faint blood smell in a short period after staying in a bloody environment.

"Just now, I wanted to take a look at the northern landscape outside. Unimaginably, Little Thunder had a sharp vision and discovered a team of bloody figures in the wild hundreds of miles away. Therefore, elder brother and I went there to deal with those bloody figures and warmed up our bodies by the way!" Zhang Tie said with a smile.

Zhang Tie named the thunder hawks as Little Thunder. After hearing that Zhang Tie was speaking highly of it, the thunder hawk fluffed up its feathers.

"There were over 70 bloody figures. It was a big team. In Tongzhou Province, even if they couldn't break through a city, they could easily sweep over villages and towns. Even the ground guardians of ordinary business groups couldn't defeat so many bloody figures. We'd better clean them up the moment we saw them. Otherwise, many commoners would be killed by them!" Mountain Lifting Hermit said as he shook his head.

"However, those bloody figures' heads and corpses are in the wild. They will not easily rot in the snowy day. It's said that Tongzhou Province has a high reward for heads of bloody figures. If members of Supreme Court or local garrisons killed them, they could even promote to higher positions. I wonder who would pick up those heads and corpses of bloody figures!" Zhang Tie joked. In such a high position, of course, he would not care about a few gold coins and the so-called meritorious service.

Of course, the food chain of a huge deep-sea monster was different than that of small shrimps and fish. The former would not admire about the later either.

"We've done a lot of meritorious services for others." Mountain Lifting Hermit briefed.

The three people burst out into laughter at the same time. Closely after that, they entered the airboat. They didn't need to care about the thunder hawk as it could enter the airboat itself step by step just like a human.

Over the past half a month, since Iron-Dragon Airboat set off from Zhenzhou Province, it had been approaching to and crossing those provinces and prefectures that were afflicted by bloody figures at Zhang Tie's request. Although Iron-Dragon Airboat didn't stop on the way, with thunder hawk as a high altitude reconnaissance satellite outside Iron-Dragon Airboat, they had exterminated 20-30 small teams of bloody figures within 60 miles on the way. They didn't let any alive bloody figures go. Additionally, they even saved two villages in the wild and a small city from those bloody figures. Besides, they coordinated with the local garrisons to exterminate a team of bloody figures that hid in a mountain cave. After doing all the above meritorious services, Zhang Tie's group directly flew away pleasantly without leaving a name or accepting the local invitation and appreciation.

In the words of Mountain Lifting Hermit, this was what knights should do.

When they entered the airboat, all the disciples of Iron-Dragon Sect hailed them. As Mountain Lifting Hermit had become the grand elder of Iron-Dragon Sect, of course, Zhang Tie's disciples dared not snub him.

"As it's winter, local garrisons are inconvenient in marching. If bloody figures went out, they would easily leave traces. These bloody figures are pretty cunning. They would definitely hide somewhere. Therefore, before next spring, the catastrophe of bloody figures should be relieved for the time being. It will take Taixia Country as a whole at least 1 year to completely exterminate these bloody figures." Mountain Lifting Hermit talked about the overall situation of the catastrophe of bloody figures in Taixia Country, "When in Zhenzhou Province, I had heard that the prime

minister would resign after the catastrophe of bloody figures across Taixia Country was slightly pacified next year..."

The Finance Minister's Mansion was under the direct leadership of prime minister, who was one of the top three chancellors. Han Zhengfang the finance minister of Taixia Country was the master of Heavens Reaching Church, who detonated the catastrophe of bloody figures across Taixia Country. Of course, the prime minister of Taixia Country had to take responsibility for it. After the prime minister resigned, the position of prime minister would be vacant. Given the high popularity, Meng Shidao, the master of the crown prince would succeed to the position of prime minister.

In over 1 month, the news that Meng Shidao had promoted to the semi-sage realm and killed Han Zhengfang had been spread across Taixia Country. Therefore, in the large-scale catastrophe of bloody figures, the fame of Meng Shidao skyrocketed. Of course, he became the very person who would succeed to the prime minister. Benefited from him, even crown prince's position rose greatly.

After Meng Shidao succeeded to the prime minister of Taixia country, the crown prince who was acting as regent could have a bigger right of speech in the imperial court. The subordinates of the Gobbling Party across Taixia Country had been ready celebrating their "master" and "leader" for reaching his heyday stealthily.

In the opinions of many members of Gobbling Party, if Meng Shidao promoted to the prime minister, it indicated that the Gobbling Party had started to reach its heyday in Taixia Country.

The stone that Zhang Tie threw in Xuanyuan Hill was arousing an increasingly larger ripple. Although Zhang Tie couldn't predict everything. Each coin had two sides. After making a plot to have Meng Shidao fight Han Zhengfang ferociously, although the Gobbling Party was pushed to the opposite of Heavens Reaching Church, Meng Shidao was also pushed to the position of prime minister of Taixia Country.

After fighting Meng Shidao, Han Zhengfang had disappeared. Therefore, the speculation that Meng Shidao had caught up with Han Zhengfang and killed him after the latter escaped away from Xuanyuan Hill with heavy injuries became popular across Taixia Country. Of course, this news was a great strike for the remnants of Heavens Reaching Church; however, it was a pretty good news for the Gobbling Party of Taixia Country. Therefore, the Gobbling Party helped intensify the strength of billows and waves at this moment. Zhang Tie even doubted that this news was released by the Gobbling Party. This news would bring a great political dividend for the Gobbling Party and could severely suppress the power of Heavens Reaching Church and boost the morale of soldiers and commoners across Taixia Country. Therefore, even Meng Shidao didn't deny the news.

As Meng Shidao didn't deny the news, of course, Zhang Tie would not jump out to be a target. Whatever, Zhang Tie had already reached his target. It was none of his business even if Meng Shidao promoted to the prime minister; neither would Zhang Tie be afraid of him.

'As long as I returned to Huaiyuan Palace, Meng Shidao and the Gobbling Party would never easily shock Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang family.'

'I'm not the same person as I was 4 years ago. Huaiyuan Palace is not the same Huaiyuan Palace either. Additionally, the Gobbling Party should consider how to deal with Heavens Reaching Church instead of dealing with me and Huaiyuan Palace.' On the way here from Zhenzhhou Province, Zhang Tie had evidently sensed that the Gobbling Party and the clans that supported the Gobbling Party suffered the greatest losses among the regions which were afflicted by bloody figures. The clans of Gobbling Party would encounter great tentative shocks from bloody figures immediately. The families of some local backbones of Gobbling Party were even exterminated. The Heavens Reaching Church had fallen into the

trap of Zhang Tie by targeting at the Gobbling Party at this critical moment. Zhang Tie only needed to watch two lions fight in the mountain.

...

In the command module, Zhang Tie told Mountain Lifting Hermit as he pointed at the looming, boundless and undulating mountain range in front of him, "That's Yangui Mountain Range. We head for north from Tongzhou Province. After crossing Yangui Mountain Range, we will arrive at Youzhou Province! Previously, our Iron-Dragon Sect only occupied over 600,000 square miles of Iron-Dragon Sect. I've not imagined that I could win a bet from Guan Qianchong. Therefore, Guan Clan gifted me the rest land of Yangui Mountain Range. From then on, the entire Yangui Mountain Range belongs to our Iron-Dragon Sect. We can do whatever we want here!"

"Yangui Mountain Range is majestic and imposing. It's abundant in natural resources and connects with many provinces. The entire Yangui Mountain Range occupies millions of square miles. No other sect in the surroundings could match our Iron-Dragon Sect. Besides, there are many basins and plains in the mountain range, large or small. We could easily build dozens of big cities here. This Yangui Mountain Range is indeed the treasure land for Iron-Dragon Sect to be prosperous!" Mountain Lifting Hermit nodded with a strange look as he watched the Yangui Mountain Range in the far, "This Yangui Mountain Range is even similar to my real name. My mortal surname was Yan. It seems that it's predestined for me to join Iron-Dragon Sect!"

Zhang Tie became stunned for a second.

Right then, two airboats appeared in front of Yangui Mountain Range. Suspending in the air, the two airboats seemed to be waiting for Iron-Dragon Airboat.

Zhang Tie identified the two airboats at once. One of them was

the private vehicle of Zhang Taixuan, the head of Huaiyuan Palace; the other belonged to his elder brother.

"Huaiyuan Palace is welcoming young brother back home..."

Chapter 1185: The Return of Elder Mushen

Honestly, Zhang Tie was very thrilled at this moment.

After the new year festival, he would have left Youzhou Province for 5 years. Zhang Tie had been waiting for returning to Youzhou Province in the public and meeting his family members for too long.

At the sight of Iron-Dragon Airboat, the two airboats had been slowly approaching it. So did Iron-Dragon Airboat.

As if they felt the airboat was too slow at this moment, before their airboats got closer to Iron-Dragon Airboat, some knights had already flown off their airboats towards Iron-Dragon Airboat like meteors in the daytime at their maximal speeds.

Mountain Lifting Hermit was the grand elder of Iron-Dragon Sect, he would not join the fun when Zhang Tie united with his family members. Neither did Zhang Tie waste time on persuading him to join them. After leaving some words to Mountain Lifting Hermit, Zhang Tie had called Bai Suxian and Zhang Gui to fly off Iron-Dragon Airboat towards those knights.

Although it was chilly, it didn't influence these knights.

Both parties soon met in the sky.

Elder Muyu, Elder Muray, Elder Muyuan and Elder Muen of Huaiyuan Palace had arrived. Even Zhang Taixuan had come to welcome Zhang Tie.

It was the supreme etiquette for the head of a clan to welcome a person on the border of a province.

Both parties suspended in the air with a distance of 20 m. Elder Muray and Elder Muen both looked very excited. Zhang Taixuan's eyebrows were quivering which indicated that he was not calm inside.

Zhang Tie watched these familiar faces; the elders of Huaiyuan Palace also watched Zhang Tie and the two people on Zhang Tie's side. After over 4 years, they all felt overwhelmed inside at the sight of each other.

After hearing that Cui Li was Zhang Tie's incarnation, all the elders in Huaiyuan Palace including Zhang Taixuan didn't believe that. The reason was simple. They all knew when Zhang Tie promoted to a black iron knight. It was too unimaginable for Zhang Tie to promote to an earth knight only after leaving Youzhou Province for 4 years.

However, all of their doubts had faded away the moment they saw Zhang Tie. At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't hide his qi. Therefore, the familiar qi of earth knight shocked all the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace. They started to regard Zhang Tie with reverence unconsciously.

The young elite and the youngest clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace had long been famous across Taixia Country.

Watching Zhang Tie's face which was still as young as that of a teenager, all the elders of Huaiyuan Palace thought inside, 'How could such a teenager promote to an earth knight? Even the top 7 sects and top clans in Taixia Country don't have such a young earth knight.'

"Clan head, elders!"

In the wuthering wind, Zhang Tie broke the short silence as he hailed Zhang Taixuan and the other clan elders.

After hearing Zhang Tie's kind voice, all the elders felt a sense of relief. At the same time, the boulder in the heart of each elder finally landed steadily.

Before coming here, all the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace were mostly afraid that Zhang Tie still had a grudge against Huaiyuan Palace for not fully standing on his side at the critical moment over

these years. If Zhang Tie really thought so, the entire Huaiyuan Palace would break apart the moment he came back. A few years ago, Zhang Tie might not have such an ability; however, Zhang Tie had been able to have Huaiyuan Palace turn upside down at this moment. When Iron-Dragon Sect was founded, the powerful battle strength that Zhang Tie performed when defeating Nangong Sheng had absolutely surpassed Zhang Taixuan the current clan head of Huaiyuan Palace. It could be said that Zhang Tie had been the No. 1 powerhouse of Huaiyuan Palace. If he lost his anger over domestic affairs, nobody could suppress him.

Straight-forward Elder Muray flew towards Zhang Tie as he punched Zhang Tie's shoulder forcefully and sighed, "Good boy, I've really been surpassed by you...".

Although Elder Muray was smiling, his eyes were sparkling with tears. It was hard to tide over these years for both Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Tie. Thank god, they finally tided over it. After Zhang Tie came back, all the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace saw the hope of reinvigorating Huaiyuan Palace.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he accepted Elder Muray's punch frankly, "Elder Muray is becoming more vigorous with age. I was told that Elder Muray was killing bloody figures in Tongzhou Province these days, I've not imagined that you could come back!"

"Your return is the biggest thing for Huaiyuan Palace. We have to put aside other things no matter how important they are. This one must be Miss Bai. This one..." Elder Muray said after glancing at Bai Suxian and Zhang Gui's faces.

The other elders of Huiayuan Palace must have known Bai Suxian's identity; even if they didn't, they must have heard about that. However, Zhang Gui was a bit strange to them. Because Zhang Gui had been following up Zhang Tie in an obedient manner the moment he flew off the airboat with Zhang Tie, the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace thought that he was a powerhouse on Bai Suxian's side. However, after observing him carefully, they

found that this black iron knight behind Zhang Tie was fully obedient to Zhang Tie.

"This is Zhang Gui, my subordinate..." Zhang Tie introduced Zhang Gui to the other elders. Zhang Gui revealed a smile towards the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace silently.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's prophetic vision was manifested. If Zhang Gui still maintained his original look as an earth knight and called himself this old slave, these elders of Huaiyuan Palace would feel very embarrassed and the atmosphere would be in an impasse.

"Nice to see you, Count Long Wind and the others elders of Huaiyuan Palace, I'm Bai Suxian!"

Being different than Zhang Gui, Bai Suxian greeted all the others of Huaiyuan Palace in an elegant manner.

After knowing the identity of Bai Suxian, nobody in Huaiyuan Palace dared give themselves airs in front of her. Therefore, all of them returned their salute to Bai Suxian.

"It's Huaiyuan Palace's great pleasure to have Elder Mushen back. It's chilly here. We will talk about it in the airboat!" Zhang Taixuan who had been watching Zhang Tie silently finally opened his mouth.

They all nodded as they flew towards the two airboats dispatched by Huaiyuan Palace.

Zhang Yang was standing on the deck of the airboat in a black mink coat and watching Zhang Tie and the others flying back. Although it seemed to be easy for knights to fly in the sky, commoners could only wait in the airboat on such an occasion.

"You two wait for me in that airboat. I have something to negotiate with the clan head and the other elders!" Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian and Zhang Gui as he pointed at his elder brother's airboat.

Of course, Zhang Gui followed Zhang Tie's order. Bai Suxian also

replied, "Hmm" in a pretty docile way before flying towards Zhang Yang's airboat.

Watching the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion being so obedient to Zhang Tie like his wife, the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace exchanged weird glances with each other. Zhang Taixuan threw a profound glance at Zhang Tie too.

Zhang Tie told Zhang Yang something in a secret way before boarding on Zhang Taixuan's airboat with Zhang Taixuan and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace. After they boarded on the airboat, the Iron-Dragon Airboat turned around and flew towards Fire Dragon Territory. The two airboats of Huaiyuan Palace then flew towards Yanghe Prefecture.

...

With the arrival of Zhang Tie, the clan head and all the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace, this conference room immediately became the decision-making center of Huaiyuan Palace.

After the door of the conference room was closed, causing a sound "bang", two lineal powerhouses of Huaiyuan Palace guarded outside the door. Closely after that, the atmosphere in the conference room started to become official.

"I know that clan head and all the other elders have many doubts. Now that I've already come back, you can ask whatever you want!" Zhang Tie said frankly.

"We're not doubting your identity. But Zhang Yang has not clarified something. All the elders and clan head are just curious about that!" Elder Muyuan pretended to cough twice slightly, "As Elder Mushen has not come back for a few years, considering the current catastrophe of bloody figures, please confirm your bloodline!"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at the bloodline testing crystal that he had seen in the Ancestral Bloodline Palace. Closely after that, he

took it and pierced one finger by the pointed end of the crystal, allowing one drop of blood to fall onto the bloodline crystal. Watching the blood in the bloodline crystal becoming berserk and giving out strong, dazzling glow, all the elders at present let out a long sigh. They exchanged a glance with each other before nodding at the same time.

"Elder Mushen, please don't mind it. When clan head returned home from the Earth-elements Realm, he also accepted the test of the bloodline crystal under the gazes of all the other elders. As it's concerned about the safety of the clan, there's no exception." Elder Muyuan explained.

"It's okay. I understand it. If not pass this test, even I would not feel reassured!" Zhang Tie replied as he waved his hand. After confirming his identity, the small wound on Zhang Tie's finger healed automatically in a split second. Zhang Tie glanced around before asking, "You must want to know how I I became Cui Li and promoted to an earth knight in a short period."

"We indeed want to know how did Elder Mushen became Cui Li and cheated all the people across Taixia Country over these years. As for how Elder Mushen promoted to an earth knight in a short period, as it's involved with your secret method, if Elder Mushen doesn't feel like telling us, you don't need to tell us about that!" Elder Muyu opened his mouth.

As for how Zhang Tie became Cui Li, as it was involved with the confirmation of Zhang Tie's identity, they couldn't be careless about that; as for how Zhang Tie promoted to an earth knight, as it was Zhang Tie's privacy, he was not obligated to expose it to the other elders. Elder Muyu's words indicated the fairness of Huaiyuan Palace. Zhang Tie also nodded inside.

"Elders, you must remember that pupil-changing bloodline that I've manifested in front of you. This pupil-changing bloodline is just the preliminary stage of a more senior immortal bloodline. After fully awakening this immortal bloodline, I could even change

my hair, eyes, look and figure..." Zhang Tie said as he started to change his body under the gaze of all the other elders at present. In the blink of an eye, he had incarnated into Cui Li while his body change had reached the maximal endurance capacity of his garments.

"Have you seen it clearly?" Zhang Tie asked in Cui Li's voice. After that, he gradually incarnated to his original look.

The conference room became quiet while all the elders of Huaiyuan Palace became dumbfounded. Zhang Taixuan looked shocked. They had heard that shadow demons could incarnate into humans; however, they had not seen any human incarnating into another one casually. Without the bloodline test, some elders would have taken Zhang Tie as a shadow demon and fought him at the sight of this scene.

Under the amazed looks of all the others, Zhang Tie directly took out a brilliant water-element crystal from his portable space-teleportation equipment and absorbed it at the fastest speed...

Chapter 1186: Politely Declining

If he told others about all the secrets, he was an idiot!

If he cheated them in a perfunctory way, he was treating others as idiots!

Zhang Tie was not an idiot; neither were the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace and the clan head.

Facing these elders and the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie knew that he could barely explain it only by lip service. Therefore, he directly displayed his talents in front of the others.

People needed to change according to the situation. On the premise of not exposing the secret that he was cultivating an emperor-level secret method King Roc Sutra , Zhang Tie told the others that he had grasped a top secret method called Chaotic Treasure Body; he even accomplished the shift between Fire Dragon Sutra and Five Elements Ground-look Sutra in 30 minutes in front of the others, causing them to be speechless once again.

Actually, it would take Zhang Tie less than 1 minute to accomplish the shift between two familiar secret methods. However, Zhang Tie didn't feel that it was appropriate to shift between two secret methods too fast in front of the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace; therefore, he performed it in a seemingly difficult way on purpose.

After witnessing how Zhang Tie changed his looks, absorbed a water-element crystal at a high speed and shifted his battle qis casually, all the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace became dumbfounded.

It took Zhang Tie about 2 hours to display all of his talents. It might be longer in normal times; however, it was as fast as blinking their eyes for the other elders and clan head of Huaiyuan Palace in the conference room at present. Zhang Tie had

performed all of his talents before the others recovered their composure.

"Elder Mushen, you mean Thousands of Beads Mentality Sutra originates from the Mental Arithmetic by Abacus ?" Elder Muan who had been silent since the beginning couldn't stand to ask Zhang Tie.

"Yes!"

"Does it mean that the other elders and I might also reach your realm if we cultivate Mental Arithmetic by Abacus from now on?"

Elder Muan's question attracted all the other elders' attention.

"Theoretically, yes. If you could reach the level of carrying out 10 tasks at the same time by Mental Arithmetic by Abacus, you could indeed absorb elements crystals 10 times faster. However..."

"Go ahead!"

"Besides Thousands of Beads Mentality Sutra , my current achievement is also related to the experience that I was struck by a lightning bolt..." Zhang Tie used the same almighty trick, which would never be exposed at all; neither did need he to explain about it, "After being struck by the lightning bolt, my spiritual energy increased very fast. I couldn't reach such a realm without the help of the great spiritual energy and the Thousands of Beads Mentality Sutra . I'm afraid that it's a bit difficult if you just depended on Thousands of Beads Mentality Sutra without the great spiritual energy!"

"Cui Li was born in Youzhou Province. We've heard that Cui Li had returned home to meet his old servants before heading for Earth-elements Realm; the local officials even built a knight's imposing memorial archway for Cui Li. As you've not been to Taixia Country before, how were you so familiar with Cui Li's bygoness?" Elder Muan asked.

"The real Cui Li was actually one incarnation of Zhu Liang the

poisonous wolf on the wanted list of Supreme Court. Before returning to Youzhou Province, I met Zhu Liang in an unpopulated isle in the open waters of Qiongzhou Province. He wanted to kill me; however, he was killed by me. Before his death, I read his memory by a secret method and knew that he had an incarnation of Cui Li in Yongzhou Province!"

"Memory reading method, this...this seems to be a secret method of Bloody Soul Temple of Taixia Country!"

"Right, it's indeed a secret method of Bloody Soul Temple. When I was in Selnes Theater of Operations, I gained a secret method called Soul Forbidden Method , I learned this memory reading method from it!" Zhang Tie explained as he directly took out the book of Soul Forbidden Method and displayed it to all the others. "I will donate this book to our clan. If elders are interested in it, you could learn it. Sometimes, it might help you a lot. I was told that some sects in Taixia Country also grasped some secret methods of Bloody Soul Temple. It's normal for Huaiyuan Palace to grasp one too!"

As Zhang Tie had already got the complete version of Bloody Soul Sutra, it was nothing pitiful for him to gift Soul Forbidden Method to Huaiyuan Palace. No matter what, they were of the same family.

Those in the conference room had just been shocked too much by Zhang Tie's secret immortal bloodline and secret methods. Therefore, they did not feel strange that Zhang Tie had grasped Soul Forbidden Method .

Elder Muan suddenly let out a long sigh as he watched Zhang Tie, "At the beginning, Elder Muyu and I were well known as Double Jades of Huaiyuan Palace. I'm afraid that we don't need to talk about it later on!"

Elder Muyu shook his head as he revealed a bitter smile. Closely after that, he nodded.

Elder Muray suddenly patted his thigh forcefully, causing a loud,

crisp sound in the conference room, scaring all the other elders so much.

"Elder Muray, what do you want to say?"

"Hahaha..." Elder Muray burst out into laughter, "Body-changing immortal bloodline, Soul Forbidden Method, Chaotic Treasure Body. Do you realize what do they mean? With these immortal bloodlines and secret methods, Elder Mushen could almost change whoever he wants below knight level. It's even more terrifying than shadow demon. If this news is exposed to the public, I will see who else dare screw Huaiyuan Palace. Even if Huaiyuan Palace was exterminated, as long as Elder Mushen was still alive, our Huaiyuan Palace's bloodline would definitely last and reinvigorate once again. As long as those people who want to screw Huaiyuan Palace think about that Elder Mushen might lurk on their side to kill them at any time in the incarnation of their familiar ones, they would not sleep well!"

"However, after Elder Mushen exposes your real identity to the public, your secrets such as body-changing immortal bloodline, Chaotic Treasure Body Secret method and Soul Forbidden Method would be barely covered..." Being different than Elder Muray who was very excited, Elder Muyuan who came from the same branch of Goldensea City with Zhang Tie looked sad as he continued, "If so, the mortal enemy of Huaiyuan Palace would definitely treat Elder Mushen as the eyesore. If I were the enemy of Huaiyuan Palace, I would kill Elder Mushen first if I wanted to exterminate Huaiyuan Palace!"

After Elder Muyuan mentioned it, the entire conference room became quiet once again. The other elders could easily understand it. If they were the enemy of Huaiyuan Palace, they had to kill Zhang Tie first; otherwise, they would beat the grass and frighten away the snake.

As Zhang Tie came back to Huaiyuan Palace in the public, it was equal for him to stand in the front of Huaiyuan Palace as the

shield.

Of course, Elder Mushen had realized it. However, he still came back to be the target of the enemy of Huaiyuan Palace, what a responsible hero!

Zhang Tie told the world at the risk of his life——Huaiyuan Palace would survive on as long as Elder Mushen was alive!

Watching Zhang Tie's calm and extremely young face, Zhang Taixuan sighed as he stood up from his chair and bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie, followed by all the other elders.

Zhang Tie stood up and bowed towards them at the same time as he said, "Don't be that polite. We have the same ancestors and bloodlines, we're of the same family. We're closely related to each other. I will just be myself frankly!"

Zhang Taixuan's face turned extremely solemn at this moment. As he was standing, everybody else just stood up. Zhang Taixuan glanced around before throwing a deep glance at Zhang Tie and saying, "Huaiyuan Palace is founded by Lord Huaiyuan. When Lord Huaiyuan was alive, he left 8 branches of descendants along with the ancestral doctrine. The position of the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace and Count Long Wind should be inherited by the most excellent one; instead of being occupied by the eldest son of the eldest wife of the branch in Yiyang City. The return of Elder Mushen counts most in Huaiyuan Palace. Elder Mushen is not only young and talented but also willing to fulfill his responsibilities. His secret methods, battle skills and reputation are far greater than me. As all the elders of Huaiyuan Palace are at present, I propose to reelect the clan head for Huaiyuan Palace according to the regulations of Huaiyuan Palace. I vote Elder Mushen, what do you say?"

Zhang Taixuan's words shocked all the other elders, including Zhang Tie.

Watching Zhang Taixuan's generous and righteous face, Zhang

Tie wondered whether Zhang Taixuan was probing or sincerely wanted to abdicate his clan head position to him out of other considerations. All in all, Zhang Taixuan's words were indeed unimaginable.

All the other 5 elders exchanged a glance with each other with a confused look.

No matter what Zhang Taixuan was thinking about, Zhang Tie would never promise it. The simplest reason was, if Lan Yunxi's dad abdicated the position of clan head to him, the marriage between Lan Yunxi and him would be impossible. Zhang Tie would never take the position of clan head at the cost of losing a perfect wife...

Honestly, was the position of Huaiyuan Palace's clan head more powerful than the throne of Tsar in Ice and Snow Wilderness?

Additionally, the position of Huaiyuan Palace's clan head was just a count. He had already abandoned the reward of the dukedom, not to mention the hereditary position of Count Long Wind.

Zhang Tie let out a long sigh, "I've already been satisfied to be an elder of Huaiyuan Palace at such a young age. Clan head, please don't say such words in the future; otherwise, I would have to leave Huaiyuan Palace!"

Zhang Tie expressed his "firm stance" immediately...

Chapter 1187: Foreign Affairs Agency of Zhang Family

Before the two airboats arrived at Jinwu City, Zhang Tie had already accomplished the first communication with the other elders and clan head of Huaiyuan Palace.

Undoubtedly, this communication was necessary for both Zhang Tie and the entire Huaiyuan Palace. Through this communication, three things were confirmed. First, Zhang Tie's real identity. Second, the position of Zhang Tie or the branch of Zhang Clan in Jinwu City in Huaiyuan Palace. Third, a major event relevant to both Zhang Tie and Huaiyuan Palace——All the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Tie had agreed to hold the secondary rotating chakra ceremony for Zhang Tie after the first lunar month in the next year.

After this rotating chakra ceremony, everyone in the world would know that Zhang Tie had promoted to an earth knight and was innocent.

The elders of Huaiyuan Palace had already predicted about the shocks of Zhang Tie's secondary chakra rotating ceremony to the rest of the world. Although they had over 1 month to prepare for this rotating chakra ceremony, they still felt it was not enough given its unprecedentedly large scale.

Previously, when Zhang Taixuan promoted to an earth knight, Huaiyuan Palace could have prepared a rotating chakra ceremony for him; however, as Zhang Taixuan had been the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, they couldn't do that. According to the laws of Taixia Country, all the officials above Class 9 in Taixia Country were forbidden to hold any ceremony in the name of themselves during their term of service, including the birthday, promotion, home move, delivery of children, marriage and rotating chakra ceremony. Even the official's parents could only

celebrate their birthday every 30 years. Although officials below Class 9 were not strictly requested, they were also restricted to do that. Because of this regulation, Huaiyuan Palace didn't hold the rotating chakra ceremony for Zhang Taixuan.

Of course, Zhang Tie was not limited to this regulation. Meanwhile, Huaiyuan expected to drive away the haze over Huaiyuan Palace these years through this rotating chakra ceremony.

When they were less than 350 miles away from Jinwu City, under the respectful gaze of all the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie flew off the deck of Zhang Taixuan's airboat towards Jinwu Airboat.

The moment Zhang Tie landed in Jinwu Airboat, Zhang Taixuan's airboat had turned around and flew towards Youzhou City. Zhang Taixuan and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace knew that Zhang Tie was longing for reuniting with his family members; therefore, they didn't go back home with him in case of disturbing them.

Zhang Yang, Bai Suxian and Zhang Gui were all waiting for Zhang Tie on the deck of Jinwu Airboat. Only after 2 hours, Zhang Yang had already got acquainted with Bai Suxian and Zhang Gui. Zhang Gui regarded himself as Zhang Tie's servant; Bai Suxian dared not give herself airs in front of Zhang Tie's elder brother; Zhang Yang treated Bai Suxian as Zhang Tie's wife. Therefore, they soon got acquainted with each other.

"How's everything going?" Zhang Yang asked at the sight of Zhang Tie coming back.

"Let's talk about it inside!" Zhang Tie smiled as he raised his right hand. At this moment, one more quaint remote-sensing finger ring appeared on one finger of his right hand. On the two opposite sides of the ring, there were two tiny top-class remote-sensing crystals, with which Zhang Tie could contact Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang

Taixuan at the same time. After coming to Taixia Country for 5 years, the elders of Huaiyuan Palace had updated their remote-sensing finger rings for one time. Previously, their finger ring could only be integrated with one remote-sensing crystal; now, they could be integrated with two remote-sensing crystals.

"Fine, let's talk about it inside!" Zhang Yang nodded.

The four people then entered the airboat. Zhang Yang led them into his study room.

Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian both followed Zhang Yang in; however, Zhang Gui didn't enter the study room; instead, he just stood outside the door like a loyal dog.

"Zhang Gui, you come in too. As you will serve Zhang family from then on, you should know some things!"

"Yes, Master!"

After receiving Zhang Tie's order, Zhang Gui entered the study. Zhang Yang, Zhang Tie and Bai Suxian sat down; however, Zhang Gui insisted on standing on Zhang Tie's side.

Zhang Yang threw a glance at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then nodded towards Zhang Yang. As they were brothers, of course they understood each other well. From then on, Zhang Gui's position in Zhang family had been fixed. Zhang Yang admired Zhang Tie's power very much once again.

Zhang Tie told them about the details of the negotiation between him and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace. After hearing that Zhang Taixuan would like to abdicate the position of clan head of Huaiyuan Palace to Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang frowned at once; Bai Suxian revealed a speculative look.

"Didn't you agree with him?"

"The position of clan head of Huaiyuan Palace is nothing attractive to me at all. Therefore, I refused him immediately. Additionally, I expressed that anyone who wanted me to be the

clan head of Huaiyuan Palace would drive me away from Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, Zhang Taixuan didn't urge that anymore!" Zhang Tie rubbed the finger ring that was especially matched for the elders of Huaiyuan Palace with a doubtful look, "I don't know why Zhang Taixuan could suddenly have such a thought. To be honest, his words shocked me!"

"Given the current power of our Zhang family, we'd better not take the position of clan head!" Zhang Yang said before thinking for a short while, "We are alone in our generation of our family, our children have not grown up yet. I spend my full efforts in Jinwu Business Group. Even if you could become the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace, we don't have too many reliable subordinates. Therefore, we couldn't really take Huaiyuan Palace under control. The position of the clan head would just be nominal. If you really want to take this position, you could consider it when our children have grown up and could fulfill responsibilities in Huaiyuan Palace. By then, you might enjoy taking this position. I'm afraid that Zhang Taixuan was afraid of domestic conflicts when he found that you had greater influence and battle strength than him; therefore, he pretended to be that righteous and generous and wanted the other elders to express their stances to you!"

Zhang Tie threw a glance at his elder brother. After a few years of practice, Zhang Yang had been more imposing. Previously, the two brothers were afraid of meeting a clan elder; now, Zhang Yang talked about the position of the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace calmly as if he was talking about an ordinary business.

'Actually, when I was young, I was less interested and ambitious about the so-called power and influence than my elder brother...'

As Zhang Tie was thinking about it, he nodded and said, "Hmm...I also think so!"

"Huaiyuan Palace only has one prefecture in Youzhou Province. It has fewer than 10 cities. It might be smaller than Fire Dragon Territory. The rank of the nobility of clan head is just count. If you

want a title of nobility, you don't need to ask it from others. Given your meritorious services in Earth-elements Realm, you could easily get a title of nobility when the Heavens Fortune List is exposed to the public. If you want cities, you could build as many cities as you like in the south border of Taixia Country, large or small; instead of having to consider about others' moods. Who favors those cities and the title of nobility of count? As if he was showing his great leniency to you..."

Compared to Zhang Yang's attitude, Bai Suxian's tone sounded a bit dissatisfied. As the princess of Lord Guangnan's Mansion, she really didn't treasure the position of clan head. In Bai Suxian's eyes, Zhang Taixuan's behavior was like having her would-be husband state his stand about the ownership of the real estate as the elder of the family before her husband saw his parents-in-law as if Zhang Taixuan was afraid that the would-be son-in-law would share his real estate with a foreign aid. Of course, she felt unhappy.

With different stances, people would make different conclusions about the same topic.

After exchanging a glance with each other, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile as he passed a message to Zhang Tie with his eye light——your wife is tricky.

Zhang Tie replied with his eye light——don't worry, she's under my control.

Zhang Yang threw a glance at Zhang Gui. Zhang Tie understood Zhang Yang's meaning at once as he looked around and asked Zhang Gui, "Zhang Gui, what's your opinion?"

"Master, please forgive this old slave for my offense!"

"It's fine, there're only 4 people here; we're just taking the matter on its merits. Just put it straight!" Zhang Tie waved his hand.

"Yes, Master!" Zhang Gui bowed towards Zhang Tie before straightening up as he said with narrowed eyes, "In the opinion of

this old slave, Zhang Taixuan the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace was malicious, one stone for two birds!"

Soon after Zhang Gui's words, the atmosphere in the study froze at once. Zhang Tie also narrowed his eyes as he looked at Zhang Gui calmly before asking, "How?"

"If Master accepts the position of Clan Head of Huaiyuan Palace, what about your amazing secret methods? Would you share them with Huaiyuan Palace or not? If you don't, you will have a bad reputation; besides, you might be blamed for despising the other members of Huaiyuan Palace. If you give someone a bit of rice, you're helping him; if you give him a lot of rice, you're drawing animosity. As Master favors Huaiyuan Palace now, all the members of Huaiyuan Palace would appreciate that and show their awe to you; if Master doesn't preach your secret methods to them, as long as someone foment disunity and dissension in the dark, being driven by desire, they would hate you and be dissatisfied about you. If so, you would not keep the position of clan head for too long; additionally, there would be some potential threats!"

"If Master preaches all your secret methods to the other members of Huaiyuan Palace, Master might gain a good reputation in Huaiyuan Palace; however, you would lose your largest reliance in the chaotic world. Even though Master gains a good reputation, like what the eldest young master said, as the next generation of Huaiyuan Palace has not grown up, the lineal bloodline in Jinwu City couldn't fully control Huaiyuan Palace. Finally, you are just a nominal clan head. By contrast, you would lose too much. Additionally, after Master's secret methods spread over Huaiyuan Palace, the biggest benefactor would be the branch of Yiyang City which have the most population. Later on, when the juniors of the branch of Yiyang City grow up and there are some outstanding ones, it would be hard to say whether Master's lineal descendants could succeed to the position of clan head anymore! It's just one reason!"

"What about the 2nd reason?" Zhang Tie asked calmly.

"Second, if Master expressed in the public that you would not succeed to the position of clan head from then on, you would pose no threat to Zhang Taixuan in Huaiyuan Palace. As a gentleman, of course, Master would not break your promise. If Master wants to take the position of clan head later on, you would become a despicable man who breaks the promise for power and influence. How could a despicable man win the trust of members in Huaiyuan Palace and the rest of the world and be qualified to be the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace?"

"Therefore, no matter whether Master agrees with Zhang Taixuan or not, Zhang Taixuan is always the winner. He would gain one bird at first; as for the other bird, he would gain it slowly! As Master's secret methods and the position of the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace are both unusual, someone would like to gain them in whatever means he could. Even disciples of the same sect or the same clan even father and sons, brothers would hurt each other every day across Taixia Country for secret methods, power and influence."

"Of course, it's just this old slave's individual opinion. This old slave has witnessed too many despicable tactics and plots. I always treat people with the most malicious mentality. I don't know what is kindness at all. This old slave didn't acquaint with Zhang Taixuan; perhaps Count Long Wind is also a gentleman who always considers the wellbeing of Huaiyuan Palace and admires Master faithfully. This old slave might have blamed him wrongly by the mentality of a despicable man!"

After Zhang Gui finished his words, the entire study became quiet. Even Zhang Yang and Bai Suxian looked at Zhang Gui with widely opened eyes. They wondered where Zhang Tie found such a figure. Zhang Gui's words were shocking and frightening. After his words, the atmosphere in the room became a bit colder.

When Zhang Gui spoke, Zhang Tie's eye light became

increasingly acute and heart-wrenching. Not until Zhang Gui finished his words did Zhang Tie close his eyes. After being silent for over 10 seconds, Zhang Tie opened his eyes while his eye light and voice both recovered composure.

"Count Long Wind is the clan head of Huaiyuan Palace. He's selfless and is the pillar of Huaiyuan Palace. He deserves the respect of tens of thousands of people. Your words are too excessive. I don't hope that to be heard by the 5th person!"

"Yes, Master, this old slave was muddle-headed and talking rubbish. I didn't know what I was talking about on the earth!" Zhang Gui replied. Without argument and dissatisfaction, he just slightly lowered his body and stood behind Zhang Tie silently while lowering his eyes.

After being silent for a short while, Zhang Tie told Zhang Yang, "From then on, our family should establish a Foreign Affairs Agency. Zhang Gui will be the general steward of the Foreign Affairs Agency. With his help, we could be reassured when working outside. Old brother, you'd better allocate some people to the Foreign Affairs Agency..."

Zhang Yang threw another glance at Zhang Gui before nodding slowly...

Of course, they didn't need to negotiate over everything in details.

After their talk, the airboat had already arrived at Jinwu City...

Chapter 1188: Returning Home

From the sky, the entire Jinwu City was covered with silvery white in the heavy snow. Due to the bad weather, few people were on the streets. However, there were more airships setting off and landing at the airport outside Jinwu City just like that a few months ago.

The sudden catastrophe of bloody figures across Taixia Country caused a surging increase of demand for the all-purpose medicament. The value of all-purpose medicament could only be manifested in real wars and turmoils. Even if it was raining sabers, nobody would like to give up the huge profit under the great demand, not to mention that it was just snowing.

The bloody figures across Taixia Country had already cut off the ground traffic in some regions. Bloody figures were all intelligent and smart. They always destroyed the railway system in their regions first. The moment the railway system was destroyed, Taixia Country would have a problem in dispatching corps to encircle and annihilate bloody figures. It would be more difficult for local people to escape outside. After the local regions became more chaotic, the commercial and logistics hubs of Taixia Country being connected through railways would be influenced greatly. At this moment, airships would be used as the top means of conveyance.

However, as air-sac airships and vacuum airships were driven by steam power. Facing the wuthering wind and snow, these airships would become tottering. Compared to those airships flying southward from Jinwu City, those flying from south to Jinwu City would be more struggling.

The moment Zhang Tie's group arrived at Jinwu City, they had seen a large airship having a fault in its steam equipment. The engine room of the airship was emitting black smoke. After losing its driving force, the airship was blown far away in the north wind

like a kite. The crew of the airship was exclaiming about adopting emergency measures. Some crew members were climbing onto the dozens of meters high air sacs by a rope while swaying in the wind and snow. They would empty some air sacs on their initiatives so that the airship could decline after losing its buoyancy in case of losing its control completely.

When the airship declined, its huge body even scraped over some houses on the border of the town, causing some damages. Finally, the airship landed on the farmland near the town. Most parts of its airsac had been emptied. Besides, the huge body of the airship even left a 200 m longer swarthy muddy, snowy ditch.

From the sky, the moment the airship landed, it had left an eye-catching trace on the snow-white land; meanwhile, some black points ran out of those damaged houses as if they were going to negotiate with the owner of the airship. Additionally, a team of cavalries was rushing out of the town by rhino-dragon horses towards the landing spot of the airship on the thick snowy land.

When they arrived at Jinwu City, Zhang Tie, Bai Suxian, Zhang Yang and Zhang Gui stood on the deck of the airship and watched the scene of bustle below.

Although this airship had a problem, thanks to the timely response of the crew of the airship, nobody died except for some damages on the airship and some houses.

"They should be the last batch of airships that come from south to north. These days, it's becoming increasingly windy and snowy. It's always the north wind. Therefore, most of the airships coming from the south would have an increasingly bigger trouble. Now, another batch of airships is waiting to load outside Jinwu City. After they leave, the Iron-Dragon Airboat outside Jinwu City would be blocked by the heavy snow too. Jinwu City would be in tranquility for 1 month. It would not recover its boisterous scene until next February." Zhang Yang introduced the situation facing Jinwu City.

Zhang Tie was thinking about something else although he was gazing at the airship on the farmland.

"Is Huaiyuan Palace still producing airships?"

"Yes. Airship manufacturing is also an important industry of Huaiyuan Palace. Although we have many competitors in Youzhou Province and Huaiyuan Palace of Taixia Country and we're marketing 70% of our own products; many people of Huaiyuan Palace are surviving themselves in this industry. As the holy war already broke out, this industry is very important. It's not a problem of making money or not; even though we survive those engineers and workers while suffering a loss, Huaiyuan Palace have to preserve this industry and the ability to produce airships!"

After hearing Zhang Yang's words, Zhang Tie nodded. The accident of the airship reminded him that he could design high-power alcohol driven airships first to expand the market before slowly developing high-power alcohol driven large and medium-sized transport airplanes.

'After applying the new type internal-combustion engine and high-power alcohol to the airship, the airship could have a stronger driving force; adapt to worse weather and fly farther. This would be a revolutionary reform for traditional steam airships.'

'If I want to produce large and medium-sized transport airplanes, I have to train pilots step by step; additionally, I could not reach a large scale at once. It might take us a few years to produce large-and medium-sized transport airplanes. Additionally, we need longer time and more cooperation from all parties to spread this pie. The situation facing Taixia Country might not spare me such a long time.'

'By contrast, airships exist everywhere in Taixia Country. I could have ready professionals and manufacturing capability wherever I want. As long as the new type engine was in place, it would be

relatively simpler to produce high-power alcohol driven airships with the internal-combustion engine.'

'We should produce airplanes sooner or later; however, we need to first produce battleplanes that could deal with wing demons in the sky. Airships have advantages in huge clients base and talents storage than airplanes. Before the Catastrophe, even though human sciences and technologies were so advanced and airplanes could be seen everywhere, airships were still not be completely eliminated as they were still playing their roles in military and civilian regions. It's unnecessary for me to open a new path while abandoning airships.'

'Step by step!' Zhang Tie thought.

...

The airboat slowed down at once as it declined and slowly entered the air territory of Jinwu City and finally landed on a square in the internal city of Zhang family.

The square had been crowded with people. Everybody was raising their head and watching the airboat to slowly decline.

Over 200 people were looking up and waiting for Zhang Tie to come back, including Zhang Tie's parents, elder sisters-in-law, wives, youngsters of Zhang family, Zhang Tie's grandparents, uncle, aunt, Zhang Tie's cousins, male or female, old or young.

Zhang Tie's return was a major event for the entire Zhang family. The moment Zhang Yang received the message, he had summoned all the people of Zhang family to Jinwu City. In the beginning, Zhang Yang just told them to unite in Jinwu City to celebrate the new year's festival.

Of course, it was a normal reason. In Zhang family, Zhang Yang's words indeed carried the weight. After hearing that Zhang Yang invited all the members of the Zhang family to attend a family party, how could they not agree with it? Especially Zhang Tie's

uncle and cousins, who couldn't wait to draw a relationship with Jinwu City.

Even Zhang Haitian and his eldest wife were invited over there by airboat by Zhang Yang as they had the highest seniorities.

Not until they arrived at Jinwu City did they know that Zhang Tie was coming back today. After hearing this news, all the people were shocked so much that they almost jumped up.

If it were 2 years ago when Zhang Tie was wanted across the country, some relatives might hesitate whether they should meet Zhang Tie or not; however, as the Supreme Court of Taixia Country had long canceled off Zhang Tie's order for arrest. Additionally, it was said that the Supreme Court had confirmed that Han Zhengfang was the culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City and that the entire tragedy in Fuhai City was designed by the remnants of Heavens Reaching Church to revenge Zhang Tie as Zhang Tie had inflicted a heavy loss to Heavens Reaching Church.

The chief justice of the Northeast Military Region had apologized to Zhang Tie's family in Jinwu City by airboat a few days ago.

After the truth of the tragedy of Fuhai City was exposed, Zhang Tie's case was redressed. Besides, Zhang Tie's reputation was known across the country as he enjoyed a greater honor in Huaiyuan Palace.

After hearing that Zhang Tie was coming back after his case was redressed, of course, all the family members of Zhang Tie jumped up due to the excitement.

What shocked them more was another news that Zhang Yang told them——Cui Li and Zhang Tie are the same; Zhang Tie had long promoted to an earth knight in Earth-elements Realm due to a coincidence.

The latter news scared Zhang Tie's relatives, even his uncle and cousins.

'Who's Cui Li, the heroic earth knight who had made meritorious services and even killed demon earth knights in the Earth-elements Realm; the owner of Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory; the master of Iron-Dragon Sect in Northeast Military Region? Even the clan of the provincial governor in Northeast Military Region would draw a relationship with him. It's said that he's even the would-be son-in-law of Lord Guangnan's Mansion in Taixia Country. The princess of Lord Guangnan even came to Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory for him from thousands of miles away!'

'Cui Li is Zhang Tie!'

After hearing this news, all the relatives of Zhang Tie became flurried. Even Zhang Tie's uncles didn't know how to face him.

At this moment, watching the airboat slowly declining, all the family members were expecting to see Zhang Tie so much. Zhang Tie's parents and wives' eyes had already turned red. Although Zhang Tie's uncles looked relaxed, their eyes indicated that they were a bit intense. Even Zhang Haitian tried to straighten up his body while moving his juniors' hands from his arms and watching the airboat with a strange look.

...

After the airboat landed, the hatch door was opened. Zhang Tie was already standing at the hatch door. Watching so many familiar faces, Zhang Tie directly walked towards his parents and kowtowed 3 times before looking up, "Dad, mom, Zhang Tie is back!"

Zhang Tie's parents dropped their tears at once. Wiping his tears, Zhang Tie's dad revealed a tearful smile as he pulled Zhang Tie up, "Hurry, stand up, stand up. It's fine as long as you're back; it's fine as long as you're back..."

Zhang Tie stood up as he pulled closer Bai Suxian who was standing behind him with an intense look before saying, "Call dad and mom!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Bai Suxian's eyes turned red too. Although being a princess, Bai Suxian was neither hesitant nor bashful; instead, she immediately knelt down and kowtowed towards Zhang Tie's parents lightly before saying, "Daughter-in-law Bai Suxian has come, dad and mom!"

Bai Suxian's movement scared Zhang Tie's dad and mom and the surrounding people too much. Zhang Tie's dad and mom had already known Bai Suxian's identity from Zhang Yang. How could they imagine that the princess of Lord Guangnan could make such a solemn etiquette towards them the moment she saw them?

"Ayo, hurry up, get up..." Zhang Tie's mom hurriedly pulled Bai Suxian's up without even wiping her tears.

Only by saying one sentence could Zhang Tie turn a princess of Lord Guangnan into a tame kittie. It was said that this princess was also a knight who dared fight in the Earth-elements Realm alone, Zhang relatives; especially Zhang Tie's cousins watched Zhang Tie like watching their idol...

The man was a good example for his wife!

Chapter 1189: Bo?te

After Zhang Tie came back, Zhang family in the internal city of Jinwu City became fervent at once...

Although it was raining and snowing heavily outside, Zhang Mansion in the internal city of Jinwu City was in a festive atmosphere. As the night gradually fell, the internal city of Jinwu City was covered with red lanterns. From a distance, the internal city of Jinwu City was covered with fiery trees and silver flowers, making it especially brilliant.

In a boîte being not far from the outer city of Jinwu City, the tables had almost been occupied. The guests were watching Zhang Mansion through the glass lattice windows of the boîte as they clicked the tongue in wonder.

"Waiter, why is Zhang Mansion so boisterous today?" A potbellied businessman asked as he watched the hot scene in the far when the waiter served him the steaming dishes, drinks and hot pot.

Many businessmen who were wholesaling all-purpose medicament in Jinwu City were gathering in the boîte, including those staff in big business groups, stewards in small trading companies even small pedlars. It was already late December. The new year's festival was soon coming. However, it was a bad weather in Youzhou Province lately; therefore, most of them being stagnated in Jinwu City were locusts being tied onto the same commercial chain of all-purpose medicament. They were waiting to take goods before the end of this year. These people treated Zhang family as their God of Wealth. Therefore, they paid special attention to everything about the Zhang family. When someone asked the waiter about Zhang family, all those on the surroundings tables pricked up their ears as they turned around and listened to the waiter's reply.

The waiter quickly arranged well the things on the table as he replied with a smile, "Sir, this humble man is just a waiter in the boîte, how could I know what's happening in the Mayor's Mansion?"

Jinwu City belongs to the Zhang family. Zhang Tie's dad was the mayor of Jinwu City; therefore, many residents had been used to call the internal city of Jinwu City as the Mayor's Mansion so as to outstand the ruling position of Zhang family in Jinwu City.

After the waiter left, all the others in the boîte were watching that hot scene in the internal city with dubious looks. Right then, a long-bearded middle-aged man sitting on one side of the stairs touched his beard and said, "Whether childe Yang is marrying the daughter of Zhu family in Yanzhou Province today?"

"Childe Yang is marrying the daughter of Zhu family in Yanzhou Province? Where did you get this news, bro?" A man who looked like a steward on the neighboring table put down his glass as he asked out of curiosity after hearing the words of this middle-aged man.

In places which were occupied with businessmen, they would like to communicate with each other. Although this place was not a clubhouse or a courtyard, the customers could still talk to each other. As businessmen, their profits were mainly based on intelligence and human relationship. Therefore, they were very interested in everything about the Zhang family which controlled the sales volume of all-purpose medicament.

Of course, the "childe Yang" referred to Zhang Yang, Zhan Tie's elder brother.

"Hoho, when I arrived here from Yanzhou Province last time, the news that Zhu family would unite with Huaiyuan Palace through marriage had been spread over Zhu family. I was told by a steward in Zhu family. It's said that Zhu family's daughter would marry childe Yang; meanwhile, a grandson of the provincial governor of

Yanzhou Province would also marry a daughter of Zhang family. In this way, the two families would have a pretty close relationship!"

"Hoho, thanks!" The one who looked like a steward nodded towards that middle-aged man. Closely after that, he told the waiter while pointing at that table, "Add one bottle of top-class flower-carving liquor for that bro; it's on me!"

That businessmen who revealed the news also smiled as he extended his thanks by nodding his head.

"However, it's not a good day. I don't think that childe Yang would choose today to get married!" Another tall and thin guy said while rubbing goat beard.

"Haha, bro, you're a fortune-teller?" The other businessmen on the neighboring tables laughed at the same time.

With a sound of "pah", the tall and thin businessman swayed his sleeve as he took out a palm-sized lunar calendar from his sleeve and raised it pleasantly, "Honestly, I've been doing business for dozens of years. I would always carry a lunar calendar no matter whether I leave home, return home, settle down or open a business. Therefore, I have not met any big trouble. I even have many experiences in choosing a day. Take last mid-month as an instance, in the evening, I passed by Sifang City by airship; at the beginning, I wanted to settle down in Sifang City for one night; however, after checking the lunar calendar, I found that if I settled down there, I would miss the fortunate day when I arrived at Jinwu City. Therefore, I didn't stay in Sifang City. Coincidentally, after I left Sifang City for 1 day, I had heard that Sifang City suffered from the attack of bloody figures. If I stayed there that day, I would have big trouble. Today is Hai day, it's featured by increasing yin. Marriage is forbidden on this day. If one gets married on this day, he would suffer from being disturbed. As childe Yang and Zhu family have powerhouses who are proficient in fortune-telling, they would never get married on this day..."

"Master, master..." All the other businessmen at the neighboring tables cupped their hands towards the businessman who was holding his lunar calendar. It was also great for a businessman to reach this realm.

"Now that childe Yang isn't getting married today, why are they so boisterous?"

"Are they celebrating a birthday of the mayor or the old madam?"

"If they're celebrating a birthday, I'm afraid that the road outside the boîte has long been crowded with visitors' vehicles from all directions. Look over there, the road is as same as usual. There're not too many airships or airboats either. How could they celebrate a birthday? Even if they're celebrating a birthday, it should have been boisterous from this morning!" Another businessman at a neighboring table said while shaking his head.

All the others felt that his words were reasonable as they all nodded.

"Whether childe Yang has new babies?"

"I don't think so. A few days ago, childe Yang's wives were providing free porridge together with the old madam at the east gate. They didn't look like they were pregnant!" Someone replied as he shook his head.

Neither getting married, nor celebrating a birthday, nor having new babies. Those in the boîte become more curious about the boisterous scene in the internal city of Jinwu City.

"Pfttt...", a sneer suddenly sounded. All the others turned around and found that it was a young man at his 20s at a private room. His screen had been taken away; therefore, his table was connected with the other tables. He didn't look more like a hereditary childe than a businessman. After noticing that all the others were looking at him, the young man raised his head at once as he glanced around in an arrogant expression and said, "If Zhang Yang's wives

didn't have new babies, Zhang Tie's wives might have!"

How dare this young man call Zhang Tie's name in Jinwu City? Those who were close to Zhang family in Jinwu City would call Zhang Yang the "eldest young master"; even businessmen would call him Childe Yang, not to mention Zhang Tie, as an elder of Huaiyuan Palace, whose case had been redressed and the culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City had long been exposed.

Few people across Youzhou Province dared call Zhang brothers' names in the public, not to mention inside Jinwu City.

All the businessmen in the boîte slightly frowned. The entire boîte became quiet for over 10 seconds when a customer at his 50s explained, "Childe, you might not know that, Elder Mushen of Huaiyuan Palace was framed and had to leave home a few years ago. Although the Supreme Court has already canceled off the order for arrest of Elder Mushen and dispatched people to apologize to Zhang family, Elder Mushen didn't come back home these years; of course, his wives could not give birth to new babies!"

"It depends..." That playboy looked at his glass in hand as he replied with a sneer, "It's said that Zhang Tie's wives delivered babies after Zhang Tie was wanted and left home for 10 months. What a coincidence! Elder Mushen is really something. How could he get his wives pregnant without returning home? This time, Elder Mushen might make that come true once again. And, I was told that the families of the two brothers Zhang Tie and Zhang Ping were living in the same internal city of Jinwu City. Zhang Tie and Zhang Ping respect each other so much..."

Soon after he finished his words, all the people in the boîte changed their faces. As a result, the boisterous boîte became pretty silent.

Even two guards beside this young man had changed their faces. One of them even stealthily drew the young man's sleeve. All the

businessmen at the neighboring two tables immediately sprung up before settling accounts and leaving the boîte silently as if they were escaping from the plague.

The remaining businessmen at the other tables also looked at that young man with icy eye light. At this moment, that customer at his 50s threw another glance at this young man calmly. Although he didn't look furious, he was like watching a lifeless corpse or a firewood that was going to be thrown into the bonfire. Someone else also watched the three guys in the private room with the same expression.

After feeling something was not right and the terrifying atmosphere, a guard beside that young man swallowed his saliva as he whispered, "Childe, we'd better go..."

"Nothing to be afraid of. Now that Zhang brothers could do it, why are they afraid of being talked about?"

Chapter 1190: The Reason

After the young man finished his words for less than 5 minutes, hundreds of people's tidy footsteps and armor frictions had drifted inside from outside the boîte.

Given the sound, although hundreds of people were running over here, their footsteps were consistent. Only elites could have such rapid, constant and extremely shocking footsteps.

After hearing the tidy footsteps outside the boîte, some customers who were watching the young man in the private room revealed a sneer as they were waiting for a good performance.

The two guards of the young man became intense evidently. Even the young man slightly changed his face. He had not imagined that the troop of Jinwu City could arrive so fast. Although he slightly changed his face, the young man might have a reliance as he picked up his glass and had a mouthful of liquor in a calm way. Closely after that, he said loudly. "Morality, ethics, mercy and righteousness are the four basic demands for humans. If one couldn't comply with them, one is nothing different than an animal. There's a saying on the Far-ancient Moral Stele..."

The tidy footsteps stopped outside the boîte and surrounded it at once. In less than 10 seconds, the stairs of the boîte had started to rock. Under the leadership of a waiter of the boîte, a red-face tough man in black armor, a team of armored soldiers had clattered upstairs while their footsteps interrupted the young man's words.

"Where's the rumormonger? Who dared slander Elder Mushen?" The tough man in the red face with a pair of dense machete-shaped eyebrows asked with full of killing intent as he glanced around.

"That's him!" The situation that nobody dared be the witness in the film would never appear at this moment. Over 10 fingers pointed at the 3 customers in the private room in a split second, including the waiter who led the team of Jinwu guards upstairs.

Closely after that, over 10 spears and 6 heavy crossbows targeted at the 3 people in the private room and besieged the 3 customers.

At this moment, besides that young man who was still sitting on the chair, his two guards had already stood up in a vigilant manner. The two guards both had sharp eyes. At the sight of the heavy crossbows, they had known that the safes of the crossbows had been opened. Such heavy crossbows could penetrate through common armors and helmets, unless battle demon-level powerhouses who had formed protective battle qi or heavy armor. Given their cold eye light and stable hands on the crossbows, these crossbowmen were all experienced elites, who didn't care about killing a person at all.

The red-face tough man squinted at the 3 people; especially the young man who pretended to be calm before saying in a colder voice, "Heavens Reaching Church colludes with demons and are causing troubles across Taixia Country. Besides, Heavens Reaching Church fermented the tragedy in Fuhai City in order to slander Elder Mushen. I doubt that you 3 are colluding with Heavens Reaching Church and cooking rumors in Jinwu City so as to ruin the reputation of Elder Mushen. Please coordinate with our investigation. I count 3, you'd better kneel down on the ground with your hands on your head. If anyone of you dares resist, you will die, 1..."

"Hoho, Zhang family of Jinwu City are really imposing. Do you really think that this childe could be scared so easily..." The young childe sneered.

"2..." The red-face tough man uttered like a pendulum while putting his hand onto the handle of the sword at his waist.

The young childe changed his face once again as he sprung up at once, "How dare you be that presumptuous? My grandpa is..."

"3..."

"Watch out, childe..."

Soon after the 3 words, before the red-face tough man sent the order, those crossbowmen had triggered their weapons while shooting 6 bolts towards the 3 people.

The sonic boom caused by the strong bolts and the roars of the two guards of the young man and the miserable shriek of the young childe.

The 2 guards blocked 5 bolts, while the rest one penetrated through the gap and nailed onto the thigh of the young childe, causing a punch-sized bloody hole on his thigh.

The young childe fell down while shrieking in a heart-wrenching way.

Over 10 sharp spears formed a cluster and stabbed towards the two guards like a cluster of steel spikes. The two guards were both above LV 10. However, at this moment, they dared not hurt those Jinwu guards. They both knew that they would never leave Jinwu City alive if they killed any Jinwu guard. There were knights in Jinwu City. The entire Youzhou Province belonged to Huaiyuan Palace. However, the two guards had just promoted to battle generals. When one of them blocked off the cluster of spears by one palm, the other one was blocked by the red-face tough man who was rushing towards him.

In the blink of an eye, they had collided 3 times, causing loud sounds, "bang, bang, bang". The table and chairs in the private room were shattered at once. Additionally, that guard of the young childe was sent flying backward. The other guard noticed that the spears soon targeted at the 3 of them once again and were ready for the second round of attack while the red-face tough man who had defeated his partner was evidently a battle-demon level powerhouse, he immediately made a decision. He hurriedly moved backward and came to the side of that young childe. After that, he raised his hands as he shouted, "Stop, we would like to surrender. We're not members of Heavens Reaching Church. We came from Shengzhou Province and stayed in Jinwu City for a short period.

Our childe is the grandson of the provincial governor of Shengzhou Province..."

...

The chaos in the boîte was soon appeased. In the blink of an eye, the former private room had been messed up. Additionally, 2 of the 3 people in the private room had lain on the ground while the other 1 was kneeling down.

Two fighters walked forward and stabbed a fine, long needle into the shrine surging point of each guard. After that, they put on a set of special shackles for the two guards. The two guards looked depressed at once. Closely after that, they were taken away.

"You...are dead...how dare you to treat me in this way...you're dead...my grandpa is..."

The young childe still swore on the ground with a huge hole on his thigh. The red-face tough man couldn't stand it any more as he directly slapped the young childe's mouth by his long sword together with the sheath. As a result, at least half of the young childe's teeth had been sent flying away. Closely after that, he tilted his head and passed out before being drawing away like a dead dog by two fighters.

After the 3 people were taken away, the boîte became boisterous once again. Curiously, the greater part of customers didn't leave. This also indicated the general mood in Taixia Country. Unless when they really met demons or members of Heavens Reaching Church, generally, a great number of people would like to stay to watch the fun on such an occasion.

"I've not imagined that these b*stards come from a clan of the provincial governor!"

"So what? They're just b*stards of the Gobbling Party. Pah, even a b*stard of the Gobbling Party dare not be so presumptuous in Youzhou Province, doesn't he know that the Gobbling Party don't

have a market in Youzhou Province? How dare he break wind here?"

"Yup, everybody in Jinwu City knows that Elder Mushen has an exceptional aptitude. Elder Mushen's 3 sons in Fuhai City were all delivered by three madams after being pregnant for 1 year. The 3 sons of Elder Mushen were given birth to on the same day. They were born with leakless bodies; additionally, they had awakened some great ancestral bloodlines. It's said that when they came to this world, the entire delivery room was full of special fragrance, which even shocked the entire Fuhai City. As someone of Fan Clan in Yingzhou was working as the household register director in Fuhai City. After seeing such a special phenomenon, household register director Fan posed to unite by marriage. Later on, Elder Mushen was screwed and wanted across the country; however, everybody in Huaiyuan Palace knew that it took his 3 wives 1 year to deliver his 3 sons..."

"If not being born to be special, how could Elder Mushen's 3 sons be recruited as apprentices by an elder of Heavens Fortune Sect at a such a young age?"

"Is that b*stard blind? How dare he slander Elder Mushen in Jinwu City? Does he think that our Jinwu City could be easily bullied?"

The upstairs was in an uproar at once. Seeing the 3 trouble-makers being taken away in the blink of an eye, everybody else felt pretty cool.

At this moment, another constant clatter sounded while the boss who was a bit fat ran upstairs and hailed the red-face tough man with a smile, "General Lin, I told a waiter to report to Jinwu Guards; I've not imagined that General Lin could come here so fast. It's cold outside. Please have brothers outside the boîte to have a hot drink in my boîte. I've already had people arrange well two courtyards downstairs. The drinks and dishes are ready!"

"No need. Just now, I was patrolling with my subordinates; coincidentally, we met the waiter. Therefore, we came here so fast. Jinwu City tonight is different than usual. I will not waste time here. I have to look around with my brothers in case these blind b*stards find us trouble. Damn, how dare they find trouble in Jinwu City? Are they seeking for death..."

The red-face tough man was a general of Jinwu Guards, no wonder he had such a great battle strength.

"General, why is it so boisterous in the internal city today?"

The red-face tough man burst out into laughter. He glanced around before chesting out and saying loudly, "Elder Mushen has come back today. He's in the internal city. Besides, Elder Mushen has promoted to an earth knight..."

The red-face tough man's reply shocked all the others. The boss' fat face quivered for a short while. After that, his voice became shrill as if he was yelling his lungs out, "What? Elder Mushen has come back? He's promoted to an earth knight?"

"Yup, The Fire-Dragon Hermit who had established the Iron-Dragon Sect in Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory a few days ago was an incarnation of Elder Mushen. Elder Mushen's secret methods had already entered an unpredictable realm. I will see who dare find Jinwu City trouble later on..."

After saying this, the red-face tough man directly left the boîte. After being silent for a few seconds, the boîte became boisterous in a split second. Closely after that, a great number of people rushed out of the boîte. Some of them were rushing back to their residences; some were hurriedly seeking for remote-sensing equipment. All in all, they would pass this important message back as soon as possible.

In less than half an hour, everyone across Jinwu City had known that Elder Mushen had come back and had already promoted to an earth knight. The entire Jinwu City was in an uproar. The news

that Zhang Tie had come back to Jinwu City was soon spread across Youzhou Province, the entire Northeast Military Region and Taixia Country as a whole, causing a great shock...

Chapter 1191: Home Affairs

On the next morning, Zhang Tie woke up surrounded by the white and plump butts and breasts.

Linda was sleeping on his left; Fiona was lying on his chest; Beverly pushed her head against his right hand; Aimei and Aixue leaned against his waist and thigh. Zhang Tie's whole body was pressed by his wives.

As it was Bai Suxian's first time to visit Zhang Mansion, she needed to be reserved; additionally, as a princess, she felt it was improper to strive for Zhang Tie's favor with the other women. Therefore, she didn't join the chorus last night. Linda, Beverly, Fiona, Aimei and Aixue felt like having good rain after a long drought. After the home banquet came to an end last night, Zhang Tie returned to his own courtyard. Since they started to help him take a bath, Zhang Tie had been surrounded by an endless affection. After having 7 rounds of fights in the tenderness, Linda and the other 4 women finally fell asleep satisfactorily due to fatigue.

As the room was matched with heating units, although it was heavily snowing outside, it was as warm as spring in the room. The entire room was filled with sweetness and love. Although they were crisscrossing on the huge bed in naked, they would not catch a cold.

Beverly's blond hair caused Zhang Tie's ear itchy. Zhang Tie turned around and saw Beverly's mature and beautiful face on his right side as he felt pretty tranquil inside.

After over 10 years' hardships, the little girl that he had acquainted with since in Wild Wolf Valley had become a beautiful, grande dame and the mother of two kids. Previously, Beverly was very beautiful; now, she became more enchanting. This woman was still fascinated and spoiled by Zhang Tie.

So were Linda and Fiona.

Zhang Tie lightly kissed Beverly's forehead. The moment his lips left Beverly's shiny forehead, her long eyelashes had moved. Closely after that, she opened her eyes and watched Zhang Tie silently.

"Baby, you're tired. take another nap!" Zhang Tie whispered.

"Please don't leave us alone. We want to see you on our side when we wake up. We want to know that it's not a dream!" Beverly mumbled as she pushed closer to Zhang Tie's side. Meanwhile, she put an arm around Zhang Tie tightly with eyes closed.

After hearing Beverly's request, Zhang Tie abandoned the thought of getting up. As an earth knight, Zhang Tie had reached another peak physically and spiritually. No matter how many times had he "fought" those women last night, only after taking a 2-h nap before the daybreak, Zhang Tie had already recovered once again.

Zhang Tie then closed his eyes once again as he just waited quietly to get up together with his wives.

Although lying on the bed, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy had covered the overall internal city of Jinwu City since he woke up just now.

The day had not broken yet. The guards who were on duty outside the internal city had started to make shifts; some servants and maids in the Zhang Mansion had prepared to get up and work; some servants of Zhang Mansion were checking some fresh vegetables and food ingredients and loading them onto vehicles in the back gate of the internal city before pushing the vehicles to the refrigerators of the kitchen in the backyard under the leadership of a steward.

...

In winter, the boiler in the kitchen of Zhang Mansion worked

around the clock. The boiler firemen in the kitchen were busy making the fire fiercer so as to heat up the water in the pots. Some female cooks were preparing for the first round of breakfast for the servants and maids. Some porridge and bones had been stewed since last night.

A steward was making an inspection in the kitchen as he gave directions every now and then.

"Watch out, second young master has come back, followed by the princess of Lord Guangnan of Taixia Country. As she's born in an influential major clan, she has seen the world. Our kitchen couldn't make any mistake on dietary in case of incurring jokes and losing Zhang Mansion's face; otherwise, even I can't bear it. It's jubilant across Zhang Mansion. The old man and the old madam are both happy. As the new year's festival is coming, last night, general steward Zhang whispered to me that our year-end bonus would increase at least 2 times. Be more careful!" The steward said as he made an inspection in the kitchen.

After hearing his words, the atmosphere in the kitchen heightened at once. As Zhang Mansion always treated their servants mercifully, if the year-end bonus could increase 2 more times, it definitely meant a great amount for those servants and maids.

"Steward Liu, it's said that the princess who followed second young master back directly called old man and old madam dad and mom. Is that true?" A female cook who was adjusting the temperature of the water and washing dishes asked in a low volume.

"Of course, it's real. Yesterday, I've heard it from the crowd behind the square. Our second young master is not a commoner. Even the princess of Taixia Country would behave tamely in front of our second young master. Later on, Zhang Mansion will grow increasingly more prosperous. It would be increasingly harder to enter Zhang Mansion. Therefore, you're fortunate to work in

Zhang Mansion!" The dietary steward said in a high spirit.

...

In a pinewood in the backyard garden of Zhang Mansion, some little cute squirrels were wrapping themselves using their big furry tails and sleeping leisurely in the tree holes being filled with pine nuts. Zhang Gui was slowly walking in this wood in a thin fur and checking the safety layout in Zhang Mansion seriously...

The heavy snow in the wood was already thick. When commoners stepped on it, they would cause sounds "pffft"; however, when Zhang Gui walked on the snow, he only left half-inch thick footprints.

There were two hidden posts beneath the snow, which couldn't be discovered from outside by commoners. When Zhang Gui was close to the two hidden posts, he took out a token that he received when he came to Zhang Mansion yesterday from his waist and waved it towards the two hidden posts before continuing to walk forward...

The hidden posts were matched with heavy crossbows. Not until they caught sight of the waist token did they move their sight bead of the crossbows away from Zhang Gui's body.

The pinewood was still as quiet as usual.

...

Zhang Yang also got up early. Before it broke, he had already cleansed up and put on his clothes tidily. After that, he went to his study to deal with affairs. Over these years, Zhang Yang had been used to get up early. He even got up earlier than most of the servants in Zhang Mansion. Perhaps Zhang Yang didn't have an aptitude in cultivation, he was always more diligent than anyone else.

This also explained why Jinwu Business Group constantly developed over these years.

One subordinate of Zhang Yang was reporting something to him.

"...I've figured out the background of the three rumormongers in Heavenly Fragrance Building last night. They indeed came from Shengzhou Province. That young man is called Tang Jiyao, a grandson of Tang Gaolin the provincial governor of Shengzhou Province. He's not outstanding in Tang Clan. He always has a great ambition but little talent. He didn't have any great achievements. Tang Jiyao just imitated literati across Taixia Country to travel in Youzhou Province, followed by his two guards. Tang Gaolin the provincial governor of Shengzhou Province attaches to the Gobbling Party; therefore, the Gobbling Party have a great power in Shengzhou Province. All the members of Tang Clan are the loyal fans of the Gobbling Party in Shengzhou Province. Tang Jiyao is just a timid guy. After some torture, he had admitted that what he said in Heavenly Fragrance Building were imagined by him by combining the gossips in Youzhou Province. There's nobody on his back. Besides a remote-sensing communications device, we find nothing else valuable in the hotel where the three people lived..."

"He didn't need to be told how to do this!" Zhang Yang who was sitting behind the office desk revealed a sneer, "Tang Clan is thoughtful. Soon after Meng Shidao is said to promote to the prime minister, Tang Clan has dispatched a lame duck to Jinwu City to bring trouble to Huaiyuan Palace and express their loyalty to Meng Shidao. Tang Clan has so many people. Even though this unworthy descendant is Tang Gaolin's grandson, his life is nothing pitiful. I'm afraid that even Tang Gaolin couldn't remember him among hundreds of grandsons. As long as this event is heard by Meng Shidao and has Meng Shidao bear Tang Clan in Shengzhou Province in mind, it would be a worthy business for Tang Clan!"

"Do I...need to report it to the castellan?"

"These dirty words could only make the listener upset. It's unnecessary to let my father know about it. Just put the 3 d**chebags behind the bars. Ignore that!"

"Just put them behind the bars? Do we need to set one free to report to Tang Clan so that Tang Clan could assign representatives here to take them away?"

"Yup, just put them behind the bars, all of them. No need to interrogate them. Lock them up in another place stealthily. Nothing has happened. Now that Tang Clan want to throw a stone to clear the road, I will not make them satisfied!" Zhang Yang said with a resolute look. Even though he was talking about a clan of provincial governor, he didn't look fearful at all; instead, he only looked vicious and resolute. "If an elder of Tang Clan comes here, have the subordinates pretend to know nothing about it. We will solve it in official procedures. I wonder what Tang Clan could do to Youzhou Province. If Tang Clan don't show up, just lock them up until they die. Now that Tang Jiyao is talkative, let him talk about his mercy, righteousness, morality and ethics to those vicious convicts awaiting execution in the prison. Don't let them die easily..."

'Yes, sir!' Zhang Yang's subordinate replied while lowering his body.

"Oh, check the business groups and clans who have trade ties with Tang Clan. From now on, Jinwu Business Group will stop cooperating with any business group, commercial organization and firms who are affiliated to Tang Clan. Make sure that Tang Clan could not gain any vial of all-purpose medicament. Let those business groups make choices themselves. If they want to cooperate with Tang Clan, they don't need to do business with Jinwu Business Group! Additionally, check the competitors of Tang Clan's business groups; give me a name list of them. As for these people who dare turn up their noses at us and promote themselves to higher levels by treating Zhang Clan as tools, we have to let them feel some pain."

"Yes, sir..."

When Zhang Yang was dealing with the event in his study,

Knight Liu was who employed by Zhang Yang was guarding outside the room.

...

Some maids in the main mansion had already got up and made preparations; however, Zhang Tie's dad and mom had not got up yet. In the basement of the main mansion, there was a cultivation room. A knight at his 50s was sitting on a cattail hassock with crossed legs in a dull look. This knight was assigned by Heavens Fortune Sect to protect Zhang family a few years ago.

In normal times, this knight didn't leave the cultivation room. He just cultivated quietly in the cultivation room. Zhang Clan only needed to have people send him some fresh water and fruits regularly each month. This knight didn't even come out to meet Zhang Tie yesterday.

Zhang Tie extended his spiritual energy over there and wanted to see what this knight was doing.

The moment Zhang Tie transferred his spiritual energy over there, the knight suddenly opened his eyes while shooting out shrewd eye light like how a ferocious tiger opened its eyes. Closely after that, this knight looked towards Zhang Tie's courtyard. At the same time, he made a strange hand gesture while uttering lightly, "Block..."

As his invisible spiritual energy quivered for a short while in the underground cultivation room, Zhang Tie's observation was blocked at once. Zhang Tie felt that his perceptions had been covered by a piece of black curtain. As a result, he could see nothing at all.

...

'F*ck!'

Lying on the bed, Zhang Tie opened his eyes at the same time with a faintly shocked look.

'Didn't elder brother tell me that Heavens Fortune Sect assigned a black iron knight here? But that guy below there is absolutely an earth knight.' Zhang Tie exclaimed inside.

'This earth knight is not an average earth knight; he's much more powerful than Zhang Gui. When I looked at Zhang Gui using my spiritual energy, I was not discovered; when I threw a glance at the knight of Heavenly Fortune Sect, I was discovered at once. Additionally, he could block my perceptions about the cultivation room in a secret method.'

Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile, 'An earth knight of one of the top 7 sects has been protecting my family for a few years? I owe Heavenly Fortune Sect too much. Let an earth knight be our watchdog? Damn! Only people inside the Emperor's Imperial City of Xuanyuan Hill could enjoy such a special treatment!'

Chapter 1192: Making a Promise

As the day was gradually breaking, Zhang Mansion was becoming increasingly boisterous.

Zhang Tie and the 5 wives didn't stay on the huge bed for too long; especially his wives. As Zhang Tie had just come back, if his wives got up too late, they would be ridiculed. Therefore, they got up as early as usual. After cleansing themselves together with Zhang Tie, they had a breakfast with Bai Suxian. After that, they went to Zhang Tie's parents' main mansion to wish them good health.

In the morning, wish parents good health; in the evening, help parents cleanse themselves and go to bed. This was a regulation followed by many major Hua clans. Therefore, Linda, Beverly, Fiona, Aimei and Aixue had been used to it.

"Are Shini, Shixia and the other children still sleeping at this moment?" Zhang Tie asked Linda on the way towards the main mansion when he found that his 5 children had not got up.

It was Zhang Tie's 2nd time to see his 5 children. It was also Zhang Tie's 5 children's first time to see Zhang Tie's original body yesterday. The 5 children's ages varied from 3 years old to less than 4 years old. Zhang Tie was like a stranger to them. Besides calling Zhang Tie's dad, the 5 little guys almost ignored Zhang Tie. After supper, they played for a while under the guidance of the babysitters and nursery teachers before falling asleep.

3 boys, 2 girls. The little girl delivered by Linda was called Zhang Shini; the little girl delivered by Fiona was called Zhang Shixia; Beverly, Aimei and Aixue delivered boys, whose names were respectively Zhang Chengba, Zhang Chengxiao and Zhang Chengbing. Therefore, Zhang Tie had got 8 children in Taixia Country, 6 boys and 2 girls. Besides the 5 little guys who were still in Zhang Mansion, Zhang Chenglei, Zhang Chengting and Zhang

Chengpei had already entered Heavens Fortune Sect.

"The doctor said that kids need to sleep more in winter so as to raise their vitality and grow better. They don't need to get up too early!" Linda replied genially.

"In different seasons, one's vitality indeed changes. Kids indeed don't have to get up at the same time around the year. When I was young in Lord Guangnan's Mansion, I would also get up late in winter. This is also the manifestation about the coexistence between the universe and human in details!" Bai Suxian said.

Although Bai Suxian had just come to Zhang Mansion yesterday, at Zhang Tie's request, Bai Suxian and the other 5 women had called each other sisters, regardless of age. They could also get along well with each other. At least they would not lose temper in front of Zhang Tie. As Bai Suxian was new here, by contrast, Linda and the other 4 wives had already delivered babies; of course, Bai Suxian would not strive for Zhang Tie's favor. Based on Bai Suxian's temperament, she also disdained to strive for a favor in front of all the other women. Similarly, Linda and the other 4 wives knew that Bai Suxian had a dignified identity and was Zhang Tie's helper on the battle field; of course, they treated her politely. Therefore, they all got along well with each other.

Among the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace, Elder Muray had the fewest wives; even so, he still had over 20 wives. Each knight-level elder had a lot of children and grandchildren. By contrast, Zhang Tie only had less than 10 wives, which indicated that he was "a bit meticulous" in sex among knights. Of course, all of his women felt very satisfied.

After hearing the words of Linda and Bai Suxian, Zhang Tie shook his head as he revealed a bitter smile. 'As the undertaking grows larger, there would be more regulations at home. I didn't even know these regulations when I was young. However, even these kids' daily lives have been guided by counselors.'

When Zhang Tie and his wives came to the main mansion, Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie's three elder sisters-in-law Wang Huizhen, Lu Shiyun and Wang Huayin almost arrived there at the same time. After that, Zhang Tie's parents took their sons and daughters-in-law to wish Zhang Haitian and old madam good health. As the old man had the highest seniority, of course, the juniors should wish him good health on their own initiative. After that, Zhang family saw the old man and their relatives off until they boarded the airboat. These relatives would return to Tiger Embracing City by this airboat of Jinwu Business Group.

Zhang Haitian's undertakings were all in Tiger Embracing City. After accomplishing the merger and acquisition of the clan's shipbuilding enterprise under the affiliation of Huaiyuan Palace, Jinwu Business Group, Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie had owned the most of shares of Jinwu Shipbuilding Plant. The two brothers had absolute right of speech about the shipbuilding plant. However, Zhang Yang and Zhang Tie handed the management right of the plant to their uncles and cousins. Actually, the entire clan of Zhang Haitian was headed by Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang in Jinwu City.

Not until the Jinwu Airboat flew off did Zhang Tie let out a sigh slowly as he turned around and asked Zhang Yang, "When did the old man start to use a walking stick?"

After a few years, Zhang Tie found that Zhang Haitian had grown much elder and less spirited than before. Additionally, he started to be humpbacked and use a walking stick.

"The old man started to use the walking stick 2 years ago!" Zhang Yang replied with a sigh too, "When the old man was young, he spent his full efforts in the affairs of the shipbuilding plant; therefore, he didn't spend too much time in cultivation. Only after 80 years old, his health grew much worse. It's useless even though we have the best doctors, medicines and alchemist's equipment; especially during the period when you were screwed and left home, I was told that the old man didn't smile all the year round. He even

let out deep sighs every day and would ask about your information in each a few days. Therefore, he grew much elder in only 2 years. When the old man knew that you were coming back, he became unprecedentedly happy..."

Zhang Tie became silent for a second before saying, "We'd better notice the eldest uncle. After a few days, let's send the old man to the warm south to pass the winter. As the old man has a poor health, he'd better not pass winter from then on. It's too cold in winter here, the old man could barely tide over it! Elder brother, you can pay attention to the southern isles and buy a proper one. Later on, our family can pass winter in the south."

Zhang Yang threw a glance at Zhang Tie as he nodded.

The whole family then returned to the main mansion. At this moment, the steward of the main mansion came here to report that the knight of Heavens Fortune Sect had already come out and would like to see second young master alone.

The knight of Heavens Fortune Sect had been in a secluded cultivation in Zhang Tie's family for a few years. However, on the 2nd day since Zhang Tie came back, he had come out.

This news was out of the imagination of Zhang Tie's parents and Zhang Yang, except for Zhang Tie.

However, they were not shocked too much. Because the relationship between Heavens Fortunes Sect and Zhang family was based on the friendship between Zhang Tie and Heavens Fortune Sect. If not, Heavens Fortune Sect would not assign a knight to protect Zhang Tie's family a few years ago, not to mention that they enrolled Zhang Tie's 3 kids as their disciples.

In the parlor of the main mansion, Zhang Tie saw that knight from Heavens Fortune Sect.

This knight was short and sturdy with a dull look in a cyan robe which had turned a bit white after being washed too many times

and a pair of ordinary cloth shoes. Given his look, he was about 50 years old with some gray hair like an old farmer entering the city in a set of clean clothes. How could such a person look like an earth knight on the street?

"Hermit, thanks for protecting Zhang Clan over these years!" Zhang Tie sincerely bowed deeply towards that knight from Heavens Fortune Sect.

"Elder Mushen, don't be that polite!" This knight replied with a simple and honest smile.

"Hermit, may I know your name and position in Heavens Fortune Sect?" Zhang Tie sat beside this knight from Heavens Fortune Sect as he asked.

Until now, Zhang family only knew that this knight from Heavens Fortune Sect was surnamed Zhou and was a black iron knight. Since this person entered Zhang family and met Zhang Tie's parents, he didn't make too many exchanges with Zhang family. They were both clear about the "exchange" between them this morning; therefore, it was unnecessary for them to mention about that at this moment.

"I'm Zhou Hongbang, a wild cultivator in Simpleness Embracing Palace of Heavens Fortune Sect. I like being tranquil. My secret method grants me a sensitive perception. When Elder Mushen was wronged and left home a few years ago, none of the members of Heavens Fortune Sect believed that Elder Mushen could do such a conscienceless thing in Fuhai City; therefore, our Elders Council determined to assign one person to help Zhang family in Youzhou Province tide over this difficulty. I offered my self here!" This earth knight's words were as simple and honest as his look. When one communicated with him, one would feel tranquil and comfortable.

"It's my great honor to be favored by Heavens Fortune Sect!" Zhang Tie let out a long sigh.

Zhou Hongbang turned solemn at once, "Elder Mushen, no need

to be that humble. Your 3 sons are really top talents in cultivation; additionally, they have already joined our Heavens Fortune Sect. They're destined to promote to knights and make our sect more prosperous. As the good model of righteousness among humans, how could our Heavens Fortune Sect allow our disciples' family to suffer from such a big trouble? In the competition for the position of the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, Elder Mushen gave out your gentle light, all of the elders in Heavens Fortune Sect and my master nephew Cangwu had witnessed that. My master nephew Cangwu even guaranteed that Elder Mushen could never do that in Fuhai City with his own cultivation base. When a Hua gentleman like you was screwed helplessly by the possible demons and b*stards of Heavens Reaching Church, of course, our Heavens Fortune Sect would not just ignore that. Over these years, Heavens Fortune Sect had been looking for the culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City so as to redress Elder Mushen's case. Unexpectedly, only after we found some clues, the culprit had revealed himself. We could not imagine that he was hiding in Xuanyuan Hill.

"It's easy for us to add brilliance to one's present splendor; however, it's difficult to help a lame dog over a stile. Zhang Tie has bore Heavens Fortune Sect's sincerity deep in mind. Later on, if Heavens Fortune Sect need my help, I, Zhang Tie would go through fire and water at the cost of my life!" Zhang Tie said as he clenched his fists with a solemn and resolute look...

Chapter 1193: Stealing Leisure Time from a Busy Life

When you got a drop of water; you should repay with a fountain. This was what Zhang Tie's parents taught him since he was young, not to mention this time when Heavens Fortune Sect really helped Zhang Tie's family tide over the toughest period. Therefore, Zhang Tie appreciated Heavens Fortune Sect sincerely with such a decisive promise instead of being perfunctory. It was Zhang Tie's first time to make such a sincere promise.

Although Zhang Tie's family hadn't experienced any big trouble during those years when the knight of Heavens Fortune Sect was over there; neither did this knight fight for Zhang family once. Actually, at that critical moment, only by enrolling Zhang Tie's sons as apprentices and assigning an earth knight to Zhang family could Heavens Fortune Sect frighten those evil forces who wanted to find Zhang family trouble.

It was also out of Zhang Tie's imagination that Feng Cangwu would like to guarantee that Zhang Tie was innocent with his cultivation base. Like Mountain Lifting Hermit, Feng Cangwu was also Zhang Tie's bosom brother who would like to sacrifice himself for Zhang Tie at the critical moment.

If it came to that day, Zhang Tie would really fight for Heavens Fortune Sect and such a bosom friend at the cost of his life.

Watching the sincerity and fortitude on Zhang Tie's enviably young face, Zhou Hongbang was moved. Just like a gentleman, who would never go back on his words, he realized that Zhang Tie's words were real.

"Elder Mushen, no need to be that polite!" The earth knight of Heavens Fortune Sect cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie with a solemn look as he said, "As Elder Mushen came back to Jinwu City with a powerhouse, I think I should leave Zhang family. As Taixia

Country is suffering from the catastrophe of bloody figures as a whole; especially the provinces near Heavens Fortune Sect, all the knight-level powerhouses in my sect have been assigned to those afflicted provinces by turns to exterminate the large units of bloody figures, I have reported to my sect that I would leave Zhang family yesterday. The elders of our sect have already allowed me to return to Heavens Fortune Sect and exterminate all the bloody figures that I met on the way!"

Although Zhang Tie didn't know what secret method this knight of Heavens Fortune Sect had, he estimated that this earth knight had already known the real battle strength of Zhang Gui. Therefore, he prepared to leave the Zhang family. 'Now that Heavens Fortune Sect is decisive, I don't need to keep him or behave affectedly.'

"If Hermit Zhou wants to leave, Zhang Tie will not urge you to stay. I will send a gift to Hermit so as to increase your battle strength and help you kill more demons and bloody figures and protect a region!" Zhang Tie said as he threw a glance at the trivial traces near Zhou Hongbang's hand wrists and parts between his thumbs and index fingers. Closely after that, a grim long saber that gave out red light appeared in Zhang Tie's hand in a split second. A burning image of saber-toothed tiger loomed in the light. Additionally, the moment this long saber appeared, the temperature in the parlor increased by a few degrees Celsius. The saber slightly quivered and rang itself as if a fierce tiger was going to break out of the shackle while roaring. As an earth knight, Zhang Tie could clearly sense the strong surging fire strength over this long saber.

'This is a silver secret item-level treasure saber; definitely a top-class good among silver secret items.'

As he was too close to this treasure saber, Zhou Hongbang's face turned red while being reflected by the glow of this treasure saber as if he was sitting beside a fireplace.

"No, it's too expensive!" The earth knight from Heavens Fortune Sect hurriedly declined. Honestly, very few earth knights in Heavens Fortune Sect could present such a top-class silver secret item.

"Does Hermit think that Zhang Tie and Zhang family's sincerity couldn't even match such a lifeless object?" Zhang Tie's face turned solemn at once as he continued, "We're sincere friends. It's just a piece of silver secret item. If Hermit doesn't take it, it means that Hermit and Heavens Fortune Sect look down upon Zhang Tie and feel that Zhang Tie is not even qualified to make friends with you; otherwise, Hermit doesn't think that Zhang family's safety could match a piece of silver secret item. Now that, Zhang Tie will pick my sons back from Heavens Fortune Sect tomorrow. From then on, we will not expect to claim ties with Heavens Fortune Sect."

Zhou Hongbang gazed at Zhang Tie seriously for a few seconds before nodding solemnly and silently and accepting this silver secret treasure saber.

After Zhou Hongbang accepted it, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Now that Hermit is going to return to Heavens Fortune Sect, Zhang Tie wonder whether Brother Cangwu is in the base of Heavens Fortune Sect now?"

"Master nephew Cangwu cultivated in the Earth-elements Realm a few years ago. After the catastrophe of bloody figures broke out in Taixia Country, Heavens Fortune Sect called back all the knights from Earth-elements Realm. Master nephew Cangwu might be on the way back to Heavens Fortune Sect!"

"If so, Hermit, please give this item to Brother Cangwu!" Zhang Tie said. At the same time, he moved his hand, giving out a light. This time, a silver secret longsword appeared in his hand. Being different than that treasure saber, this longsword in his hand was like a visional light and shade. Given its look, it could definitely match that treasure saber. It might even carry some special ability.

Even though Zhou Hongbang had rich experience in Heavens Fortune Sect, he still became a bit dumbfounded at this moment. It was already out of his imagination that Zhang Tie could present a silver secret item. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie could present another one without even blinking his eyes.

'They are silver secret items, silver secret items. They are not rune weapons that could be bought in the market. How could an earth knight casually present two silver secret items to others? What a rich knight!' The earth knight watched the two silver secret items as if he was dreaming.

However, Zhou Hongbang finally accepted both silver secret items. After that, he took out a finger ring and a small piece of crystal and passed them to Zhang Tie as he said, "With this remote-sensing telecommunications finger ring, you could contact Elder Qingfeng of Heavens Fortune Sect. Elder Mushen's 3 sons are instructed by Elder Qingfeng!"

The crystal contained the telecommunications code and the secret code that could be used to confirm both identities. It was a purely strong spiritual information. The moment Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into the crystal and established connections with the information in the crystal, he had captured the content of the spiritual information automatically. At the same time, the spiritual energy in the crystal disappeared and the crystal also broke into pieces. It seemed to be a secret method of Heavens Fortune Sect. The information in the crystal contained the mark of the spiritual energy wave of the one who injected his spiritual energy into it. After being reviewed once, it would disappear. If another one stealth a glance at it, he would not restore the crystal; neither could he copy the same information. Bloody Soul Sutra contained the similar means; however, this means could only be learned by a shadow knight who had formed his water chakra.

Zhang Tie accepted this remote-sensing finger ring. From then on, he had one more remote-sensing equipment.

...

A few minutes later, after talking with Zhang Tie alone and bidding a farewell to Zhang Tie's parents and Zhang Yang, this earth knight directly shot into the sky from Zhang Mansion before flying towards the south of Jinwu City in the heavy wind and snow under the gaze of the entire Zhang family.

Not until that grey point gradually disappeared in the sky did Zhang Tie's family draw back their sights.

Zhang Tie turned around and watched his parents. All of a sudden, he revealed a smile as if he was greedy, "Mom, this weather is suitable for us to have a hot pot. How about eating hotpot today?"

Zhang Tie's mom became stunned for a second. After exchanging a glance with Zhang Tie's dad, she revealed an affectionate smile like how she saw her son over 10 years ago in Blackhot City, "You want a hotpot?"

"Yes!" Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile as he rubbed his belly, "Previously, I thought that I could eat full at home; I've not imagined that I would also be hungry at home. Last night, I was not full at all. In the beginning, I had to talk with the old man, my eldest uncle and my youngest uncle; later on, so many cousins and 70-80 children of my cousins proposed toasts to me and called me uncle by turns. I couldn't ignore them; neither could I just have food. Therefore, I was not full. My belly is still rumbling now. At this moment, when I remembered the hotpot made by mom in Blackhot City in winter; plus the rice brew, I couldn't help but drool!"

Bai Suxian watched Zhang Tie with an interested look. It was her first time to see Zhang Tie's idle look at home. When she compared Zhang Tie's imposing look in the Earth-elements Realm with his current tame look, Bai Suxian felt pretty fresh.

"Right, let's eat hotpot then!" Zhang Tie's mom replied as she and

Zhang Tie's elder sisters-in-law and wives burst out into laughter at the same time, "I will make a hotpot for you at home!"

"Coincidentally, I'm at home, Jinwu City have an annual leave, I will help your mom!" Zhang Tie's dad also said with a smile.

"I will prepare the food ingredients!" Zhang Yang said as he revealed a smile too.

"I will be responsible for firing as usual..." Zhang Tie said with a smile. At the same time, he threw a glance at his eldest sister-in-law before saying, "Eldest sister-in-law is good at making chili sauce and cold dish. I've not enjoyed eldest sister-in-law's food for a long time!"

Wang Huizhen replied with a smile; meanwhile, she threw an appreciative glance at Zhang Tie. Wang Huizhen knew that as long as Zhang Tie called her eldest sister-in-law and remembered what dishes were she good at, the positions of she and her two sons in this family would be indestructible and unshakable.

Among the 3 wives of Zhang Yang, Wang Huizhen had the most average background and look. Additionally, after the new year, Zhang Yang would marry his 4th wife from Zhu Clan in Yanzhou Province. It was the clan of the provincial governor. Now that the 4th wife came from such a major clan, she must have an outstanding look and figure. Therefore, as a woman, Wang Huizhen had a deep sense of crisis at Zhang family. After having more and more wives, even if Zhang Yang wouldn't live up to Wang Huizhen, Wang Huizhen was clear how to be an influential eldest sister-in-law in Zhang family.

Lu Shiyun and Wang Huayin exchanged a glance with each other before revealing a smile at the same time, "Elder sister Huizhen's chili sauce and cold dish are yummy. We two will help elder sister Huizhen make them!"

"What about us?" Fiona asked as she pointed at her own nose in an innocent way.

"You..." Zhang Tie looked at Fiona from her head to her toe before saying, "You're good at eating, Just do that. Linda and Beverly could help mom!"

"Nuisance, I'm not a pig. You're a foodie!" Fiona blushed as she stomped to the ground.

Everybody burst out into laughter.

"Bai Suxian is good at roasting meat. You should show your talent!" Zhang Tie told Bai Suxian.

Bai Suxian revealed a sweet smile towards Zhang Tie...

This day, Zhang Mansion was filled with cheers and laughter...

...

Since he returned home, Zhang Tie didn't leave his family members anymore. He just played with his children, accompanied by his parents, walked and chatted with his wives or directly watched the snow-covered landscape by airboat in the wild. Each morning, Zhang Tie would make up various snowmen in his own courtyard with his 3 sons and 2 daughters. In the process of making odd-looking snowmen, Zhang Tie's kids grew more and more intimate with him and called him papa more and more naturally...

When Zhang Tie returned to Zhang Mansion in Jinwu City and enjoyed the long-awaited slight warmth of his family, the news that Zhang Tie had returned to Jinwu City had spread over Taixia Country and shocked everybody.

Actually, it was not shocking that Zhang Tie returned home. What was really shocking was that the news that Zhang Tie had promoted to an earth knight in only a few years. The more unbelievable news was that Zhang Tie had been rewarded with Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory and the very Cui Li who founded the Iron-Dragon Sect was Zhang Tie's incarnation.

In only a few days, the entire Jinwu City had been as boisterous

as a pot of boiling water. A lot of people arrived at Jinwu City from the other provinces in the Northeast Military Region, even further places every day. They wanted to see Zhang Tie by sending the formal visit requests or lavish gifts; however, Zhang Tie declined them all.

Zhang Mansion almost received over 100 formal visit requests every day from all parties. However, Zhang Tie ignored them all.

During the few days at home, Zhang Tie only met three batches of people: first, Donder; second, Barley's group from all the others places across Youzhou Province; third, Zhang Tie paid a visit to the parents of Beverly and Fiona in a simple way. After Jinwu City was established, the parents of Beverly and Fiona also moved to Jinwu City and lived wealthy and leisure lives. Besides Zhang family, few people knew the relationship between them and Zhang Tie.

In this way, Zhang Tie welcomed the new year's eve of the 904th year of Black Iron Calendar at home.

After the new year's festival, Huaiyuan Palace released the news to the public that they would hold the rotating chakra ceremony for Zhang Tie to celebrate that he had promoted to an earth knight on February 2nd of the lunar calendar.

February 2nd was the best day of the year for holding rotating chakra ceremony...

Chapter 1194: The Start of Chaos

Time always flew at home; especially after the new year's festival. It soon came to late lunar January unconsciously. Zhang Tie had already stayed at home for almost 1 month.

Over the past month, besides staying with his family members, Zhang Tie was also paying attention to the situation in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

It was evidently not a good idea for Sacred Light Empire to dispatch an expedition to Ice and Snow Wilderness in winter. Because the two harbors that the expeditionary fleet prepared to dock at for replenishment had been frozen in winter. Therefore, the expeditionary fleet would face a great problem in replenishment. Ice and Snow Wilderness was in the northernmost part of Waii Subcontinent. The closer it was to the vast unmanned ice land, the slower the fleet would move facing the northwest wind and the surging waves, not to mention the icebergs that might flow downwards from the north. In the evening, a battleship might be easily severely damaged or capsized by an iceberg that floated on the ocean.

The merchant ships and businessmen that traversed between Sacred Iceland Kingdom and Western Continent were keeping a close watch on the movements of Sacred Light Empire. After spending a lot of money, the intelligence network of Sacred Iceland Kingdom started to run at a high speed on the Western Continent. Intelligence about the expeditionary fleet of Sacred Light Empire would gather in Saint Peterburg almost every day.

After analyzing the intelligence from all aspects, Pontiff Sarlin speculated that the expeditionary fleet of Sacred Light Empire might leave their military base on this mid-February or early March; at most late March.

Therefore, Zhang Tie became reassured. After accomplishing his

rotating chakra ceremony, he had enough time to deal with the crisis facing Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Zhang Tie was not considering how to defeat the expeditionary fleet of Sacred Light Empire; he was considering how to make Sacred Light Empire afraid so that those d**chebags would not dare cast their greedy eyes on Sacred Iceland Kingdom anymore and would feel vexed and lack in self-confidence the moment they heard the name of Sacred Iceland Kingdom.

If not deal with this crisis well, given the overall national strength of Sacred Light Empire, even if they were defeated once, they would attack the Sacred Iceland Kingdom for the 2nd time even the 3rd time. If so, Sacred Iceland Kingdom would have endless troubles.

Gulas and Dali had returned to Ice and Snow Wilderness safe and sound before the new year. They failed to find their allies and reliances. Because major clans in Taixia Country were too picky. They would not invest in the barren land of Ice and Snow Wilderness at all, not to mention align with that small country. If not in the Treasures Meeting, Gulas and Dali might not even catch the attention of any major clan in Taixia Country at all. The two people indeed sold some vials of the source of berserk energy in the Treasures Meeting; as for many purchasers, the so-called source of berserk energy from Ice and Snow Wilderness was just a good medicament that could make people go berserk and sustain that state for a longer time. It could be used for the rest of their lives. However, it was not easy to activate the effect of this medicament either. Not each fighter could activate its effect. Low-level fighters might have a demand for a source of berserk energy; however, after promoting to knights, this medicament would become meaningless for them. In Treasures Meeting, those which were meaningless to knights could barely catch people's attention.

Gulas and Dali didn't find a powerful ally for Sacred Iceland Kingdom; however, they brought back a news about the large-scale

riot in Xuanyuan Hill and the rest of Taixia Country.

The finance minister of Taixia Country was a lackey of Three-eye Association 1 . A catastrophe of bloody figures broke out in Taixia Country as a whole. This news aroused a great shock across Sacred Iceland Kingdom, not to mention the Western Continent and other subcontinents. Even Pontiff Sarlin asked Zhang Tie about the current situation facing Taixia Country through remote-sensing crystal out of concern.

As for people from other continents and subcontinents, Taixia Country was very unrivaled. People from all the other continents and subcontinents longed for, jealous about and hated for the prosperity and power of Taixia Country. However, undoubtedly, Taixia Country and Hua people were the pillars and the hope of all humans in the war between humans and demons. Any turmoil in Taixia Country would cause a mighty uproar in other continents and subcontinents.

Since the riot broke out in Xuanyuan Hill on November 15th last year, those who firstly sensed fear were not Hua people in Taixia Country, but top-class figures in continents and subcontinents outside Taixia Country. These people was clear that they would never survive this holy war if Taixia Country collapsed due to civil strife. This holy was like a terrifying storm. Taixia Country was the largest human battleship in this tempest. If the largest human battleship would capsize and sink, those sampans would definitely be shattered by the huge waves. If Taixia failed to resist demons, all humans would enter the darkest days.

"How's Taixia Country doing now?"

Zhang Tie really didn't know how to answer Elder Sarlin.

Zhang Tie's personal situation was very good. He had promoted to an earth knight and had been found innocent. Additionally, he became famous across Taixia Country. Zhang family's power also expanded constantly. Besides all-purpose medicament, Fire-

Dragon Bounty Territory would soon produce revolutionary high-power alcohol; additionally, Zhang Tie had returned home. He stayed with his family members and enjoyed playing with his sons and daughters every day. As a result, his foundation in Taixia Country was growing increasingly consolidated; he had more and more friends in Taixia Country. He had even established relationships with Lord Guangnan's Mansion and Heavens Fortune Sect. However, the culprit who screwed him had been killed by Zhang Tie himself; he even made a fortune. The Gobbling Party were having an intense conflict with the Heavens Reaching Church. It could be said that Zhang Tie's situation was unprecedentedly good. He had not lived such a leisure and comfortable life before. Actually, Zhang Tie had officially reached a wholly new peak in his life.

Zhang Tie welcomed his new peak moments in his life; however, the coldness of the 3rd holy war raided the entire Taixia Country in only a few months.

When it came to winter, the bloody figures across Taixia Country; especially those in northern regions temporarily slowed down their attacking frequencies. The bloody figures became more disperse, causing increasing greater destructions in wider areas.

In December, the catastrophe of bloody figures had just covered over 60 provinces; however, in the next January, bloody figures had been discovered across Taixia Country, except for some wild provinces and Xuanyuan Hill. The catastrophe of bloody figures was spreading over the entire country. Before January 1st, the 904th year of Black Iron Calendar, the catastrophe of bloody figures which had broken out for less than 2 months had caused a casualty of over 0.37 billion people. This figure was increasing every day. There were totally over 10 million bloody figures across Taixia Country. After being encircled and annihilated for over 1 month, this figure was constantly reducing; however, the rest alive bloody figures were still killing people and causing panic across the

country in each second.

Even Youzhou province was involved in such a turmoil.

On January 3rd, when Zhang Tie was immersing in the festive atmosphere of the new year, some teams of bloody figures had poured into Yangui Mountain Range from Tongzhou Province. They might have already sneaked into Youzhou Province.

After entering Yangui Mountain Range and carrying out a bloodbath in two small mountain villages, these bloody figures had completely disappeared. When a hunter living in the mountain discovered the abnormal phenomenon in the two small mountain villages, he hurriedly came to report it to the officials.

Some teams of bloody figures with unidentified population might have penetrated through Yangui Mountain Range and entered Youzhou Province. Therefore, Youzhou Province became vigilant as a whole; especially the garrisons in some cities near Yangui Mountain Range which had been mobilized. The moment Fire-Dragon Bounty Territory received the news, they had cordoned off the entire region.

Not until Zhang Tie received the news from Huaiyuan Palace did he know it at home.

Of course, during the same period, Zhang Tie received a "good news" about bloody figures—The battle fortress prison that Zhang Tie had people build near the mountain gate of Iron-Dragon Sect to lock up bloody figures had been officially assembled.

Zhang Tie named this prison for bloody figures as Demon Suppression Battlefortress. The entire fortress could contain 200,000 bloody figures. It was a large-scale battlefortress construction business group which was responsible for undertaking similar business in Yanzhou Province of Taixia Country. After Zhang Yang expressed his demand and paid off 70% of the engineering fund, this business group completed the construction of Demon Suppression Battlefortress in the shortest

period.

Zhang Tie had not visited the Demon Suppression Battlefortress yet. However, it was said that it was even a bit larger than the former crystal battlefortress. After Demon Suppression Battlefortress was completed, the first batch of 1287 bloody figures that Zhang Tie and Jinwu Business Group had purchased had been locked into the Demon Suppression Battlefortress. Jinwu Guards were responsible for guarding them.

When the catastrophe of bloody figures spread over Taixia Country, the loyal backbones of Heavens Reaching Church who had "produced" these bloody figures disappeared in the latest 2 months. Besides some trivial figures, very few famous knight-level powerhouses of Heavens Reaching Church being wanted by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country could be discovered. Those d**chebags just disappeared out of the void, causing people to be restless.

Chapter 1195: The End of the Leisure Days

Many missing loyal backbones of Heavens Reaching Church and powerhouses were closely related to Bloody Soul Temple. Take Wen Clan in Pingsha Valley of Zhongzhou Province which had been exterminated as an instance, now that these backbone clans and followers couldn't be discovered while building bloody seas across Taixia Country, they were not common clans and powers. Such clans would at least have one black iron knight. Actually, according to the official report, these loyal followers of Heavens Reaching Church who were exposed due to the catastrophe of bloody figures and bloody sea contained 264 black iron knights, 19 earth knights and 1 shadow knight.

The shadow knight came from Gao Clan of Time-honored Taste Palace in Liang Zhou Province, one of the top 9 immortal provinces in Taixia Country. Han Zhengfang's wife came from Gao Clan. If not the accident in Xuanyuan Hill, who could imagine that well-known Gao Clan of Time-honored Taste Palace in Liangzhou Province belonged to Heavens Reaching Church.

That wanted shadow knight was Gao Tianzhao, the former clan head of Gao Clan, also the great-great-grandfather of the current clan head of Gao Clan, the forebear of Gao Clan.

Besides Gao Tianzhao, 4 earth knights and over 30 black iron knights of Gao Clan entered the wanted list of the Supreme Court too.

All the knights of Gao Clan had escaped. Those who couldn't escape just scattered in all directions. They would be arrested and killed by the fighters of Supreme Court. Overnight, the remarkable Gao Clan of Time-honored Taste Palace had collapsed, shocking too many people.

It was an earth-shaking event for the Supreme Court to confiscate Gao Clan. It happened when Zhang Tie was still in the

underground magma sea beneath the volcano. Zhang Tie gradually understood the details after returning to Youzhou Province.

Gao Clan was the first supermajor of Taixia Country being confiscated as it was involved in the plot of demons, Time-honored Taste Palace was only inferior to the imperial household of Taixia Country. Therefore, this event had a great influence. All the major clans in Taixia Country had been shocked. It was said that the Supreme Court even found a time-honored altar of Bloody Soul Temple from Gao Clan. Therefore, Gao Clan's secret identity was exposed. Gao Can was confirmed as the clan being affiliated to Bloody Soul Temple in Taixia Country. However, besides Gao Clan, it was hard to say whether there were any more secret clans being affiliated to Bloody Soul Temple in Taixia Country.

Nobody could imagine that Bloody Soul Temple could bury so many timebombs in Taixia Country after the top 7 sects in Taixia Country joined hands to exterminate the Bloody Soul Temple.

In order to hunt for the knights of Heavens Reaching Church, the judicial minister, one of the top 9 ministers of Taixia Country who had been in Xuanyuan Hill for many years had already left Xuanyuan Hill. He guided and implemented the encirclement and annihilation of these subversives. All the supreme powerhouses in the provincial and prefectural courts across Taixia Country had left to catch them.

Thankfully, the catastrophe of bloody figures broke out very hastily on last November 15th, sparing less time for Heavens Reaching Church to make preparations. If they made well preparations for that, over 10 million bloody figures under the leadership of so many knights would cause dozens even hundreds of times more damages like what once happened in Waii Subcontinent. As long as demon knights could resist the attacks of human knights, the super demon corps on the ground would be unrivaled. By contrast, after losing the guidance of knights, this super corps of bloody figures would be casually separated into

smaller troops by human knights across Taixia Country like how a cook dissected an ox. If these bloody figures troops moved slowly or couldn't break through timely, they would be encircled and annihilated by outnumbered human corps which poured in from all directions.

After causing a great chaos across Taixia Country, those knights of Heavens Reaching Church seemed to have disappeared all of a sudden. At least Zhang Tie had not heard about any major move of these b*stards in the last 2 months.

Even Zhang Gui couldn't figure out where these people hid in and what they were going to do. Previously, Zhang Gui was following Han Zhengfang and Han Yuanhong. He was not on the same line with those loyal backbones of Heavens Reaching Church who were directly guided and dispatched by Han Zhengfang and prepared for arising riots across Taixia Country. The two systems might have contacts; Zhang Gui also recognized some loyal followers of Heavens Reaching Church; however, he couldn't get hang of the concrete schedules of these people after they arouse the riot.

According to Zhang Gui, Han Zhengfang's subordinates belonged to two systems. Although the two systems looked like a unity, they were different than each other. Zhang Gui sought refuge with Han Zhengfang after promoting to a knight. However, Han Zhengfang kept vigilance about him. As a result, Zhang Gui couldn't participate in some plans. Zhang Gui actually always followed Han Zhengfang's youngest son Han Yuantu. By contrast, someone in Heavens Reaching Church was more reliable to Han Zhengfang. For instance Gao Clan of Time-honored Taste Palace, which was qualified to be the direct subordinates of Han Zhengfang. Han Zhengfang's direct subordinates were under the control of his eldest son Han Yuanhong.

When Zhang Gui sought refuge with Han Zhengfang, he didn't know that Han Zhengfang's subordinates were divided into two systems. He gradually realized that later on. Zhang Gui guessed

that those people and clans whom Han Zhengfang trusted most in Heavens Reaching Church might be those from the secret clans being affiliated to Bloody Soul Temple like Han Zhengfang himself. Those clans and knights that surrendered to Han Zhengfang were always a bit estranged to Han Zhengfang compared to these knights who came from the secret clans of Bloody Soul Temple.

The source of Heavens Reaching Church was involved with the Bloody Soul Temple which was once exterminated by the top 7 sects in Taixia Country. Additionally, Heavens Reaching Church colluded with demons. Therefore, the relationship between Bloody Soul Temple, Heavens Reaching Church and demons was complicated.

Since the beginning of the 904th year of Black Iron Calendar, the entire Taixia Country had been in chaos. Few people could celebrate the spring festival at home in a reassuring way; especially those knight-level powerhouses.

As Taixia Country was becoming increasingly chaotic, as a member of Hua people in Taixia Country, Zhang Tie couldn't spare any effort in exterminating bloody figures and demons.

On January 17th, after Zhang Tie stayed at home leisurely and comfortably for less than 1 month, he had received the notice of Huaiyuan Palace. He was requested to discuss something in the Ancestral Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace in Tiger Embracing City. All the elders and Zhang Taixuan would attend this meeting.

Given its scale, they were definitely talking about something trivial. As an elder of Huaiyuan Palace, of course, Zhang Tie couldn't be absent out of no reason. From another perspective, he could manifest his authority as an elder and position in his family by attending this meeting in the Ancestral Shrine Palace. Of course, Zhang Tie had to go there.

On the afternoon of January 18th, after having lunch and hushing his 3 sons and 2 daughters to have a nap, Zhang Tie bade a

farewell to his family members. Closely after that, he shot into the sky before flying towards Embracing Tiger City...

Chapter 1196: Coming to Embracing Tiger City in Disguise

Jinwu City was neighboring Yanghe Prefecture, Youzhou Province, which was less than 600 miles from Embracing Tiger City. The distance between Jinwu City and Embracing Tiger City might be a bit long for commoners, which would cost a lot of time by train or airship; however, as for an earth knight like Zhang Tie, the distance of 600 miles was like leaving home for the marketplace. Even though Zhang Tie didn't use the ability of divine dominator, he could also arrive at Embracing Tiger City in 1 hour.

After the 5th day of the lunar January, it didn't snow in Youzhou Province anymore. However, it was as cold as usual; especially these days. After the accumulated snow started to melt, it became much colder in the air.

Flying in the sky, Zhang Tie found that the landscape below was covered with white snow. Zhang Tie entered the air territory above Tiger Embracing City before 2 pm. He then landed on a lane of a residential area which was unpopulated nearby the harbor of Embracing Tiger City.

After landing on the lane, Zhang Tie put on his snow-proof hood and buckled it up. As a result, the greater part of his face had been covered at once, only exposing his eyebrows and eyes. The others couldn't identify the face under the hood at all; they could only identify that this man was not old.

Given Zhang Tie's popularity in Youzhou Province; especially Embracing Tiger City, he couldn't be identified by people on the street only in this way.

Zhang Tie just stayed with his family members at home these days. Although he also gained some messages from outside, as these messages were indirect, they were not accurate enough.

Coincidentally, as he came to Tiger Embracing City to attend the meeting, he wanted to check the atmosphere in Embracing Tiger City too. As a knight in Taixia Country, now that he didn't plan to hide in Castle of Black Iron completely, he had to care about something more or less. As Zhang Tie was also once an average person, he knew that something couldn't be more genuine and concrete unless among the people.

There was thin accumulated snow on the ground of the lane. Zhang Tie walked out of the lane toward the outside street.

By contrast, the street outside the lane was pretty boisterous.

The moment Zhang Tie arrived at the mouth of the lane, a gate near the mouth of the lane had opened, causing a squeak. Some people walked out of there. 2 people were seeing off another 2 people.

"Second younger brother, I will hand Deming to you. When he comes to your boîte, teach him whatever you want. Beat him if he's not obedient. Don't spoil him. Let him do all the dirty and tired jobs in the boîte!"

The 2 people who were leaving were a middle-aged couple in ordinary dress. Given their looks, they must come from rural areas outside the city. Although they wore clean clothes, Zhang Tie could easily know their identities the moment he saw them. The man who was talking looked simple and honest.

"Eldest brother, don't worry. I will treat De Ming as my own son. As long my family has food, we will never make him hungry!" The couple who saw them off looked a bit younger. Given the looks of the current speaker and the earlier one, they must be brothers. "I will slowly teach Deming about the affairs in the boîte. Deming could also be a boss in the future!"

"With your words, I'm reassured!"

"We're of the same family. At this moment, you and eldest sister-

in-law don't need to be so kind to us. Deming, come over here. Bid a farewell to your dad and mom. Later on, you could only meet your parents once a few months in the Embracing Tiger City..."

A teenager with bloody eyes moved forward and knelt down on the snow before the younger couple, "Dad, mom, don't worry about me. After I grasp talents from the second uncle and make enough money, I will buy a house in the downtown and bring you there..."

When Zhang Tie came over there, the 5 people turned around to glance at him at the same time. Zhang Tie just passed by leisurely. He didn't let them feel that he was watching them just like a passer-by. He then came to the bustling street.

Although it was cold, after the new year festival, the street had become boisterous. After the 3rd day of lunar January, the roadside stores had opened constantly. A minority of stores would open on the 6th day or the 8th day of the lunar January for a good fortune. Only a few stores had not opened after the Lantern Festival. The bosses of these stores must be in the other provinces and had not come back yet.

There were some traces of celebrating the Lantern Festival 3 days ago on the street. The front stores were all hanging delicate lanterns. Some lanterns were even hanging over twigs on the roadside.

Zhang Tie walked on the streets leisurely. Many people on the street were in the same snow-proof hood like him. Embracing Tiger City was close to the ocean. Therefore, the sea wind was stronger in winter. These days, those who sought living outside had to cover their faces and daub fish oil over their faces in case of being wounded by the piercingly cold wind. Many people in Tiger Embracing City were in similar dress. Besides being exquisite and delicate, Zhang Tie's dress was nothing special. Therefore, nobody paid special attention to him on the street. The back of hands and faces of some people on the street were oily too. They might be

seeking a living on the wharf or the ship.

"Eldest brother, I will call a car to carry you back!"

"No need, we've come to Embracing Tiger City for a few times. We're familiar with the road. When your eldest sister-in-law and I arrived at Embracing Tiger City, we've made an appointment with Li Dazhuang who's responsible for delivering grains. We will wait for him at the west gate of Tiger Embracing City and go back by his vehicle. Hurry, go back, it's cold outside..."

The street outside the lane was east-west. After coming to the street, Zhang Tie immediately turned to the west leisurely.

Even though he had turned to the street, the talk in the lane still drifted in his ears. Needless to say, Zhang Tie knew that the rural couple must have politely declined the good intention of the urban couple. Even though, the urban couple still saw him off to the mouth of the lane. After talking with each other for a short while, they had departed. The rural couple just walked 30 m away behind Zhang Tie while the urban couple had returned home and closed the door with the son of the rural couple.

After leaving the mouth of the lane for a short while, when they were a bit farther away from the mouth of the lane, the woman who was always silent suddenly uttered, "Younger sister-in-law didn't speak just now; I'm a bit worried about it..."

The man became silent for a second before nodding affirmatively, "Don't worry, my second younger brother is strong-minded. His words work at home. When my second younger brother came to Embracing Tiger City for developing his undertaking, his boîte was even bought by our brothers. Our family even sold about 7,000 square meters' land. I even sold some cattle for him. Over these years, you've already seen that, my second younger brother is not that ungrateful. He usually helped our family; not to mention that he watched Deming growing up. Whatever, he's Deming's uncle. He will not mistreat Deming!"

"Although it sounds reasonable, I'm still worried about that. After all, Deming will stay in Embracing Tiger City for not only a few months. If it's too long, I'm afraid that the second sister-in-law would feel unhappy..."

"Alas, we have to do that!" The simple and honest man let out a sigh before continuing, "In our village, those able ones would hurriedly send their children into the downtown. It's said that Landlord Liu has sent his children into a school in Youzhou City. Old Cao has sent his son to Goldenlight City as an apprentice; even Li Laizi's two children have been sent into the sawmill in Embracing Tiger City which was opened by his uncle. The downtown would always be safer than the rural areas more or less. A few years ago, it was safe and stable in rural areas; however, it's becoming dangerous in rural areas now. It's said that hundreds of villages outside cities had been cleaned by bloody figures overnight. Many people even became the food of those bloody figures. The 3-5 m high guardrails and walls outside the villages could only prevent ordinary wild beasts and burglars. Bloody figures could easily jump over them. Ordinary villages couldn't resist bloody figures at all. A few days ago, bloody figures had already arrived at Youzhou Province. It's said that many people were killed. We have to find a way for Deming..."

"I'm only worried about Deming..."

"The country is becoming increasingly chaotic. It's nothing for Deming to suffer some hardships as long as he's safe. Ah, where's that set of jade jewelry? Bring them when we come to Embracing Tiger City next time. You give them to 2nd sister-in-law stealthily. Don't let my 2nd younger brother know that. It's women's business."

"Ahh? I keep them for Dehua's wife in the future. No matter how poor we're, if we want to marry a son-in-law, we have to prepare some nice-looking jewelry!"

"Dehua is in the army. He doesn't need them for the time being."

We'd better deal with Deming's affair first! It's better than nothing as long as the two brothers could survive! When spring comes, I will try my luck in the mountain and find some wild ginseng..."

"As you wish..." The woman nodded after being silent for a second...

Zhang Tie knew that it was very dangerous to find ginseng in the mountains of Youzhou Province; especially for fighters below LV 9. As wild ginseng grew in mountains, which were covered with mutated beasts, commoners had to risk a great danger to enter mountains. Many people couldn't come back alive.

'How poor parents!'

Zhang Tie let out a long sigh as he had not imagined that even Embracing Tiger City which was far away from the catastrophe of bloody figures could suffer from such a great shock. Even the villagers outside the city wanted to send their family members to the downtown and seek for a safe asylum.

After looking at the flow rate of people on the street seriously, Zhang Tie found that there were indeed more people than when he came here last two times.

Even Youzhou Province had been in such an urgent situation, not to mention the other provinces. Although there were many cities in Taixia Country, over 70-80% of people lived outside of cities. The moment the catastrophe of bloody figures broke out, the entire country was in a panic while villagers hurriedly poured into downtowns. Some downtowns might have been in chaos.

When Zhang Tie slightly frowned and thought about it, he heard a roar from the inn in front of him, "You lunatic, how dare you pretend to be a pharmacist? How could a pharmacist be so poor in Taixia Country? If you don't have money, roll out of my inn..."

Closely after the roar, one person had been thrown out of the door together with his quilt and blanket.

Chapter 1197: The Lunatic

The accumulated snow on the street had long thawed due to so many passers-by, causing soft and icy mud. The person being thrown out of the inn together with his broken roll of quilt and blanket directly fell into the mud. How embarrassing it was! The passers-by on the roadside streets hurriedly dodged away from him. Zhang Tie and some passers-by then started to watch the fun on one side.

Some strong lads and a cook of the inn were standing outside the gate while glaring at the person who had been thrown out. A glib lad cupped his hands and explained loudly, "Dear neighbors and friends. Our Yuean Inn is not bullying him. This guy had lived in our inn for over 1 week for free. Previously, our boss was soft-hearted and let him live in for a few days as it's cold outside. We've not imagined that this guy planned to stay in our inn all the way. He bullied us. It doesn't work wherever it is. As we cannot stand it anymore, we have to drive him out of Yuean Inn. Please be the witnesses for us, we don't mind whether he's dead or not!"

After being thrown out, the one quivered all over out of fury. He stood up from the mud and pointed at those young men in the inn before saying furiously, "You...you...are going too far...I've paid this month's rent and food...how could you drive me out before the end..."

"When you came here, our boss had told you that our rent would change with the marketing price. It changes every day. When in slack season, it would be cheaper; when in boom season, it would be more expensive. You paid the rent in November; however, the rent across Embracing Tiger City had been growing since the beginning of December. All the other inns' rents were rising. Of course, our Yuean Inn's rent and food fee would rise too. We're following the general trend. Your rent and food fee has been used up soon after the new year festival. As our boss pitied you, he

allowed you to stay inside for a few more days. Even if you notify the official, we will not be afraid of you. How ridiculous! How could you be a pharmacist? If all the pharmacists across the world were like you, pharmacists couldn't even match coolies..."

"Hahaha...I'm not a pharmacist...if I'm not a pharmacist, how could I be so embarrassed..." The embarrassed middle-aged man burst out into laughter miserably with bloody eyes as if he had lost his marbles. He tore open his wet and dirty clothes and exposed his naked chest to the chilly wind before roaring towards the sky, "Come on, kill me; come on, kill me. I know you will not let me go; come on, kill me. All the people across the world are swarming around as flies do for good and hang around as dogs do for food. I've been so poor for the well-being of all the people across the world. It's meaningless. If you want to torment all the people across the world, just do it. If you want to kill me, just do that. Aren't your heavens reaching? Aren't you preparing for turning all the medicinal materials into poisons? Come on, kill me..."

Being stimulated and humiliated by the lads of the inn, this middle-aged man was driven mad, which scared those lads a few steps back. They strictly guarded the gate of the inn so as to prevent him from breaking into the inn and causing some troubles. All the onlookers hurriedly scattered to a certain degree, including Zhang Tie.

"Alas, this man turned a bit abnormal. How about fetching the criminal hunters to catch him? It would be troublesome if he hurt someone..." Someone among the onlookers whispered.

"How about sending him to the Benign Doctor's Clinic? It's too cold, he's driven mad. How poor he is!"

After hearing the words of the onlookers, that man laughed loudly. He even dropped off his tears, "Yes, I'm a lunatic, I'm a lunatic..."

"Even heroes might be breathless. Everybody would have a low

ebb in life. Nothing to watch here. Please leave. This friend, please not be that excited!" A calm and crispy sound drifted out of the onlookers. When the all the people turned around, they saw a strong young man in snow-proof cloak behind the crowd. Given his voice, this man should be younger than 20 years old; however, those eagle-eyed people could find that his cloak and boots were all well-made and rare in the market. Additionally, this young man had an unspoken temperament. Even though he didn't expose his face, he was still awe-stricken.

"Ha, just leave out of here, just leave..."

The young man's voice sounded supernatural. After hearing his words, all the onlookers really left. Even that middle-aged man who was a bit excited just now became quiet. He didn't shout loudly or did anything excessive anymore.

Of course, it was Zhang Tie who spoke. Additionally, he used a secret skill of Soul Forbidden Method. His words sounded very comfortable. Therefore, all the onlookers just followed his order unconsciously. When the crowd dispersed, Zhang Tie walked towards the gate of the inn as he asked those lads who were standing outside the gate of the inn, "How much has this guy owed you?"

That eloquent lad whispered while shrugging with a bit fearful look, "This man...has lived a few more days in our inn. He owes us over 20 silver coins. You know, we're not a welfare institution..."

"Well, I understand you. It's not your fault. Take it..." Zhang Tie flipped a gold coin onto the hand of the lad after drawing an elegant golden arc in the air. "I've paid off his debt. Keep the change. Tell your boss. It's good to help people tide over difficulties; however, it would be much better if he could do well from beginning to end..."

"Yes...yes...yes, thanks, thanks..." After taking that gold coin, those lads revealed a smile at the same time. They treated Zhang

Tie more politely. Such a generous and righteous guest was always welcomed wherever he was.

"Are there any other belongings of him in your inn?"

"No, no more!" Those lads hurriedly shook their heads, "He only came with such a broken blanket and a quilt. Nothing else!"

Zhang Tie turned around and looked at that middle-aged man who was especially berserk just now. That man had already recovered his composure while wrapping himself in clothes. His face had turned a bit blue in the cold wind. Zhang Tie told him, "Follow me!"

The middle-aged man hesitated for a second. After following Zhang Tie for a couple of steps, he threw a glance at the broken blanket and quilt in the mud as he wanted to pick them up.

"No need to pick them up. They are dirty and wet. Just throw them!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, that middle-aged man stopped picking them up and just followed after Zhang Tie while shrinking his body.

Zhang Tie walked a short while ahead of the middle-aged man silently. The middle-aged man didn't speak either. Over 10 minutes later, they stopped in front of "Jinyun Hotel" on a more prosperous avenue.

This "Jinyun Hotel" was much more luxurious than that inn. Although it was cold, the garden outside the hotel was still verdant. There was a huge dome which was made of glass fiber reinforced plastics on the top of the garden. There were heating units on the ground. The shiny marbles were resplendent and spotless. Two rows of tall and thin beautiful girls were standing at the gate to welcome guests.

Zhang Tie directly entered the gate. Being scared by such a grand place, the middle-aged man dared not enter it. Therefore, he

became hesitated.

"Come in? You didn't even care about your life just now, why not dare enter a hotel?" Zhang Tie turned around as he threw a glance at that middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man gritted his teeth. Closely after that, he followed Zhang Tie in as if he was ready to risk everything.

"Gentleman, you want..." A female usher walked over here as he threw a glance at Zhang Tie and that middle-aged man who followed after Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie looked noble all over; however, that middle-aged man behind him looked sloppy. They were absolutely from two different worlds.

"Prepare a special courtyard for me..." Zhang Tie said as he passed a good check to the girl, the par value of which was 1,000 gold coins. At the sight of such a "large denomination", the girl swallowed all the words back. With such a gold check, the two people could live in the most expensive courtyard for 1 year.

Under the amazed gazes of the other gentlemen and young ladies who were accessing to the hotel, that female usher directly led Zhang Tie and that middle-aged man into a tranquil courtyard which was matched with a warm spring.

"Bring him some fitted clothes, shoes and socks for him given his size. I don't care about money!" Zhang Tie told the female usher. Such a high-end hotel was always matched with a high-end shopping mall. It's easy for people to buy clothes here.

After the female usher left, Zhang Tie told that middle-aged man, "You'd better take a bath and change a set of new clothes before talking with me..."

After doing all these, Zhang Tie just took a seat and drank tea water in the parlor while waiting for the middle-aged man to come out to talk with him after taking a bath.

Chapter 1198: The Inquiry

Zhang Tie just sat and drank tea water in the parlor of the courtyard. He had already taken off his hood, revealing an excessively young face.

He just helped that middle-aged man by himself. What counted most was the sentence that middle-aged man roared when being driven mad——All the people across the world are swarming around as flies do for good and hang around as dogs do for food. I've been so poor for the well-being of all the people across the world. It's meaningless. If you want to torment all the people across the world, just do it. If you want to kill me, just do that. Aren't you heavens reaching? Aren't you preparing for turning all the medicinal materials into poisons? Come on, kill me...

As the middle-aged man shouted it when losing his marbles, very few people would believe in his words. However, as Zhang Tie was proficient in Soul Forbidden Method, he could clearly sense that that man was in his right mind although being despaired and mad. He was not talking rubbish. He just aired his grievance in a self-abandoned way.

——Turning all the medicinal materials into poisons!

This sentence caught Zhang Tie's attention.

At Zhang Tie's request, over 10 waiters entered the bathroom of the courtyard with a lot of clothes, shoes and socks in hands for the selection of that middle-aged man. They made two rounds. Some waiter even pushed a dining cart into the bathroom. Zhang Tie just waited there patiently. When he drank tea water, he took out a vial of water-element crystal which gave out shiny blue light and started to absorb it.

Even grasshopper legs were meat. Although Zhang Tie had prepared to not take absorbing element crystals as the major method for forming his chakra; now that he was free, given that it

was inconvenient for him to cultivate "The Great Wilderness Sutra" and the other secret methods, he just casually took out one vial of water-element crystal and started to absorb it just like cracking melon seeds. By the way, he could increase his battle strength to a certain degree, why not? No matter what, Zhang Tie had a lot of water-element crystals.

After entering Castle of Black Iron and absorbing the fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie could carry out 26 tasks at the same time. In this state, Zhang Tie's absorbing speed was much faster. Even though Zhang Tie didn't make his utmost effort, he had completely absorbed one water-element crystal in less than 1 hour.

After absorbing the 1st water-element crystal, Zhang Tie took out the 2nd one. When he absorbed half of the 2nd one, the middle-aged man entered the parlor of the courtyard.

The moment that man entered the parlor and saw that water-element crystal being consumed in a visible way, the thought that he was ready to risk everything immediately disappeared. Meanwhile, he became restrained all over.

"Thanks...thanks hermit for saving me!" After entering the parlor, that middle-aged man bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie while putting his two hands on both sides of his legs. Lowering his eyes, he just waited for Zhang Tie's order.

Zhang Tie threw a glance at that man. After taking a bath, having a full meal and putting on a new set of brilliant clothes, that man didn't look that sloppy anymore.

Given his look, this man was at his 40s. He had an average figure with a gentle, narrow and long face. At his age, he had only lit 4 surging points on his spine. Therefore, he was very average in cultivation. Additionally, he might have suffered some wounds in his guts, which had not been recovered yet. However, he should have seen the world. At least, he had seen water-element crystals and knew that Zhang Tie was holding a water-element crystal.

Those who could absorb water-element crystals were at least earth knights.

Zhang Tie didn't feel strange about the words of this person. If the man had not even seen a water-element crystal, even Zhang Tie would doubt that he had made a wrong judgment.

"Take a seat, I have something to ask you!" Zhang Tie put it straight as he pointed at the chair beside his teapoy. When Zhang Tie talked with him, his battle qi had surrounded the entire parlor. Therefore, nobody else could hear the contents of their talk.

"Yes, sir!" That man also sat straight on a chair beside Zhang Tie. At the sight of his deed, Zhang Tie nodded inside too. If this person dared be presumptuous in front of an earth knight, he must be really mad. If so, Zhang Tie would not say anything else to him. Given this man's response, although he looked restrained, he was at least polite. It was similar to that when a commoner met a strange earth knight.

"What's your name? How long have you been to Youzhou Province?"

"This humble man is Sun Jiagu. Since I came to Embracing Tiger City from Qiongzhou Province by sea last October, I have been living in that inn!" That man answered honestly.

"You said you're a pharmacist?"

"I've just promoted to gourd-suspending pharmacist master 2 years ago!"

A gourd-suspending pharmacist was the 3rd level in the world of pharmacists. Before this level, there were herbal medicine apprentice and knapsack pharmacist. If one person could only reach the level of a gourd-suspending pharmacist at his 40s, it meant he was very average in his qualification. He was more like a roving doctor or could at most open a clinic in the downtown to survive himself. If he wanted to make greater achievements, he

had to ascend to some more levels.

"What's wrong about you? How could you deteriorate to such a degree? On the street, you said that someone wanted to turn all the medicinal materials in Taixia Country into poisons and even kill you!"

After hearing this question, Sun Jiagu finally plucked up his courage to ask Zhang Tie while looking straight into Zhang Tie's eyes and gritting his teeth, "May I know your family name and which sect are you from, hermit?"

"I'm Zhang Tie, a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace!" Zhang Tie exposed his real identity frankly too.

After hearing Zhang Tie's name, Sun Jiagu widely opened his eyes at once, "You...you're that...Zhang Tie...the provincial chief justice who caused a great loss to Heavens Reaching Church in Youzhou Province and..."

Given Sun Jiagu's shocked expression, Zhang Tie knew that he must have heard about Zhang Tie's name and even seen Zhang Tie's image on order for arrest. However, he couldn't remember whom this young man was for the time being.

"Right, I'm that Zhang Tie who was once wanted by the Supreme Court across the country; however, the Supreme Court have already canceled off my order for arrest last year. I'm innocent and have already returned to Youzhou Province!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "I wonder whether I could ask you about something with my identity!"

Sun Jiagu looked at Zhang Tie as he quivered his lips. Before he uttered, he had dropped tears.

"Go ahead, I'm afraid that you've not told that to anyone else. Therefore, you feel a great stress. Just say it. Now that we could meet each other by accident, I wish to be your first audience!" Zhang Tie said kindly.

"Yes...I will say it...I will tell you all of it..." Sun Jiagu wiped off his tears by sleeves as he gradually recovered his composure, "I was born in Yongfeng Prefecture, Jizhou Province. I served as a herbal medicine apprentice in a drugstore at 16; when I was 31, I promoted to a knapsack pharmacist. I spent most of the time in herbal medicines and have learned how to make ordinary medicinal pills. Later on, through recommendation, I entered Taian Palace, a local major clan in Jizhou Province and got married. After that, I worked in a drugstore being affiliated to Cheng Clan. Cheng Clan of Taian Palace has over 20 cities, hundreds of thousands square miles' medicinal fields and dozens of medicinal mountains; additionally, they have earth knights. Cheng Clan is good at planting herbal medicines and producing medicines, which are circulating across Jizhou Province and many surrounding provinces. Even the corps across Taixia Country would purchase Cheng Clan's medicines by large batches. As I excel at making some low-level medicinal pills, I was responsible for supervising and guiding the lads and apprentices to make medicine pills."

Zhang Tie listened to Sun Jiagu's explanation seriously as he nodded from time to time. Sun Jiagu's experience was similar to that of most of the low-level pharmacists in Taixia Country. These people couldn't continue to promote in the industry of pharmacists; therefore, most of them would seek a reliance and stable work in a major clan. Although top-class medicaments were precious, many low-level medicaments and medicinal pills were the absolute mainstream in the market across Taixia Country even among all the humans. Whatever, commoners and ordinary fighters below LV 9 accounted for most of the people in this world. Only by meeting the demand of these low-level people could the industry indeed grow.

Although senior recovery medicaments were good, above 99% of commoners in this world might not have a chance to see senior recovery medicaments, not to mention using them.

Basically, Zhang Clan's all-purpose medicaments were targeted at commoners. Because all-purpose medicaments could only replace the effects of some preliminary and low-level medicaments.

Zhang Tie made a hand gesture to let Sun Jiagu continue.

"I enjoyed a good treatment in Cheng Clan. Previously, I planned to stay in Cheng Clan for the rest of my life. Whatever, it was a stable life. However, I discovered an amazing plot in Cheng Clan by chance!"

"What plot?"

"The entire Cheng Clan are stealthily making medicinal pills and medicaments using poisonous medicinal materials; additionally, they are distributing their poisonous medicinal materials to the other provinces across Taixia Country..."

Chapter 1199: The Fall of the Dark (I)

"According to you, Cheng Clan used poisonous medicinal materials to make various medicinal pills and medicaments; additionally, Cheng Clan sold their poisonous medicinal pills and medicaments to the other provinces. Didn't anyone discover such evident actions?" Zhang Tie asked while frowning.

"The poisonous medicinal materials of Cheng Clan's medicinal materials was very special. It could never be matched by any poison that we've seen. Commoners could not discover the toxin in the medicinal pills at all..." Sun Jiagu revealed a bitter smile.

"Did Cheng Clan add something poisonous into their medicinal materials?"

"No, Cheng Clan didn't add anything into their medicinal materials. Cheng Clan produced all the medicinal pills in accordance with the strict manufacturing process and technologies. They couldn't add anything inside their medicinal materials!"

Zhang Tie became confused as he asked, "So why were Cheng Clan's medicinal materials poisonous?"

"They planted it!"

"You mean those medicinal materials that Cheng Clan planted were born to be poisonous?" Zhang Tie asked out of amazement. Although he was not a pharmacist, Zhang Tie still felt Sun Jiagu's words were unbelievable based on his understanding of the profession of pharmacist.

"Yes!"

"Had Cheng Clan added poison into the fertilizers or pesticides of those medicinal materials?"

"No. All the medicinal materials in the medicinal fields of Cheng Clan were as same as those in other clans. Additionally, Cheng

Clan had many herbalists. If Cheng Clan added poison in fertilizers and pesticides, those herbalists must have discovered it!"

"Have Cheng Clan used shoddy medicinal materials or purposefully used wrong ingredients and components or took advantage of the mutual resistance between the properties of drugs?"

"None of them. Cheng Clan never made mistakes in producing medicinal pills. They always used the right raw materials, proportions and formulas!"

Zhang Tie forced a smile, "I'm confused. If there's no problem in medicinal materials or manufacturing processes. Additionally, they didn't add poison on purpose. How could Cheng Clan's herbal medicines become poisonous then? Were they born to be poisonous?"

"Yes, Cheng Clan's herbal medicines were indeed born to be poisonous!" Sun Jiagu said while gritting his teeth.

"What herbal medicines did Cheng Clan plant?"

"Cheng clan's herbal medicines included honeysuckle, evergreen vine, weeping forsythia, Isatis root, fishy grass, ginseng, crown prince ginseng, Chinese date, Chinese wolfberry, walnut kernel, root of red-rooted salvia, mung, yellow bean, lily, sweet wormwood, Polygonum multiflorum, longan pulp, bark of eucommia, licorice, semi-summer, Chinese bellflower, ginkgo, Chinese ephedra; the root of fangfeng, reed rhizome, earth-bone skin, bamboo leaf, chrysanthemum, patchouly, Morinda Officinalis, trifoliate orange and selfheal, etc.. Cheng Clan was the biggest druggist in Jizhou Province. Cheng Clan had a large area of herbal medicine mountains and planted hundreds of herbal medicines. Most of the herbal medicines that could be planted artificially could be found in Cheng Clan's medicinal fields on a large scale!"

"You mean the herbal medicines of Cheng Clan were born to be

poisonous?"

"At the beginning, I didn't believe it either; however, through repeated experiments, I confirmed this fact!"

"How did you discover that Cheng Clan's herbal medicines were poisonous?"

"Since I became a herbal medicine apprentice at 16 years old, I had formed a habit, namely raising some white rats for a drug test. I inherited this habit from my enlightening master. Herbology originated from traditional Chinese medicines. It's the elementary knowledge for pharmacists. All the pharmacists have to learn it, no matter what level he is. As there're too many kinds of herbal medicines, some of them even carried toxicity; especially after being made into medicinal pills and medicaments, if you couldn't get hang of the proportions or choose the right variety, you might always have problems. Therefore, herbal medicine apprentices would always raise some small animals for a drug test. I'd been used to do that even after I got married. In the beginning, I used white rats for testing drugs; later on, I raised them as pets..."

"After promoting to a bottle-suspending pharmacist, I excelled at producing a low-level pill that could preserve one's spiritual energy and benefit one's blood circulation. It mainly targeted at commoners. Even old men, pregnant women and people in weakness could use it. Therefore, it has a great sales volume in Taixia Country. In the drugstore of Cheng Clan, I was responsible for supervising and guiding a medicine workshop to produce this pill. In the process of producing it, I discovered something wrong with their herbal medicines!"

Zhang Tie just listened to him quietly. At this moment, Sun Jiagu's expression became evidently sophisticated.

"The pill required very common medicinal materials, namely; walnut kernel and Chines date. The two medicinal materials could be found everywhere in the medicine workshop. People would

send them there every day. I was responsible for checking and accepting them. As I raised some white rats at home, before leaving the medicine workshop at the end of each day, I would grab a handful of walnut kernels or Chinese dates from the warehouse of the medicine workshop to feed my pets at home. After working in the medicine workshop of Cheng Clan for half a year, the first batch of white rats that I raised at home died one after another..."

"At the beginning, I didn't pay attention to it. Because I've already raised those white rats for about 2 years. Generally, white rats could only survive 2 or 3 years. Therefore, when those white rats died, I didn't think too much. After they died, I bought another batch of white rats and raised them with walnut kernels and Chinese date as usual!"

"However, after half a year later, the white rats died one after another too. At that time, I still didn't imagine that there was any problem with the medicines. I thought it might be the other reasons. Perhaps I didn't look after them well or these white rats were weak and sickly. Therefore, I raised the 3rd batch of white rats..."

"Finally, the 3rd batch of white rats died half a year later too. This time, it reminded me that the walnut kernels and Chinese data that I brought back home might have some problem. However, this event was of great significance. As I was just a supervisor of a small medicine workshop, of course, I dared not do the wild talk or tell this result to the others; I just paid special attention to the walnut kernels and Chinese date. After that, I bought the 4th batch of white rats. I divided them into two groups. One group of white rats only ate the walnuts and Chinese dates that I brought back from Cheng Clan; the other group of white rats only ate some grains and preserved fruits that I bought from other places. Half a year later, the result shocked me once again. The group of white rats who were fed with preserved fruits and grains

grew well; however, the other group of white rats who were fed with walnut kernels and Chinese dates died as usual!"

"I was startled. However, I dared not disseminate that news. After repeating the same experiment for two times, I got the same result. It finally confirmed that the medicines in the medicine workshop of Cheng Clan were poisonous. Later on, with my work as a cover, through careful observation, I investigated each link since the plantation of medicinal materials until they entered the medicine workshop, I found no problem in these links. The biggest problem lay in the seeds of the medicinal materials of Cheng Clan. These seeds were born to be poisonous. However, you couldn't discover their toxicity. Because these medicinal materials were normal in looks and tastes. Even the most experienced pharmacists couldn't discover any difference by tasting them. Only by taking these medicinal materials produced by Cheng Clan for a long time could they confirm the hidden toxicity in them!"

"Later on, I stayed in Cheng Clan for a few more years and sought evidence step by step. Finally, I found that all the medicinal materials that were artificially planted in Cheng Clan were different than natural medicinal materials and those planted by the other clans. All the medicinal materials that were artificially planted in Cheng Clan carried hidden toxicity. After taking them for a long time, humans would be severely poisoned. What was more terrifying was that the poisonous seeds of those medicinal materials in Cheng Clan were also sold to neighboring provinces in various commercial means besides being used for making various medicaments and medicinal pills. As a result, many herbalists who survived on planting medicinal materials in the other provinces would plant those poisonous seeds and constantly spread them to other provinces across Taixia Country; besides, those poisonous medicinal materials would be made into various medicinal pills and medicaments which would further poison the other people in the world..."

"What was more terrifying was that I discovered that the "toxicity" of those poisonous medicinal materials in Cheng Clan was contagious. For instance, there were two groups of medicinal materials, one group belonged to Cheng Clan, the other group was nontoxic. The medicinal materials of Cheng Clan could pass their toxicity to those nontoxic medicinal materials through pollen transmission. As a result, the next generation of those nontoxic medicinal materials would become poisonous too!"

"I doubt that the genes of all the traditional Chinese medicines had been modified. Although those medicinal materials looked nothing different than common medicinal materials, their genes had been demonized. Additionally, as long as they were planted, they would cause gene contamination. It's a plot of demons and Three-eye Association!"

"I'm just an average bottle-suspending pharmacist. I have no reliance or powerful human relationship. After discovering that, I dared not reveal it to anyone else. Because Cheng Clan had a very great power in Jizhou Province; additionally, I heard that Cheng Clan even had a relationship in Xuanyuan Hill. If I exposed it casually, I might lose my life instead of playing any effect. I buried this secret deep in mind. Half a year ago, I found a reason to leave Cheng Clan. I planned to accuse Cheng Clan in Xuanyuan Hill. I preferred to die for the benefits of all the people across the country. However, on the way to Xuanyuan Hill, I was discovered by Cheng Clan. Therefore, Cheng Clan assigned a killer to kill me. Thankfully, I had long prepared for that, the killer didn't get me. However, I had to hide here and there so as to survive myself..."

"All my words are true. If any word is false, you could chop off my head at any time!" Sun Jiagu looked at Zhang Tie with hopeful eyes as he looked like a bit excited after saying so many words.

After being silent for a short while, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Sun Jiagu before asking, "Do you want me to deal with Cheng Clan for you?"

"Cheng Clan does harm to the entire world; they're definitely the lackeys of demons. Shouldn't they be exterminated?" Sun Jiagu asked while being more excited.

"You've been staying in the inn since you came to Embracing Tiger City in October?"

"Yes, I entered Embracing Tiger City in October. Because I was afraid of the killer dispatched by Cheng Clan, I spent most of my time in the inn..." Sun Jiagu replied with a curious look after being stunned for a second.

"Cheng Clan in Jizhou Province had been exterminated. After the riot aroused in Xuanyuan Hill on November 15th, a catastrophe of bloody figures had broken out in Jizhou Province. The bloody sea that Cheng Clan built to raise bloody figures in their clan's hinterland had been exposed. Cheng Clan had been exterminated by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country. All the kights of Cheng Clan had escaped away. They were being wanted by the Supreme Court of Taixia Country." Zhang Tie exposed this news to Sun Jiagu.

The catastrophe of bloody figures in Taixia Country was growing increasingly fiercer in an increasing scale. More and more clans being related to Heavens Reaching Church and Bloody Soul Temple were involved in. The official news was always faster than those among the people. As a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie knew the details a bit earlier. As for Sun Jiagu, after coming to Embracing Tiger City, he had been hiding here and there; therefore, he was more uninformed and couldn't get the first-hand details about the catastrophe of bloody figures across Taixia Country. Therefore, he still thought that Cheng Clan was dominating in Jizhou Province.

After hearing Zhang Tie's news, Sun Jiagu became dumbfounded at once. With mouth widely opened, he became stunned and silent for quite a while.

"If the killer that Cheng Clan assigned to hunt you is still alive, he will never come for you anymore as he can't even keep himself safe. Later on, you don't need to hide here and there anymore!" Zhang Tie comforted Sun Jiagu kindly while watching the latter's distracted look.

Based on Sun Jiagu's battle strength, the killer assigned to kill him was at most a LV 9 fighter. As Cheng Clan had been exterminated, it was meaningless for that killer to hunt Sun Jiagu. That guy might have been wanted by the Supreme Court and was escaping or had been killed. Compared to his own life, an average bottle-suspending pharmacist who worked for Cheng Clan was nothing but sh*t.

However, Sun Jiagu's words were still valuable to Zhang Tie. Additionally, although Sun Jiagu was just an average bottle-suspending pharmacist, he was disciplined. After discovering the problem in Cheng Clan, he dared accuse Cheng Clan in Xuanyuan Hill. This person must be generous and righteous; especially the last point which Zhang Tie appreciated the most. Although being a small figure, he carried a great moral standing.

"I've left 1,000 gold coins for you in the hotel. If you don't want to stay here anymore or feel disappointed, you could open a small drugstore in the downtown and live a stable and peaceful life in the future with the money that I gave you. If you want to do something more, you could join Jinwu Business Group in Jinwu City!" Zhang Tie said. At the same time, he moved his hand as he put a vial of senior recovery medicament, which was giving out a bizarre light, on the table before saying, "This vial of senior recovery medicament could cure all of your injuries!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie directly put on his hood and left the courtyard of the hotel...

Sun Jiagu just watched that vial of senior recovery medicament with a blank look...

...

Outside the hotel, the air became cold once again. At this moment, the gloomy skyline indicated that the night was falling. Although the cold in the air was nothing for Zhang Tie, the cold in Zhang Tie's heart made him tighten up his hood unconsciously.

Zhang Tie looked up at the sky before walking towards the direction of Embracing Tiger Mountain immediately...

Chapter 1200: The Fall of the Dark (II)

The Ancestral Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace rested on Embracing Tiger Mountain, which was one of the forbidden lands in Tiger Embracing City. Ordinary people were forbidden to approach Embracing Tiger City, not to mention entering it.

Zhang Tie walked all the way to the foot of the Tiger Embracing Mountain. The moment he entered the territory of Tiger Embracing Mountain, clan warriors of Huaiyuan Palace had come forward to stop him.

"Travellers are forbidden to approach the clan territory of Huaiyuan Palace!"

Two teams of clan warriors were standing at the entrance of Embracing Tiger Mountain. All of them were tall and strong in heavy armors with heavy swords on one side of their waists. They looked very imposing and solemn. Two clan deacons were standing behind those warriors.

Additionally, there was a huge stone archway higher than 20 m at the entrance. There were 4 vigorous, huge golden words on the archway——Huaiyuan Family Style.

Zhang Tie didn't speak; instead, he just pulled off his hood, exposing his face.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's face, the 20 warriors and 2 clan deacons quivered all over at the same time. Closely after that, all the warriors knelt down by one knee at the same time. The two clan deacons also bowed deeply towards him before saying, "Elder Mushen!"

Zhang Tie's face could even be recognized by ordinary people in the Embracing Tiger City, not to mention these clan warriors who were responsible for the safety of Embracing Tiger Mountain. Zhang Tie's meritorious services were known to everyone in

Huaiyuan Palace. After Zhang Tie came back, all the members of Huaiyuan Palace became spirited. Therefore, Zhang Tie's prestige in Huaiyuan Palace reached a peak.

"Don't be that polite!" Zhang Tie replied simply as he was thinking about something else. After that, he passed through the archway and walked up the mountain. Two clan deacons hurriedly led Zhang Tie to the Ancestral Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace.

"Have the clan head and the other elders arrived?" Zhang Tie asked the two clan deacons.

After Zhang Taixuan promoted to the provincial governor of Youzhou Province, he and the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace spent more time in Youzhou City than in Embracing Tiger City. If not the clan elders meeting, it might be a bit easier for the clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace to gather in Youzhou City than in Embracing Tiger City.

Actually, this clan elders meeting could also be held in Youzhou City; however, as Zhang Taixuan was meticulous; he was afraid of being reproached for turning Youzhou City the private city of Huaiyuan Palace after promoting to the provincial governor of Youzhou Province; therefore, this clan elders meeting was held in Embracing Tiger City.

"10 minutes ago, besides Elder Muray, all the clan elders and clan head had already arrived at the Ancestral Shrine Palace!" One deacon said respectfully.

Zhang Tie arrived at Embracing Tiger Mountain 1 hour earlier than the scheduled time. After promoting to an earth knight, Zhang Tie also paid attention to his image in Huaiyuan Palace; he didn't want to leave a bad impression on people. Therefore, he arrived 1 hour earlier. Zhang Huaiyuan and the other clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace almost arrived at the same time.

Zhang Tie nodded.

The Ancestral Shrine Palace was halfway up to the mountain. The pine needles over Embracing Tiger Mountain were still hanging over snow while the steps up to the mountain were swept clean.

Almost when Zhang Tie arrived at the terrace outside the Ancestral Shrine Palace, a figure landed on Zhang Tie's side with flame.

"Elder Muray!"

"Elder Mushen!"

The two people greeted each other before entering the Ancestral Shrine Palace at the same time. At this moment, Taixuan, Muan, Muyuan, Muyu and Muen walked out of the Ancestral Shrine Palace to welcome Zhang Tie and Elder Muray. They greeted each other outside the Ancestral Shrine Palace.

They had not seen each other for almost 1 month. When they met each other once again, none of them looked relaxed.

Zhang Taixuan threw a glance at the others before saying, "Now that all the elders have arrived, it's unnecessary for us to wait anymore. Let's come to a start!"

Everybody nodded as they entered the Ancestral Shrine Palace. The moment they entered it, the gate had been closed from outside. Many clan deacons guarded outside the Ancestral Shrine Palace. There were also clan deacons inside doors. As a result, the atmosphere became solemn at once.

The imposing statue that Lord Huaiyuan stood with a crossbow in hand in the Ancestral Shrine Palace was nothing different than that in Jinyun Country. In front of the statue, there were memorial tablets of forebears of Huaiyuan Palace.

As the head of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Taixuan led the other elders to light incense for the memorial tablets of their forebears. After that, they sat down around a roundtable.

Zhang Tie sat beside Zhang Taixuan, which indicated that Zhang Tie's position in Zhang Clan was evidently much higher than that of the other elders. After accomplishing this rotating chakra ceremony, Zhang Tie would become the only grand elder in Huaiyuan Palace. Although Zhang Tie had not officially promoted to a grand elder of Huaiyun Palace, his supreme position had been gradually displayed in all aspects. Therefore, everybody accepted that, including Zhang Taixuan.

After everybody took seats, Zhang Taixuan glanced around solemnly before saying, "On last November 15th, a riot broke out in Xuanyuan Hill. Han Zhengfang the finance minister's real identity was exposed. Closely after that, he had an earth-shaking fight with Meng Shidao the master of the crown prince, which shocked the rest of the world. Overnight, the catastrophe of bloody figures broke out in over 70 provinces across Taixia Country, causing great casualties. After that, the overall situation facing Taixia Country deteriorated. As a result, the entire country was covered with battle smokes and flames..."

At this moment, the other clan elders threw a glance at Zhang Tie stealthily. Zhang Taixuan also paused for a second while throwing a glance at Zhang Tie. All the people at present were not idiots. Han Zhengfang was the culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City. When Han Zhengfang's real identity was exposed by over 100,000 swans in terms of the most exaggerating "big-words poster", Zhang Tie was in Xuanyuan Hill. What a coincidence, the one being screwed and the culprit of the tragedy in Fuhai City appeared in Xuanyuan Hill at the same time, the catastrophe broke out. As a result, the culprit of the tragedy was exposed by a "force majeure". Therefore, the elders of Huaiyuan Palace doubted that it was done by Zhang Tie.

However, this event was really weird. The one who could control so many swans in Xuanyuan Hill at once must be a top-class animal control master. There were fewer than 10 such figures in Taixia

Country. It was not strange for Zhang Tie to know something about animal controlling skill as many knights in Taixia Country knew something about animal controlling skill. Zhang Tie might learn to control animals from Patron Church. However, he didn't excel at it. All the elders of Huaiyuan Palace knew that point. However, the elders of Huaiyuan Palace didn't believe that Zhang Tie could master such a terrifying animal controlling skill. Additionally, Zhang Tie went to Xuanyuan Hill to attend the Treasures Meeting and investigate the case of bloody figures in Zhongzhou Province. What was more, Zhang Tie didn't have any contact with Han Zhengfang before; how could he know the real identity of Han Zhengfang? After staying in Xuanyuan Hill for so many years, Han Zhengfang had rooted in Taixia Country deeply. It was definitely impossible for an outsider to expose his real identity. Therefore, they felt that Zhang Tie shouldn't be related to the riot in Xuanyuan Hill on last November 15th.

On one aspect, it was such a weird coincidence; on the other hand, it was the ability which couldn't be explained. The coincidence was a motive; however, the ability didn't come out of anywhere. Nevertheless, Zhang Tie kept silent about what happened in Xuanyuan Hill; therefore, Zhang Taixuan and the other elders threw a curious glance at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was clear about these points. However, he would not accept it if he was treated as the target by the Heavens Reaching Church and the Gobbling Party. After all, if he didn't admit that, nobody in the world knew that he was related to the riot in Xuanyuan Hill on last November 15th. 'During the period of Treasures Meeting, there were thousands of knights in Xuanyuan Hill. Who would believe that I could know the real identity of Han Zhengfang only after coming to Xuanyuan Hill for a few days while I had no contact with Han Zhengfang before? This is too fantastic! If I have long known about the real identity of Han Zhengfang, Han Zhengfang had already become the target for all when I released that post in the forum of Mountain of Brightness. I

became the scapegoat for so long, even God couldn't bear it; therefore, the Mighty God made me innocent.'

Zhang Tie glanced around while blinking his eyes innocently.

When the others found that Zhang Tie just kept silent, they moved their eyes away from him. Nobody in Huaiyuan Palace would mention it later on.

"Ahem...ahem..." Zhang Taixuan cleared his throat as he continued, "As Emperor Xuanyuan is missing, Taixia Country has long been unstable internally. At this moment, Heavens Reaching Church is bewildering people in Taixia Country. The catastrophe of bloody figures has spread over Taixia Country. Even Youzhou Province was afflicted by bloody figures. The holy war has just broken out for a few years, the contingent of demons have not reached Taixia Country yet. However, Taixia Country has been suffering from troubles and contradictions both inside and outside. For the long-term benefit of Huaiyuan Palace, Taixuan has to invite all the clan elders to negotiate about the big plan of our clan. We need to make preparations as early as possible!"

"Our Huaiyuan Palace has just returned to Taixia Country from Waii Subcontinent. Our foundation couldn't match that of the other major clans in Taixia Country. However, Taixia Country is the final asylum of Huaiyuan Palace. We couldn't go anywhere else. All the elders at present must be clear about that. Therefore, Huaiyuan Palace has to make preparations for emergencies."

After Zhang Taixuan finished his words, Elder Muen opened his mouth. As Elder Muen also came from the branch of Yiyang City, he agreed with Zhang Taixuan's opinion. Zhang Tie and Elder Muyuan then exchanged a glance with each other. All the other clan elders at present then exchanged a glance with each other as they realized that Zhang Taixuan might expose something amazing...

...

Table of Contents

[Ancient Godly Monarch](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1101: What a Large City!](#)

[Chapter 1102: The Disease of Uncle Zhong](#)

[Chapter 1103: The Secret of Great Wilderness Sect](#)

[Chapter 1104: Saving People](#)

[Chapter 1105: Peach Flowers in the Spring Wind](#)

[Chapter 1106: The Golden Water River](#)

[Chapter 1107: Average Life](#)

[Chapter 1108: Working out a Scheme](#)

[Chapter 1109: Women](#)

[Chapter 1110: Losing Life by One Sentence](#)

[Chapter 1111: The Difference](#)

[Chapter 1112: The Long-Lost Fruit](#)

[Chapter 1113: Detecting the Emperor's Imperial City in the Evening](#)

[Chapter 1114: The Mist in the Imperial Palace](#)

[Chapter 1115: Loss and Gain](#)

[Chapter 1116: Being Leisure](#)

[Chapter 1117: Two Uninvited Visitors](#)

[Chapter 1118: An Ally in Taixia Country](#)

[Chapter 1119: Setting a Trap](#)

[Chapter 1120: A Trouble](#)

[Chapter 1121: Seeking for Death](#)

[Chapter 1122: Meeting Han Clan Once Again](#)

[Chapter 1123: A Fierce Battle](#)

[Chapter 1124: Genuine Meeting of Minds](#)

[Chapter 1125: Dignity](#)

[Chapter 1126: Gold and Power Market](#)

[Chapter 1127: Sincere Friends](#)

[Chapter 1128: Grand Elder of Iron-Dragon Sect](#)

[Chapter 1129: The Treasures Complex](#)

[Chapter 1130: Overall Situation and Familiar Ones](#)

[Chapter 1131: Familiar Ones from Ice and Snow Wilderness](#)

[Chapter 1132: A Trade](#)

[Chapter 1133: Knocking at the Door of Allies](#)
[Chapter 1134: Returning to Lord Guangnan's Manor](#)
[Chapter 1135: Train of Thoughts](#)
[Chapter 1136: Powerful Sacred Light Empire](#)
[Chapter 1137: Ready for the Fight](#)
[Chapter 1138: Being Hit by an Apple](#)
[Chapter 1139: The Father and the Son of Han Clan](#)
[Chapter 1140: A Vicious Trick](#)
[Chapter 1141: Lose at Sunrise but Gain at Sunset](#)
[Chapter 1142: Detecting Euphonicmusic Lake in the Evening](#)
[Chapter 1143: Abundant Achievements](#)
[Chapter 1144: Head Clan](#)
[Chapter 1145: Immortal Farming Pavilion](#)
[Chapter 1146: The Business](#)
[Chapter 1147: Abandoning One Thought](#)
[Chapter 1148: Folding Wings and Lowering Body](#)
[Chapter 1149: Hard Work Paying Off](#)
[Chapter 1150: The 15th Day of This Lunar Month](#)
[Chapter 1151: Return of Zhang Tie](#)
[Chapter 1152: Frank Acceptance](#)
[Chapter 1153: Making Arrangements](#)
[Chapter 1154: Silent Battle Flames](#)
[Chapter 1155: The Major Event was Coming](#)
[Chapter 1156: A Fatal Plot](#)
[Chapter 1157: Lighting the Battle Flames in Xuanyuan Hill](#)
[Chapter 1158: Being Trapped](#)
[Chapter 1159: Collisions between Powerful Ones](#)
[Chapter 1160: Great Chaos in Xuanyuan Hill](#)
[Chapter 1161: Starting Action](#)
[Chapter 1162: An Ambush](#)
[Chapter 1163: Arousing a Shock](#)
[Chapter 1164: Second Kill](#)
[Chapter 1165: Entering the Emperor's Imperial City](#)
[Chapter 1166: The Fierce Fight](#)
[Chapter 1167: Chasing After the Target](#)
[Chapter 1168: Canglan Palace](#)
[Chapter 1169: Fighting a Powerful Enemy at Full Efforts \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 1170: Fighting a Powerful Enemy at Full Efforts \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 1171: Another Secret Skill of Bloody Soul Temple](#)

[Chapter 1172: Breaking the Universe](#)
[Chapter 1173: A New Start](#)
[Chapter 1174: Old Slave Zhang Gui](#)
[Chapter 1175: Elements Tunnel](#)
[Chapter 1176: Spatial Change](#)
[Chapter 1177: Counting the Booties](#)
[Chapter 1178: Bloody Soul Sutra](#)
[Chapter 1179: Skyrocketing Overall Strength](#)
[Chapter 1180: Opportunity in the Chaos](#)
[Chapter 1181: Arrangement](#)
[Chapter 1182: Convergence](#)
[Chapter 1183: Heading for Youzhou Province](#)
[Chapter 1184: Welcome Back](#)
[Chapter 1185: The Return of Elder Mushen](#)
[Chapter 1186: Politely Declining](#)
[Chapter 1187: Foreign Affairs Agency of Zhang Family](#)
[Chapter 1188: Returning Home](#)
[Chapter 1189: Bo?te](#)
[Chapter 1190: The Reason](#)
[Chapter 1191: Home Affairs](#)
[Chapter 1192: Making a Promise](#)
[Chapter 1193: Stealing Leisure Time from a Busy Life](#)
[Chapter 1194: The Start of Chaos](#)
[Chapter 1195: The End of the Leisure Days](#)
[Chapter 1196: Coming to Embracing Tiger City in Disguise](#)
[Chapter 1197: The Lunatic](#)
[Chapter 1198: The Inquiry](#)
[Chapter 1199: The Fall of the Dark \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 1200: The Fall of the Dark \(II\)](#)